with hardyleton

THE Rowlatt

FLORENTINE

HISTORY

IN

VIII. Books.

Written by

NICHOLAS MACHIAVEL

Citizen and Secretary of Florence,

Now eaxaly Translated from the Italian.

LONDON,

Printed for Charles Harper, and John Amery, and by them fold at the Flower de Luce, and at the Peacock, both against S. Dunstans Church in Fleet-street. 1674.





year per sonound the transfer of 2 Lab marke X May estably described a mut. The long report of the so of blanch direct. Land Strand Church Had areas 1074.

x 945.51 MISLE

TO THE

Most ILLUSTRIOUS

Prince. JAMES

Duke of

MONMOUTH, &c.

May it please your GRACE,



His History has been in all times so univerfally famous, and the Author of fo great

Reputation, that if it hath efcaped (as I hope it has) any abuse of mine in the Translation,

there

The Epiftle

there needs no farther Apology be made for it; and I am difcharged from that part of the Task, usually required in Dedications; and that other new mode of making addresses of this kind, feem rather Panegyricks to the Patron, than relate to the matter in hand, I may more justly wave, liaving aspired to lay my Endeavours at the feet of fo Illustrious a Prince; nothing by me to be faid or invented, can add the least grain to the weight of your Renown and Reputation.

And though this History may in some measure seem unsuitable to your Grace, whose innate Bra-

very

n

o S

P

en

en Va

Ю

fo

th

pr Pr

ten

The Exposition Dedicatory.

very in the Field; may be apted contemn the Cowardife of the times here treated of : yet it may not be altogether unpleafant to observe the Policies, Devices and Stratagens, wherewith wthefe Princes and Common-wealths endeavoured to compass the ends they could not by force or valour attain to, which are here so plainly and faithfully described, that they may well ferve as fo many Land-marks to avoid the Rocks of Deceit, and so far prove uleful to the most Gallant Prince alive.

But far be it from me to attempt the informing your Graces A 4 Judgment,

1 e

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Judgment, which has been enlightned by so many great and
glorious Experiences. I must
of all your Princely Virtues
haverecourse only to your Clemency, hoping, that (with the
worth of the Author) will procure mine a favourable acceptance, and plead a pardon for
this consident Address made
by

Your GRACE'S

Most Humble and most
Obedient Servant.

John Dancer

TH

PROEM

Writen by the Author,

Nicholas Machiavel

To his

Florentine History.

Had once an intention, when first I designed to write the Florentine affairs both within and without the City, to begin my Narration from the year 1434, at which time the Family of the Medici, by the great deserts of Cosmo and John his Father, aspired to more authority than any other in Florence: For I thought all actions before that time had been particularly related by Messer Leonard di Arrezzo, and Messer Poggio, two most Excellent Historians.

XUM

H

und

ues

lethe

ro-

epfor

add

But after a diligent perusal of their works, in order to observe their way and method; and by imitating them render this History more pleasant to the Reader. I perceived that in writing the Florentine transactions, with Forreign Princes, and people they bad been very exact; but incivil discords and intrinsick diffentions (and the causes from whence they (prung) they had in one part been quite filent, and in the other fo brief, that the Reader could reap neither pleasure nor profit : which I imagine they did either, becanse they thought those actions so inconfiderable, that they were unworthy to be committed to memory, or else out of fear of offending these descended from them, of whom they were to discourse, who by the relating them, might perhaps be justly scandalized : Both which reasons (with respect be it spoken) appear unworthy of Noble Spirits; for if any thing

thing teaches or delights in a History, it is the particular description of things; and if any reading be profitable to Citizens that govern a Common-wealth, it is that which fets down the reason of animosities and divisions in their City, that growing wife by others damage, they may preferve themselves united. For if any examples have power over us, those certainly of our own Commonmealth have the greatest, and do likewife more redound to our advantage. And if any Republick fell into remarkable divisions, those of Florence are most notable, for most other Commonwealths we have any knowledge of, have been content with one division, whereby according to accidents they have either added to, or ruined their City. But Florence not content with one, has run into many. In Rome (as is notoriously known) after their Kings were expelled, there happened a disunion between

3

b

dis

d

e

b

y

e,

-

f

15

7-

y

tween the Nobles and Plebeians, which continued till their ruine. So Athens, and so all other Common-wealths which in that time flourished. But in Florence there first happened division between the Nobles themselves, then between the Nobles and the People, then among the People and Plebeians, and whenever any of these parties got the upperhand, then they divided among themfelves: which divisions canfed so many executions, banishments and ruineof Families, as are not recorded to have ever happened in any other City. And in truth, in my judgement there need no better argument of the power of our City, than what may be deduced from thefe divisions, which were capable to annihilate the greatest and most populous City : Yet ours feem'd Hill to increase, such was the virtue of those Citizens, and the prevaillency of their judgement and valour to aggrandise them-

themfelves and their City , that they who remained untainted; could by their virtue more exalt it than the malignity of those accidents, which would have diminished any other, could oppress it. And doubtless bad Florence been fo happy when it first shook of the Yoak of Empire to bave established such a form of Government, as might have maintained it united. I know no Commonwealth, either Ancient or Modern, would bave been superiour or equal to it in arms or industry. For it is remarkable that after they had driven out the Ghibellines in Such multitudes , that Tuscany and Lombardy swarmed with them, the Guelfs and those which remained in the (ity, in that war against Arezzo, a year before the battail of Campaldino, raifed of their own Citizens twelve bundred men at Arms, and twelve thou and foot; and afterwards in the War against Phillip Visconti

XUM

b

S,

ch

0-

e-

e-

en

nd

p-

11-

4-

of

ve

nd

ed

ur

112

le

0-

n-1-

ir

Se

m-

Visconti Duke of Milan, when they were to follow their industry, and not make use of their own Arms (for their men were consumed) they spent in five years, which that war lafted 3500000 Florens, and yet when that war was ended (not content with peace) to boaft the power and riches of their City, they went and befieged Luccas I cannot therefore imagine why any fould think thefe divisions deferve not a particular description, and if those noble Authors were restrained by the fear they had of offending the memory of those they were to discourse of, they were much miftaken, and appear not to bave perfectly underftood the ambition of men, and the defire they have to perpetuate their own and their Ancestors names, not remembring that many not having the means to acquire fame by any good or glorious a-Clions, have fet their wits on work to gain

1

b

d

th

01

te

bo

to in

do

th

gain it by wicked and facinorous exploits, nor confidering that actions that bave grandeur in themselves (as all matters of State and Government have) bowever they are aded, or whatever fuccefs they have, bring men more bonour than blame. Upon confideration of which things I changed my defign, and resolved to begin my History from the Original of our City. But becanfe 1 bave no intentito invade any other mans Province, I shall make a particular description until the year 1434, of such things only as have happened within the City, Saying no more of affairs without than what is necessary for the better understanding of those within, and after 1434, Isball particularly describe both one and the other : And moreover to the end, this History may the better in all times be understood, I shall fet down by what means Italy came under those Potentates which then governed, all

1

e

d

1

n

all which things as well Italian as Florentine will be comprised in four Books. The first briefly relating all the accidents of Italy, from the declination of the Roman Empire, to the year 1434, the second beginning from the Original of the City, Shall continue till the war with the Pope after the driving out the Duke of Athens. The third shall end with the year 1434, and the death of Ladillaus, King of Naples, where the fourth beginning we hall from that time to this prefent, particularly describe all things that bave happened, both within the City of From rence and without. in the second the

miles of the ofthis within, and off

with the part that the form

thefe Fette teter bet then ere part

to the state of th

th

Machiavel's Higgory

Then that one to those lot it falls, lend o lees on more, and the others for

The caule of healtye [Oil. In eight dellroyed the

contributed who by

weiges bell office over Minime NICHOLAS MACHIAVEL

I fireh an Fenrier lounded inpon the blood

heen effecte who Ale Olar hees



create been doin ?

to which the

8

ri. Ц

la

26 175 ee 26 be

4,

of

P r ve

O

people inhabiting the Regions Morthwards from the rivers Reynorind Dambe, living in a healthful chine and apt for Generation off-tunes increase

to fuch vaft multitudes that part of them are confintined to forfake their Native Country, and feek new pilices to dwell in. The Order observed when any of these Provinces would disburden them-selves of their imabitants is to divide into three parts, disposing things to, that each part have its equal number of Nobili-Deguced

-unfläh mit

dies of the

Book I.

the deftruction of the Roman Empire.

tie and Commons, of rich and poor. Then, that part to whole lot it falls, goes to feek its forme, and the others (cafed of one chied fit down and enjoy their The cause of native foil. These people were they, who destroyed the Reman Empire, to which the Emperors themselves contributed; who by forfaking Rome, the ancient fart of the Empire and feeling themselves at Companithe western Empire, as well for want of their care and observance, as by exposing it to the rapines both of its own Ministers and their Enemies. And indeed the rume of fuch an Empire founded upon the blood of fo many valiant men could never have been effected where there had been less neglect in the Princes, less treachery in their Ministers, or less power and obstinacy in the affailors; for not one people alone, but many were they conspired to this name. The first chat (after the Condition overcome by Marins) cante from those nor Ade woll enviolent i thern parts, to infest the Raman Empire were the Viligoths, or in plain English the 7/9/17 10 esphalitium Western Goths. Who after forme shipmithes on the Confines of the Empire, did by Grant from the Emperors, for a long time keep their station on the banks of the Danube, and though at divers times, and upon divers occasions they affailed the Raman Provinces, yet they were always by the Imperial powers repulfed, and at faft glomoully vanquished by Theodofine : fo that reduced

The Vifigoths infeft the Empire:

Overcome by Thredefins.

1

d

è

£

Ø

di fi

K

r.

10

10

y

i-

of

of

18

TS

në

bd

ve

g-

in

ut

10 Mai

ed

seduced under his ched lence; they made no more a King over themselves, but contented with the flipsad allowed them, lived and shade war, under his Enlights and command. But Theodoffin dying, and leaving his two fons Areadins and Honorius heirs to his Empire, but neither to his valour nor Attempts of fortune, the times were changed with the Gilden, Rafince. Theodoffur that committed the souten, charge of the Empire to three Governous giving Ruffini the Lievienancy of the East . Stilled that of the West , and to Gilden Affrica ; all which after thoday scale of the Emperour, lought nor how to govern like flichful Ministers, but how to peffels (like Princes.) thole parts left them in charge. The defigns of Gildon and Ruffins were evull'd in the very egg. but Sillion who knew better how to diff femble his intents lought to gain a confi dence with the young Emperous, and he the mean while to embroiled their effaces, that he might with more cale afterwards feife them. To make therefore the Vifgoths' their enemies, he coundelled them no more to give them their usual flicend. And not thinking them fufficient of themselves to diffurb the Empire, he contrived things to, that the Burgundians, Franks, Vandals and Alans, all Northern people, and ready to remove their habitations, frould affail the Roman Provinces. The Vifigoths deprived of their wonted pravi- of the Vije fion, to pur themselves in a better posture gubi. Ra.

oracle blas

leases the

1

b

P

f

h

P

21

T

ed

10

al

tis

CO

6

en

th

fe

Sacks Rome, and dyes, and Autaulphus fucceeded.

trategis of history lings.

Vandals poffelle Africk.

Alanes and Viligo ks Spain. Branks and Burgundians Gaul.

of revenging fuch an injury, created Alexie their King, and turning their Forces upo the Empire after various accidents, having spoiled all Italy, took and sack'd Rome In the height of victories Alarie dyes, and Autaulphus fucceeds him who takes to wife Placidia, fifter to the Emperours and upon that alliance enters into league with them to relieve France and Spain, which Provinces the Vandale, Burgundiane, Alans and Franks (upon the encouragements above mentioned) had invaded. The Iffue of which was, that the Vandals who had poffeffed themselves of that part of of Spain called Betica, being vigorously affaulted by the Vifigothe, and almost de-Spairing of any relief, were by Bonifage, then Lieutenant of Africa, invited over to polfels that Province of grobaving himfelf turn'd Rebel, he was fearful, least his treas fons should be discovered to the Emperours. These motives easily encouraged the Kandale to undertake the enterprize, who under the Command of Genferion their King, made themselves Lords of Africk Mean while Theodofius fon to Arcadius succeeded to the Empire, who having but finall regard of the Western affairs, gave opportunity to the Northern people to fettle themselves in their conquelts. Thus the Vandals began to Lord it in Africa, and the Alam and Vifigoths in Spain, and the Franks and Bargundians not only seized upon Gaule, but gave names to the feveral parts by them possessed

the debet and the

ě

O

£

E 配到力

2500

9

£

Q

n

t

possessed whence one was called France and the other Burgundy. These happy successes moved more people to attempt the defiritction of the Empire, and another nation called Henou, possessed themselves of Par Hanns en nomia a Province lying just on this fide the Pannoni Danube, which from them has ever fince born the name of Hungary. And it happened as an addition to these disorders that the Emperour feeing himfelf befet on all fides (was forced, to leffen the number of his enemies) fomerimes to make peace with the Vandals, fometimes with the Franks. whereby the barbarous nations grew fillmore powerful, and the glory of the Empire decreased; nor was the Island of Britain (now called England) fecure in this in the Sangeneral calamity, for the Britain affraid of on; those people who had possessed themselves of France, and feeing no way how the Emperour could defend them, called to their affiltance the Angli, a people of Germany! Saxons after Thefe Angir under their King Vorticer and Henguly Mon dertook the affair, and having first defend- who share ed them, foon after drove them out of the their Land Island, placing themfolves there, and from their own name calling it England; whole And they old inhabitants thus driven from their nau pollels themtive foil, grew desperate, and though they serieny. could not defend their own Countrey, refolved to feife upon anothers To which end with all their families they paffed over that Sea now called the Channel, and porfelling themselves of those Countries next STREET

the opposite shore, called them after their own name Betsam. The Humo who as we said before had seated themselves in Pennous, consederating with other people, called Zopides, Ecules, Invingious, and Ossiregoths (as in their language they call the Eastern Goths) determined to seek new Habitations. And finding no entrance into France already defended by the barbabarous seeplg, marched into Italy under

Attila in-

Belieges A.

Attile their King, who fome time before to incrofs to himfelf the whole Soveraignty, had put to death his Brother Blade, thereby becoming to power ful that Andoric King of the Zenides, and Velamir King of the Oftrogethe did him homage. At his arrival in Italy, Amile belieges Aprilegia, before which he lay two whole years without amy molellation, and whileft he was in that leaguer, defroyed the whole Countrey ahour it, difpering all its inhabitants, which gave the first beginnings (as shall in due sime be sold) to the City of Venice, After the taking and deftroying Aquilegis, and many other Cities, be turned his forces towards Ross, the fooil of which he forhore, at the earnest prayers of the Pope, to which he paid fuch beveronce and respect. that leaving lasty, he acturned into Aufine and there ducd. After his decrale , Velamir King of the Ofbregoths with the shief of the other nations cook arms against Tenrie and Entit! his fons, and killing one, forced the other with his House to repais the Danube.

Attila dyeth, sie.

he

w

De

18-

ich

TC

7.

104

óg

he

rat

inc

3+

at

20

84

in

de.

is

ces

DÍN. to

a,

00

he

nft

nc. the

be,

Daniele, and setten line their own Country; the Ofregotic & Zopides Ibating themselves in Pouronie and the Herioles and Toringing on the farther bank of the Danier Attila having left Italy, Valentinian the flore it to the Empire, and the more conveniently to defend it from the Barbarian's Valentinian power, forfakes Rome, and makes Rusesule makes Rehis feat. Thefe Cafamities were the occasio Imperial on that, the Emperours who verided at Camfantimple, had many times granted the poly fellion of it to others, as a thing full of hazard and expense, and the Remant had as often, without his permission (seeing them) felves abandoned) either of themfelves created an Emperour to defend them, or fome person of Authority amongst them had usurped that dignity. As at this time Mawimms the Roman happened to do after Va- Maximu uleninian's death, forcing moreover Ends furp the xis that had been his Wife, to marry him ! who impatient to revenge fuch an injury; and not enduring to fulmit to the marriage of a private Citizen, being her felf born of Imperial blood, secretly encourages Genfore Genfore in-King of the Vandals, and now Lord of Aft vited into Free to invade lealy : Thewing him both the Laly by Escafines and advantage of the Conquest. He enticed with the hopes of Prey, foon comes, and finding Rome forfaken, facks it, and sacks Rome. flays in it fourteen days; he takes and pillages likewise many Towns in Italy; and having loaded himself and his Army with

find sois.

Zenen Emperour of the Eaft.

still Heria

welt age

plunder returns into Affrice : the Romans gain returned to Rome and Marinus dead, they treate duits a Raman, Emperour. In longer process of time, and after various accidenes in leafy and abroad, and the death of feveral Emperours, the Empire of Contan sinople fell to Zenon, and that of Rome to O. refes, and Augustulus his fon, who by cunning had feized the Empire: and whilft he defigned to maintain it by force, the Erules Introduce ! and Turingians (who as I faid before had 2550 feated themselves on the farther fide of the Danabe) uniting under Odoscer their Captain, came into Italy, and into the places by them deferted, entred the Lombards (a Northern people likewife) under the Conduct of Godalin their King who became (as in due time (hall be faid) the last Plague of Italy. Odoscer thus come into Italy, overcame and flew Orester near to Pavia and Augustulus fled. After this Victory, that Rome might feel a sils equil 298gm3 change of Title as well as Mafter, Odoacer forbearing the title of Emperour, causes himself to be stiled King of Rome, and was ff King of the first of the Cheifer of those people now running up and down the World to seek har bitations, that fetled in Iraly, for all the others either out of fear that they could not hold it (fuccour from the Eastern Empire being fo near at hand) or for some other hidden caple had only plundered it, and The State of fought fome other place of Residence. Upon the whole, the ancient Roman Empire was in thefe times reduced under thefe Princes. Ze-

akes him-Rome.

the si Ame

Odsacer invades Italy

-II situation

the Roman F moire in thefe times.

21028

日本のは、日本のは、日本日の日本日

×

á

in the

d

T_i

S

K

'n

į.

t

4

n

a

ï

manded the whole Eastern Empire, the Ofgothe were Lords of Milia and Paymonia The Vifigothe, Swenes and Alanes held Gofcery and Spain ; the Vandals, Africa; the Franks and Burgundians, France; and the Hernles and Turingians, Italy. The King dom of the Offregeths was now descended to Theodoric Nephew of Velamir ; who, be Theodoric ing in league with Zenon Emperous of the King of the East, fent him word that his Offregoths thought it hard measure, that they, who were superiour to all other people in Valour, should be inferiour in Empire; and that it was impossible for him, to restrain them within the bounds of Pannonia: therefore, fince he was necessitated to let them take Arms, and feek new abodes, he thought fit first to acquaint him with it, to the end he might provide for them by granting them peaceably some Territories, where with his good favour, they might live more happily and commodiously. Whereupon Zenon partly for fear, and partly out of a defire to drive Odoacer out of Italy, gave Theodorio leave to to march against him, and take possession of leve to Italy. Who, foon departing from Pause mia (where he left the Zapides, a people hi allyes) and coming into Italy, he kills Odoocer and his Son; and after his Example, takes the Title of King of Italy, chooling makes him-Ravenna for his Seat, out of the fame motives which had formerly perswaded Valentimian to relide there. Theodoric was a man both

har the Ein-

both in war and peace most excellent s for in the one he was always Conqueror, and in the other a great Beneractor to his Cities and People ; he diffributed his Ofregosbs with their Captains throughout the Countrey, to the end that in war they might command them, and in peace govern them. He enlarged Ravenna, reftored Rome, and except military Discipline admitted the Remans to all dergees of Honour, he kept with-Yo salid in their bounds (and that without any tumult of war, but by his fole authority) all chose barbarous Kings who had shared the Empire, he built Towns and Fortreffes beeween the point of the Adrianick Sea, and the Alpr, the more easily to impeach the paffage of any new Barbarians that might come to infeft Italy. And had not fo many virtues been towards his later end fullyed with fome cruelty, occasioned by jealoufie of State;) which the deaths of Simmachus and Boetius two holy men are testimonies of) his memory had in all points been worthy of renown and honour; for by his virtue and goodness, not only Rome and Italy, but all other parts of Love to the Western Empire (freed from the continual embroils of war, which for fo long a term of years they had undergone by rea-fop of the inundations of 10 many barbarous nations) were relieved and reduced unto good order and happy estate. And certainly if any times may be termed miferable in Italy, or in those Provinces over田をはん カールはー

1-

é

d

c

d

ŀ f

c

t

E

5

s

pun by the Berbarians, they were their which paffed between the Reigns of Honrise and decading and his, for if it be well confidered what dammage it is to any Common wealth or Kingdom to change its Prince or Government ; not by any extrinfick force, but by civil difcord, and how by little variations, Kingdoms and Commonwealths, though never to potent run to ruine : it will afterward be eafle to conceive how much Italy and other Roman The Gd E-Provinces did in those times fuffer, which face of henot only changed their Government, but their Laws, Cuftoms, manner of Living, Religion, Language, Habit and name, each of which things afunder (how much more then all together) are able to make the most resolute heart (that shall but think of them without either feeling or enduring them) to tremble. From hence fprus the ruine and the rife, the fall and lucrea of many Cities. Among those that were ruined were Apallela, Luni, Chiaft, Pope louis, Fiefble and many others, among those were new built were Venice, Siona, Forwara and Aquilt, and many other Towns and Caffles, which for breview fake, L'omit. Those which from fmall ones grew great, were Florence, Genous, Pila, Milan, Naples and Belognia, to which may be added the raine and reftoring of Rome, and many other Cities destroyed and rebuilt. Among these devakations, and this new people forung up new tongues, as is evident

dent by the language now in use in Spain, France and Italy, which being a mixture of the native language of those nations, with the ancient Roman, has begot a new Dialect of speech. And besides not only Proving ces, have changed their names, but even Lakes, Rivers, Seas and men, France, Spain, and Italy being full of new names, quite different from the formers for example to omit many other, the Po. Gardo and Anebipelago, have names now utterly disconfonant from what was given them by the ancients; men likewise from Cefar and Pompey are come to be called Peter, Jahn and Matthew, but of all thefe variations! the change of Religion was not of the leaft moment, for the use and custom of the ancient faith ingrafted in men, drugling and firiving with the miracles of the new, most dreadful discords and tumults were raised amongst all people; and certainly had the Christian Religion been united the diforders must have been much less, but whilest the Greek Church, the Roman, and that at Rayenna, frove against each other, and Hereticks belides opposed the Catholiek Doctrine, it fadly disturbed the whole world witness Africa , which endured more calamities by the Arrian Sect, with whom the Vandals complyed; and believed in, then by either their avarice or natural cruelty. So that men living in such a circle of perfecutions, bore in their eyes the terror of their hearts, for befides the infinite

nite mileries they underwent, many knew mighty, on whom all the diffrested depend. for the greatest part being doubtful to what God to have recourse, despairing of all re-lies and succour, miserably dyed. Theoderic therefore deserves no small praise for having been the first, could give a stop to all these mischiefs, infomuch that in the eight and thirty years that he reigned in Italy. he restored it to such splendor that its former defolations were scarce perceivable But he dead, and the Kingdom delcended to Atalaric fon of his daughter Amalafonta, Milani the pervertenels of fortune not yet quite King of he allayd, Italy in a very thort time fell into the fame plunge of misfortunes it had formerly grouped under. For Atalaric foon after his Grand-fathers death, and that the Government remained in his mother, was betrayed by Theadarus, who was called in by her to be her affiftant in the Government of the Kingdom, he having flain her, made himself King, and by that means Makes him becoming odious to the Offregaths, gave areas occasion to the Emperour Justinian, to hope he might drive him out of Italy, to which end he deputes Bellifarius his Ge- Bellifarius neral who had already subdued Africa, and General for either driven out the Vandals, or forced the Empethem to lubmit. Bellifarms had all that time possessed himself of Sicily, from whence palling into Italy, he takes Naples and Rome. The Goths incensed at these loffes .asmedie admi

autabout

bullet.

loffeskill flicir Ring The dans whom they

thought the occasion of them, and in his place choice Pringers, who after some strang-lings was by Bellifarian befreged in Reservate.

and taken; but ere Bellifarha could to the

Justinian , And John, and Vitalis, confli-

ŕ

S

3

h

1

1

O

é

inhabitants.

Theodatus

Bellifaring secalled.

tuted in his stead, persons quite different from the other, both in courage and conduct. Whereupon the Gothe taking heart; created Handlan, then Governous of Pas rong their King. After whom fior he Totals King was kill'd) came Totals to the Ringdom, who gave fuch thocks to the forces of the Empire, that he recovered Tufenny, and te duced the Emperors Captains to the defence of the last cast, of all that Bellifarin had recovered; which made Julius refolve to fend him again into buly, who returning but with flender forces, tather for that reputation he before had got, then gained any new. Por Total whilest Belliv in the very face of him took Rome, but feeing he could neither fafely hold, nor defert it, he for the most part disthantled it, driving out the people, and leiding away

the Senators Caprive, and flighting Bellifas rius marched into Calabria to meet those

forces that came to his recruit. Bellifaring feeing Rome thus deferted thade an hou mourable attempt, for entring the rules of Kome with all imaginable celerity he began to rebuild the walls of it, and recall the できていると

4

1

200

9

Ħ

Ų

d

4

s.

infishitants. But fortune was sverfe to this his noble enterprise, for Juffinian being ur that infiant affailed by the Parthines, once more recalled him, and he in obedi- sellferin ence to his Lordy deferts leady, leaving that T Province to the diferetion of Torite, wh foungetakes Rome ; but treated it not now with the former cruelty, for at the intresty of S. Beneditt, a man then the great seputation for his holinels, he frove rather to reflore it. Mean while Juftinian having made peace with the Paribland, defign to fend a fresh Army to the selief of Italy, but was diverted by the Invasions of the Selatonians, a new Northern people, who having paffed the Dambe, were entered in-Biris and Thracis : fo that Toils was in a manner the fole possessor of Iraly's but Justineion having overtheown the Selone minus, fends his Army thicher under the command of Narferes the Eunitety a man Narfeer feet most expert in war : who arriving in Indy, into Italy. defeats and kills Totile, and whileft the remaining Gothe made their setrent to Pavia. creating these Tojo their King, Narfotes polleffes himself of Rome, and after masching towards Tojo, fights him near Nocers, and overchrows and kills him. By which vi-Clery the very name of the Gothe was exfind in Waly who for about feventy you from Theodorick their fast King, to Toja had there Lordalin. No fooner was lasty, freed from the Cooks bus Justinian dyed, leaving Justin his for his Successor, who counfelled

รักษ์ ลงตับปร

B to make threewal.

Dokes firft in Italy.

Book T

1

C

P

0

A

Ħ

le

P

fa

C

h

M th

ca

di

fe

themselves

ter out of Baly, and fends Longinus in his flead. Longing followed the method others had done before, refiding in Ravenus : but befides that he imposed a new form of Governments not conflituting Lieutenants of Provinces as the Goths had done, but making Chiefs of every important City under the Title of Dukes, And in these kind of distributions he honoured Rome no more than any other place; for taking a way the Confuls and Senate (which till that day had continued) he reduced it under the Command of a Duke; whom he yearly fent from Ravenna, and called it the Roman Dutchy; and to the Emperours Lieutenant, who governed all Italy, he gave the file of Exerch. This divition much facilitated the ruine of Italy, and contributed to the Lombards poffelling themselves of it with the more celerity. Narfeter was highly incenfed against the Emperour for taking from him the Government of a Province he had conquered with his own Blood and Valour; & the more because Sopbia not content with the injury of having made him be recalled. had added fcornful and reproachful terms to it, giving out that the would have him fet to spin amongst the other Eunucks. In-Somuch that Narfetes, Swelling with rage and Indignation perswades Albonius King of the Lombards, then reigning in Pannonia, to

come and possess himself of Italy. The Lonbarde had, as we have faid before, feated

Albonius King of the

Seunfalle d

is

23

ut

00

of k

n-

nd

10

ill

197

he

he.

HT.

in

to h

1

m d

h b

as

m.

06

o

d

CS

themselves in those Territories on the banks of the Danube, deferted by the Herules and Turingians when their King Odoscer led them into Italy; where, having some time resided, and their Kingdom descending upon Alboinus a bold and warlike man, they paffed the Danube, and encountring Comundus King of the Lepides then possessed of Pannonia, overthrew and flew him. Amongst the Captives Alboinns finds Rofamund the Daughter of Comundus, and taking her to wife becomes Lord of Pannonia, but out of a bruitish herceness in his nature, he makes a drinking cup of Comundue's skull, and out of it used to carouse in memory of that victory. Invited now by Narfetes, with whom he had been in Invited into league during the Gothick war, he leaves Narfett, Pannonia to the Huns, who as we have faid, were after the death of Attila returned into their own Countrey, and comes into Italy, which finding fo strangely divided, he in an instant possesses himself of Pavia, Milan, Verona, Vicenza, all Tufcany, and the greatest part of Flaminia at this day called Romania. So that by these great and fudden victories judging himfelf already Conquerour of Italy, he makes a solemn feaft at Verona, and in the heat of wine growing merry, causes Comundar's skull to be filled full of wine, and would needs have it presented to Queen Rosamund; who fate at table over against him, telling herfo loud that all might hear, that in fuch a time

poison

a time of mirth he would have her drink with her father; those words were as so many darts in the poor Ladies bosome, and confulting with revenge, the bethought her felf, how Almachildis a noble Lombard, young and valiant; courted one of the Ladies of her bed-chamber, with her the contrives, that the thould promise Almachildir, the kindness of admitting him by night to her chamber; and Almachildis according to her affignation being received into a dark room, lyes with the Queen, whilest he thought he lay with the Lady, who after the fact discovers herfelf, offering to his choice either the killing of Alboinus, and enjoying her and the Crown; or the being made his facrifice for defiling his bed. Almachildir confents to kill Alboinus; but they feeing afterwards their deligns of feizing the Kingdom prove unsuccessful, nay rather fearing to be put to death by the Lombards (fuch love bore they to Alboinus) they fled with all the Royal Treasure to Longinus at Ravenna, who honourably received them. During these turmoils, Justin dyes, and Tiberim was made Emperour in his flead, who employed in the Parthian war could give no relief to Haly, which made Longinu think it a convenient time for him by means of Rofamund and her treasure to make himfelf King of the Lombards and all Iraly, he confults with her about it, and perfwades her to kill Almachildis, and marry 1 im, which the accepting, prepares a cup of

Albeinm death.

N.

b

el

nt

d,

ab.

n-

90

to

he

er

nis

nd

ng ij.

ey

he

er

de

ev

1245

m.

li-

ho

ve

MILE

by

ike

ly,

er-

rry

of on

poylon and with her own hand gives it Almachildis, as he came thirty out of the Bath, who having drunk half of it, and finding it begin to work inwardly, fulpesting what it was, forces Refamind to drink the raft, for that in few hours both dyed; and Longinus loft his hopes of being King. Mean while the Lamberds afferobling in Pavia, which they had made the principal lear of their Kingdom, chole Cless King's who rebuilt Invia definoved by Narfestes, took Rimini, and almost all the other Towns as far as Rome, but in this course of victory dies, This Clefis was so cruel, not only to ftrangers; but to his own Lome of the Lom bards, that they terrified with the regal bards. power, would no more create a King, but made choice among themselves of thirty Thirty Dukes or Captains to govern. The refult Dukes. of which determination was the cause that the Lombards never became matters of all Italy, that their Dominions never reached farther than Beneventum, and that Rome, Ravenna, Cremone, Montno, Pagna, Monfelice, Parma. Bolonia, Faenza, Troli and Cefani did many of them for a long time defend themselves, and some of them never came under their Dominion, for the want of a King made them less apt for war, and when afterwards they did create one, the time they had been free had begot in them a humour of being less obedient, and more prone to diforders among themselves, which first put a stop to their victories, and

(

t

C

iı

6

The growth of the Popes Authority.

at length drove them out of Italy. The affairs of the Lombards being therefore in this condition, Longinus and the Romans made peace with them, upon the terms that both parties should lay down Arms. and each poffels what they held. About this time the Popes began to grasp a larger authority than ever they had done, for the first successors of S. Peter beingreverenced by all men for their miracles and holy life, the Christian Religion spread so far by their example that Princes were confrained (to avoid confusion in the world) to yield obedience to it. The Emperour therefore being become Christian, and having left Rome, and feated himself in Constantinople, it followed (as we have faid in the beginning) that the Empire fell to decay, and the Church of Rome did the more easily flourish. Notwithstanding which, until the coming of the Lombards (whileft all Italy was subject to the Emperour or (Kings) the Popes never affumed any further authority, than what the Reverence paid to their Doctrine and Piety gave them; In all other things they submitted either to the Emperour or King, and fometimes were by them put to death, and as their Ministers called to account for their actions. But that which made them gain a potency, and be looked upon as of fome moment in the affairs of Italy, was Theodorick King of the Goth's choosing Ravenna for his seat; for Rome being left without a Prince, the Romans

he

in

12.0

ns

15,

ut

er

he

ed

e,

ir

to

0-

re

ft

e,

n-

id

ly

til

11

or

er

0

n

ie

re

rs

ıt

d

e

c

r

welchelle.

to sark

Littlebands

10 20 S 16

-MINSO

Pape Greyo

פום שובים

Sign Pepis

to mail

. South

mans for their refuge took occasion to yield. obedience to the Popes: yes by this means their authority increased not very much only the Church of Rome obtained the precedency of that of Ravenna. But after the coming of the Lombards, Italy being divided into feveral parts, gave the Popes opportunity of becoming more brisk a for they being as it were the head of Rome, both the Emperour of Conffantinople and the Lombards had so much respect for them, that the Romans, by means of the Popes, treated with, and made leagues with Longinus and the Lombards, not as Subjects but allves. And thus the Popes sometimes siding with the Lombards, and sometimes with the Greeks increased their own power and dignity. And the ruine of the Eastern Empire succeeding (which happened about these times under Heracleus the Emperour, the Selavonians before-mentioned again invading Illiria, and having mastred it, calling it after their own name Sclavonia, and other parts of the Empire being first overrun by the Perfians, then by the Saracens, who under Mahomet broke out of Arabia, and laftly by the Turks, Syria, Africa and Egypt being lop'd off from it) the Popes having no more that Empire (now grown fo weak) to fly to for refuge, and on the other fide the power of the Lambards dayly increasing, they thought it high time to feek out new friends, and accordingly had recourse to the Kings of France for Support.

F

K

t

¥

d

fe

h

I

h

l

h

6

port. So that all the wars hereafter made by the Barbaylans in Daly were at the Popes infligation, and all the Armies that inferred it were for the most part called in by them, which course they have confinued even to thele very times. And this is it, has full kept haly weak and divided, therefore in difeourfing things following, we shall not treat further of the fall of the Empire. now quite laid on the ground, but of the growth of Papacy, and of those other principalites, which had the rule of haly from that time till the coming of Charles the Eighth, fetring forth how Popes first by excomunication, and then by their and arms together grew at once to be retrible, and to be reverenced, and how by ill using both the one and the other, they have ut terly loft the first, and stand (as to the laft) at others differenten. But to return to the matter in hand : Origoty the third comiing to the Papacy, and Altophus to the Kingdom of Lombardy, the last contrary to all agreements, Teizes Ravenha, and makes war upon the Pope. Whereupon Gregory for the reasons before recited, relying no longer upon the Emperour of Confiantinople now to weakened, nor upon the faith of the Limburds to often violated, fends for aid to France to King Pepin the Second, who Questrasia X from Lord of Authrit and Brabant was become King of France, not fo much by his own personal valour as that of his father Charles Martel and his Grandfather Popin.

Aftelphus King of Lombardy feizes Ravenna, Pope Grego-Ty. craves aid of Pepin King of France.

1,

U

11

re

11

6,

10

n

y

e,

1

a

e

å

Ó

For Charles Marrel being Regent of that Kingdom, gave that memorable defeat to the Saragens near Tours on the river Loire, wherein above two hundred thousand of them were flain, whereupon Pepia his fon fortified with his fathers reputation, and his own virtue, became afterward King of that Countrey, To whom Pope Gregory (as we have faid) fent for aid against the Lombards, which Pepin promifed to fend him, but defired first to see him, and be honoured with his presence. Wherefore Gregory went to France, passing through Pope Gregothe Territories of the Lombards his ene- France, mies, without any stop or molestation, so much was the veneration then paid to Religion: Gregory coming into France was highly honoured by that King, and fent back with an Army into Italy, who befieged the Lombards in Pavia, whereupon Aftelphus much streightened, was forced to come to an agreement with the French ; and they granted them peace at the Popes intercession, who would not have the death of his enemy, but rather that he should be converted and live. But Pepins Forces once returned to France, Aftolphus kept not the league, whereupon the Pope had again recourse to King Pepin, who sends a new Army into Italy, overthrows the Lombards, takes Ravenna, and against the mind and will of the Greek Emperour, gives it to the Pope, together with all the Lands belonging to that Exarchate, adding to them the

Delideria

Louder to

201 8139 Minedom M

Charles nade E

month lich in a cost

by Charice

the Great.

(

1

Defiderius gets the Kingdom of Lombardy.

the Country of Urbin, and the Territory of La Marca. But Aftolphus upon the configning over these Lands dyes, and Defiderius a Lombard Duke of Infcany taks arms to feize the Kingdom, craving aid of the Pope, and promiting him his friendship, who accepting the offer, granted his affiflance, whereupon all the other Princes Submitted. And Desiderius was at first faithful to his word, and perfected the confignation of those Lands to the Pope, according to the agreement made with King Pepin, nor came there any more Exarch from Constantinople to Ravenna, but it was governed at the Popes Arbitriment. Pepin foon after dyed, and his fon Charles succeeded him, this was he who for his excraordinary feats of war was firnamed the Great, or Charlemain. In the mean time Theodorus succeeded in the Papacy, he fell at variance with Defiderius, and was by him befreged in Rome: whereupon the Pope had recourse to Charles for fuccour, who palling the Alps, belieges Desiderius in Pavia, and taking him and his children, fends them prisoners into France, going himself forward to visit the Pope at Rome, where he pronounced that the Pope being the Vicar of God, was not to be judged by man, and the Pope and people of Rome made him Emperour. And whereas the Emperours used to confirm the Popes, the Emperours now in their Election begun to fland in need of the Popes, and then came the Empire to loofe in point of Honour, and

Is with his children taken prifonce by Charles the Great,

Charles made Empey

,

1-

4

.

d

of

.

e

5,

r

0,

ıţ

e

IS

n

and the Church to gain and increase, so that by degrees it's authority more and more increased over temporal Princes. The Lombards had now been two hundred twenty two years in Italy, and were reputed strangers in nothing but in name, And Charles minded to regulate Italy, which was in the time of Pope Leo the Third, was content they should dwell in the places where they were born, and called that Province after their name Lombardy. And because they should bear a Reverence to the Roman name, he would have all the adjoining Countrey once subject to the Exarchate of Ravenna, stiled Romania, besides he created his fon Pepin King of Italy, whose Makes his jurisdiction extended as far as Beneventum, fon Perin and all the rest belonged to the Greek Em- Romans. perour, with whom Charles had entred into alliance. Pascal the first was at this time advanced to the Papacy, and the Priests of the Church of Rome to have a nearer and First confitcloser correspondence with the Pope, and tution of to qualifie themselves for electing him, to Cardinals. adorn their power with a more eminent title, began to call themselves Cardinals, and arrogated fo much to themselves, especially after having excluded the people of Rome from any voice in the election, that feldom was a Pope chosen out of their number; whereupon after the death of Pascal, Enge-Engening wins the Second was created Pope from the the fecond Title of Cardinal of Sancta Sabina. And Pope. Italy (now fallen into the hands of the

French)

(

French) changed formewhat of its mariners and customs. The Popes having affirmed a fupremacy in Temporalities, and the French having introduced the Titles of Earls and Marqueffes, as Longinus Exarch of Ravenna did that of Dukes. After some Popes Offerco, (or hogs mouth) was advanced to the Papacy, who because of the bruitishness of his own name, took that of When Popes art changed Sergius which gave original to the change of names fince used by all Popes at their election. Mean while Charles the Emperour dyed, and Lewis his fon succeeded in his flead, after whose decease, arose such difference among his children, that the Empire in the time of his Nephews, was fnatch'd away from the house of France, and tran-Sported to the Germans, the first German Emperour being called Ainulphus. Nor did the family of Charles by their own difman Empecords only lofe the Empire, but likewife the Kingdom of Italy; for the Lombards taking courage fo oppressed the Pope and Romans, that the Princes not knowing whither to fly for refuge, were necessitated to create Berengarius Duke of Friell King.

served not wit to smill Ainulphusthe firftGer-

names.

Charles the

Emperour dies, and

Lewis fuc-

ceeds. Makes his

rour.

First commit-

der Lines

Berengarius King of Itaby ; Beats the

Hunns,

Remarks Emperour of the Eaft.

were by him forced to return into Pannonia, or rather into Hungary, for fo was that Province from them now called. Romama was at this time Emperour of Confantinople, having usurped that Empire from Con-Stantine.

Thefe accidents encouraged the Humis,

who inhabited Pannonia to affail Italy.

but lofing the Battle to Berengarins, they

4

e

of

ic

U

ič

of c

IT

13

į.

d

14

n

F

(c

15

d

g

y

And been! And been! And Because upon that revolution, Prolin and Calabria which (as we have hid before) Were Subject to that Empire, had rebelled. enraged against them, he licensed or permitted at least the Saracens to Invade thole Saracens in-Countreys, who once entred, not only poffessed themselves of those Provinces, but attempted the expugnation of Rome. But the Romans (litice Berengarius was employed in their defence against the Humo) made Alberigo Doke of Tafean their Gemetal, and by his valour and conduct laved Rome from the Saracens, who tailing their Seige, planted themselves in a Rock or Fortrels upon mount Gargano, and there Lorded it over Puglia and Calabria, and oppressed the rest of Haly. Thus fadly was hely in those times afflicted; towards the Albi walted by the Hum, and towards Number by the Surucein. Long did it endure their pangs under three Berengarius's fuccestively. during all which time the Pope and Church were forely diffressed, not knowing whilther to address themselves for relief, by reafon of the diffentions of the Western Princes. and the weakness of the Eaftern Empire. The City of Genous and all that Coaff were miferably ruined by the Saracens, whence forung the first enlargement of Pila, How Pila whither multitudes of people driven from grew great; their habitations fled. These things happened in the year of Christ 931. But Ocho the fon of Henry and Marilda, and Duke of

Saxony

L

S

.

t

I

i

1

t

1

P

Saxony being chosen Emperour, a man of great prudence and reputation; Agabitus then Pope, befought him to come into Italy, and deliver him from the Tyranny of the Berengarius's. The Estates of Italy stood then in this posture, Lombardy was under Berengarius the Third, and Albertus his fon. Instany and Romania were governed by a Lievtenant of the Emperour of the West. Puglia & Calabria were partly subject to the Eastern Emperour, & partly to the Saracens. In Rome two of the Nobility were yearly created Confuls, who governed according to the Ancient Custom, having joyned with them a Tribune or Prefect of the People. They had a Council of xii, who yearly appointed Superintendents to the Towns under their charge. The Popes had in Rome, and in all Italy more or less authority accord ing as the Emperors or those most in power favoured them, Otho the Emperour came then into Italy, and deprived the Berengaris of that Kingdom they had enjoved for fifty five years restoring the Pope to his Dignity. He had a fon and a Grand-child both called likewise Otho, who one after the other succeeded him in the Em-And in the time of Otho the Third. Pope Gregory the Fifth being expelled by the Romans, Otho comes into Italy and reftores him. And the Pope to revenge himself on the Romans, took away their authority of creating the Emperour, and gave it to fix Princes of Germany, three Bishops Mentz,

Electors of the Empire appointed.

T.

of

205

ly,

he

bo

er

n.

ft,

he

u.

ly

g

e.)-1-

e,

n

e

Ò

Mentz, Triers and Cologue, and three temporal Princes, Brandenburgh, the Palatinate, and Saxony. This was in the year 1002. After the death of Otho the Third, Henry Duke of Bavaria was by the Electors created Herry Duke Emperour, and twelve years afterwards, chofencrowned by Pope Stephen the Eighth, both Henry and Simeonde his wife were perfons of a holy life, which is apparent by the many Temples endowed and built by them; among which was the Church of S. Miniate near the City of Florence. Henry dyed anno 1024. to whom succeeded Conradus of Swevia, after him Henry the Conradius of Second, he came to Rome, and there being Hemythe Se-a Schism in the Church of three Popes he cood. put them all down and caused Clement the Second to be chosen. Italy was now governed partly by the people, and partly by the Princes, and partly by the Ministers of the Emperour; amongst whom the chief. and him whom all the rest had recourse to. was called Chancellour. The most potent among the Princes was Godfrid and the Countess Matilda his Lady, daughter to Beatrice, fifter to Henry the Second, the and her husband possessed Luced Parma, Reggio and Mantua, together with all that is now called the Patrimony of S. Peter. The ambition of the people of Rome was a fore thorn in the fides of the Popes, though they had formerly made use of the Popes power to rescue them from the Emperours; but after having got the rule of the

0

n

1

h

b

t

y

C

u

ai

W

W

C

V

n

m

n

R

h

h

fr

th

p

A

ha

1

en

20

for

the City, and reformed it according to pleafure, they as fuddenly became enemies to the Popes: and more injuries did they receive from that people, then from any o-

Second

To sall a mail

.Sigust.

Pope.

ther Christian Prince. Nay in that very time that the Popes with their excommunications made all the West tremble, did the people of Rome stand out in Rebellion, and the contest on either fide was, who should take away the others reputation and autho-Nicolas the rity. To express which Nicolas the Second. being advanced to the Papacy, as Gregory the Fifth had taken from the Romans the power of creating Emperours, fo Nicolas deprived them of having any concurrence From the Sein the election of Popes, which he ordalned should belong to the Cardinals only. And not content with this, he made a compact with the Princes of Calabria and Apulia, upon terms we shall tell hereafter; by which he constrained all Officers sent from the Romans throughout their jurifdi-Ction, to pay their obedience to the Pope, and some of them he displaced. After the death of Nicolas, was a schism in the Church, for the Clergy of Lombardy would

not Submit to Alexander the Second, elect-

ed at Rome, but chose Cadolus of Parma

Antipope. Henry who abhorred the power

of the Popes, gave warning to Alexander to

renounce the Papacy, and summon'd the

Cardinals into Germany to choose a new

that felt the anguish of spiritual wounds,

Whereby he became the first Prince

Schism in the Church. Ö

Y

y

2 d

d

d,

ry

ne

15

ce

ny.

a bn

1

nt

li-

e,

he

he

ld A-

ma

er

40 he

ew

nec.

ds.

for

for the Pope called a new Council at Rome and deprived Henry of his Crown and Empire. And some of the people of Italy fided with the Pope, and some with Henry, And hence forung first up the faction of the Guelfs and the Chibelines, fo that lealy now at quiet from barbarous innundations begun to tear out its own Bowels. Henry thus excommunicated was forced by Benry fabhis own people to come into Italy, and Pope; bare-foot and bare-leg'd, on his knees ask'd the Pope pardon, which was done in the year 1080, and yet there happened a fresh centest between the Pope and Henry, whereupon the Pope again excommunicates him, and the Emperour fent his fon called like- communiwife Henry, and by the help of the Romans, cate. who hated the Pope, belieged him in his Caftle. Whereupon Robert Guiscard advances out of Puglia to his relief, and Henry not flaying for him returns alone into Germany. The Romans continued ftill obfinate, whereupon Rome was again fack'd by Robert, and reduced once more into those heaps of ruines from whence fo many Popes had before reftored it. And because Robert Guifrom this Robert began the order of the foard first the Kingdom of Naples, it will not be fu- Founder of the Kingperfluous to give a concife narrative of his dom of Na-Actions and Nation. Those discords which ples. happened amongst the Heirs of Charlemain (of which we have before spoken) gave encouragement to a Northern people called Normans, to invade France, and they pol**feffed**

m

lis

G

PN

St

to

¢c

R

E

pl

W

at

ch

th

ge

m

tr

W

m

to

D

to

qu

m

bu

tit

th

K

th

feffed themselves of that Country which a this day from them is called Normanily, Of these people some came into Italy, in the time that that Province was at once infested by the Berengarii, Saracens and Hunns, and pofferfing themselves of some Lands in Romania, did during all those turmoils valiantly maintain them. Trancred one of those Norman Princes had several fons, and among others William called Ferabar, and Robert firnamed Guiscard, and the tumults of Italy were now in fome measure ceased. Yet the Saraceus held Sicily, and made dayly inroads on the Seacoasts of Italy. Whereupon William enters into a League with the Princes of Capona and Salernum, and with Melarchus the Greeksthat was the Emperous Lieutenant in Puglia and Calabria, to invade Sicily, and in case that they succeeded, it was agreed that each should have a fourth part both of the spoil and of the Countrey. They had happy fuccess, and driving out the Saracens possessed themselves of Sieily. But after the victory, Melarchus privily bringing in a strong party of Greeks, takes possession of the Island for the Emperour, and only divides the spoil; which mightily discontented William, but he smothered his resentments, till he had a fitter opportunity, and came out of Sicily with the Princes of Salernum and Capua, but as foon as they had parted from him to go home, William returns not unto Romania, but turning afide towards

in te d

al

e-id

ne

i-

-

CS

a

e

n

d

of

d

18

r

a

f

-

d

d

e

15

towards Puglia, and presently takes Melfi; and from thence in a thort time in despite of all the power of the Greek Emperour, makes himself Lord of all Apulia and Calabria, over which his brother Robert Guiscard reigned in the time of Pope Nicholas the Second. And because there happened some difference betwixt him and his Nephews about the inheritance of that State, he made use of the Popes authority to compose it; which the Pope willingly complyed with him in defirous to gain Robert to defend him against the German Emperours, and the infolency of the people of Rome, which he afterwards did, when as we have before declared, he at the instance of Gregory the Eighth chased Henry from Rome, and tamed that people. To Robert succeeded Roger and William his fons, to whole Do- Reger and minion was joined Naples and all that Cour- William form try between Naples and Rome, and after- Guifcard, wards Sicily, of which Robert made himself master, and after that again William going to Constantinople to marry the Emperours Daughter, Roger fell upon his Estates, and took them ; heightned by which new acquists, he was the first of that line who Reger first of made himself be called King of Italy : that line but afterward contenting himself with the King of the title of King of Puglia and Sieily, he was the first gave name and beginning to that Kingdom, which is fill maintained within the antient limits, though it hath often, changed

Í

n

K

le

C

h

25

Ti

0

p

g

ti

th

V:

th

ta

di

m

A

w

V2

fe

te

in

fu

th

tin

th

de

Po

tin

T

S

The Holy War.

changed not only blood, but nation; for the Norman race decaying that Kingdom fell to the Germans, then to the French, then to the Arrogonians, and is at present possessed by the Flemmings: Urban the Second was now come to the Papacy, who being hated in Rome, and not thinking himself fafe in Italy by reason of its divisions, undertook a noble Defign, and going into France with all his Clergy, and gathering together multitudes of people in Antwerp, by an Oration he made against the Infidels, he so stirred up the minds of men, that they determined that war against the Saraceus in Asia, which enterprise and all other of like kind that afterwards happened were called Croifado's, because all that went, wore upon their arms, or upon their upper garments a red The heads of this undertaking were Godfrey, Enstachius, and Adolvin of Bulloign, Earls of Bolonia, and one Peter a Hermit much renowned for his piety and prudence, to whom many Princes and much people flock'd with monies, and many went voluntarily to this war without expecting any pay (fo much could Religion prevail in the hearts of men) moved thereto by the Example of their Captains and This enterprise was very glorious in its beginnings, for not only all Afia minor, but Syria and part of Egypt fell into the hands of the Christians, and this it was gave birth to the order of Knights of 7erusalem, which at this day are reigning and resident

Knights of Jerusalem.

I.

ne

ell en

of-

nd

12in

ok

ith

ul-

on red

ned

ich

hat

0'5.

eir red

ing

of

er a

and ind

na-

ex-

ion

reand

lo-

Afia

nto

Was 7e-

and

ent

relident in the Island of Rhodes, the only ftrong Bulwark against the Turks. There Templers. now forung up likewise the order of Knights Templars, who by reason of the lewdness of their manners soon fell to decay. In progress of time fundry accidents happened, whereby many whole nations as well as particular persons became famous. In favour of this enterprise went the Kings of England and France, the Nobles and people of Pifa, Venice and Genaua, who all gained a high reputation, fighting a long time with various fuccesses against Saladine the Saracen Sultan; but in the end his valour and the Christians diffentions rob'd them of all that glory, they had at first attained to, and after ninety years they were driven out of all that they had with so much honour and so happily recovered. After the death of Urban, Paschal the Second Paschal the was created Pope, and Henry the Fourth ad- Pope. vanced to the Empire. He comes to Rome feigning a Friendship for the Pope, but afterwards puts the Pope and all his Clergy in Prison, nor would he release them, till full power was granted him to dispose of the German Church as he pleased, about this time dyed the Countess Mathilda, and left the Church heir to her Effates. After the death of Pascal and Henry succeeded divers Popes and divers Emperours, till fuch time as the Papacy came to Alexander the Alexander Third, and the Empire to Frederick the Pope. Swede, firnamed Barbaroffa. The Popes Fred. Bar-D 2

had baroffa Em-

-

1

ł

h

6

P

O

2

d

ti

H

w

th

in

Si

T

ag

To

bu

th

A

th

mi

th

M

TA

An Antisope in I-

had all these times along been much perplexed by the Emperours and People of Rome, but their vexation was in the time of Barbaroffa mightily increased. Frederick was an excellent Soldier, but of so haughty a spirit, that he could not endure to yield to the Pope; yet at his Election he came to Rome to be crowned and returned peaceably back into Germany: But he held not long in that quiet temper, for returning into Italy, to reduce some Towns in Lombardy, had refused him obedience, it happened at the same time that the Cardinal of St. Clement, a Native of Rome, divided himself from Pope Alexander, and by a Juncio of Cardinals was created Pope. The Emperour Frederick lay then encampted at Cremona, to whom Alexander sending to complain of the Anti-pope, received answer; that they should both appear before him, and then he would give fentence which of them should be Pope. This answer displeased Alexander, and because he observed Frederick inclinable to favour the Antipope, he Excommunicates him, and flees to Phillip King of France. Mean while Frederick pursuing the War in Lombardy, takes and difmantles Milan, whereupon Verona Padua, and Vicenza made a League together against him for their common defence. During these transactions the Anti-pope dyes, and the Emperour in his stead creates Guido of Cremona. In this Interval of time, the Romans by reason of the Popes abfence,

The Antipope dyes and another fet up. 24

of

me

ick

ity

eld

to

oly

ng

I-

ly,

at

le-

elf

of

be-

re-

m-

er,

m,

of

if-

ed

ti-

ees

re-

ces

na

e-

ee.

pe

tes

of

b-

e,

fence, and the impediments the Emperour met with in Lombardy, had reassumed some authority, and went about requiring Homage of those Towns had formerly been their subjects. And because the Tuscolans would not submit to their Authority, attempted to force them to it; but they, being affifted by Frederick, fell upon the The Romand Romans Army, and routed them with fo defeated by horrible a flaughter, that Rome was never lanes. fince either fo rich or populous. However Pope Alexander was returned to Rome, hoping he might be very secure there, because of the Enmity the Romans bore to Frederick and of the Enemies which he had in Lombardy. But Frederick laying afide respect of all things elfe, goes and encamps before Rome, where Alexander stay'd not his coming, but flees for refuge to William King of Puglia, who remained heir of that Kingdom after the death of Roger. But the Plague getting into Frederick's army forced him to raise his Siege, and return into Germany: And those Towns of Lombardy which had conspired against him, the better to oppress Pavia and Tortona, which held on the Imperial fide. built a City to be the feat of the War, which they called Alexandria, in honour of Pope Alexander and scorn of Frederick. Guido the Anti-pope likewise dying, John of Fermo was fet up in his stead, who protected by the Imperial party, resided in Montesiasconi: Mean while Pope Alexander was gone to Insculum, invited thither by that people, that

ž

ŧ

I Ī

f

1

f

£ C

T ł

F

1

0 î

C V

V

e 1

4

-(

1

a

e 1

1

-3

to the Pope about The-

King Henyy's fubmif-Gon-

that by vertue of his Authority, they might be the better defended from the Romans. Ambassadors Hither came to him Ambassadors from Henry King of England, to let him know that their King had not any hand in the death of St. Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, as was publickly reported. Whereupon the Pope fent two Cardinals into England to enquire into the truth of things; and though they could not find the King in any manifest fault, yet because of the infamy and scandal of the fin, and for that he had not honoured him as he deferved, they put him to this penance, that Convoking together all the Barons of his Kingdom, he should clear himself upon Oath before them, and befides should presently send two hundred Solders paid for a whole year to Ferusalem; and should himself be obliged with as great an Army as he could raife, to go there in person before three years expired. And further, that he foould annul all acts any way infringing the liberty of the Clergy, and give confent that any of his Subjects that pleased might appeal to Rome: All which conditions were accepted by Henry, and that great King submitted to a sentence, which a private man would now blufh to floop to. But though the Pope exercised fuch authority over Princes fo far distant, yet could he not reduce the people of Rome to obedience, whom he could not prevail with to grant him residence there, though he promised, not to meddle with any but Ecclefi1

ght

ms.

om

OW

the

ter-

re-

ng-

and

ny

and

not

im

her

uld

be-

ol-

m;

eat

in

nd

ny

nd

hat

ich

nd

ce,

to èd

nt.

ME

ail

h

uť 1

Ecclefiaftical affairs, so much are appearrances more dreaded at a distance then nearer hand. Frederick mean while was returned into Italy, and whilft he was preparing new War against the Pope, all his Prelates and Lords declared they would forfake him, unless he would reconcile himfelf to the Church; So that he was constrained to go and adore the Pope at Venice Frederick where they came to accord. By which a- fubmits to greement the Pope deprived the Emperour the Pope. of all Authority over Rome, and nominated William King of Sicily and Puglia for his confederate. And Frederick of a temper not able to live in quiet, goes to the Holy Land, to wreak that rage and ambition up- Go to the on the Mahometans, which he fail'd of have- Holy War ing fatisfied against the Vicar of Christ. But And dyes in coming to the River Cydnus, and delighted the way. with the clearness of its Streams, he went to wash himself in it, and of that disorder dyed. Frederick thus dead, the Pope had only the contumacy of the Romans to contest with. And after many disputes about the creation of Confuls, it was agreed that the Romans should elect them according to their ancient Customs, but that they should not enter upon the Magistracy, till they had fworn fealty to the Church; this agreement made John the Anti-pope flee to Montauban, where he foon after dyed. Mean while William King of Naples dyes, and the Pope The Pope deligns to poffels himself of that Kingdom; deligns to that Prince having left no other Male-Chil- Kingdom

dren of Naples.

dren but Tancred his base Son. But the Barons would by no means consent to the Henry Son of Pope, but would have Tancred for their

Frederick made Empetour.

King. Celeftine the Third was now Pope, who defirous to friatch that Kingdom out of Tancreds hands; contrived to make Henry Son of Frederick Emperour, and promised him the Kingdom of Naples, upon condition he should restore to the Church those Lands appertained to it; and to make the matter more easie, he takes out of the Monastery Constance the Daughter of William already well stricken in years, and gives

And King of Natles.

her Henry to Wife. And thus passed the Kingdom of Naples from the Normans, who had been the Founders of it, to the Germans. Henry the Emperour having first setled the affairs of Germany, comes into Italy with his Wife Constance, and his Son of about four years old, called Frederick, and without much difficulty makes himself master of the Kingdom; Tancred being already dead, and having left hehind him only an Infant called Roger. Sometime after Henry dyes in Sicily, and Frederick succeeds him in the Kingdom; And in the Empire Otho Duke of Saxony, made so by the favour of Innocent the Third, but as foon as he had got the Crown, contrary to all imagination, Othe becomes an Enemy of the Popes, feizes on Romania, and prepares to invade the Kingdom: whereupon the Pope Excommunicates him, and he being forfaken by all, the Electors chose Frederick King

Henry dyes

I

t

¥

h

.

1

I

2

t

i

(

f

the

the eir

pe, out

en-

ro-

on

ch ke

he

li-

res he

ho

MS.

he

th

ut

h-

of d,

nt

es he

ke

10-

ot

n,

\$,

Kn

of Naples Emperour. Frederick comes to Frederick Rome for the Crown, but the Pope refuses ples Empe to crown him, fearful of his power, and rour. wishing rather to drive him out of Italy, as he had driven Otho. Whereupon Frederick in anger goes into Germany, and after many battails with Otho overcomes him. Mean time Innocent dyes, who besides other his famous works built the Hospital of the Holy Ghost at Rome, to him succeeded Honorious the Third, in whose time sprung up the Orders of St. Dominick and St. Francis in the year M CC XVIII. This Pope Crowns Frederick, and John descended from Baldwin King of Jerusalem (who was with the remnant of the Christians in Afia, and yet held the Title) gives him his Daughter to wife, and for a Dower configns to him the Title of that Kingdom, whence it comes, that whoever is King of Naples, stiles himself King of Jerusalem. In Italy they now lived after this manner: The Romans made no Confuls, but in flead The State of of them they made fometimes one, fome- haly. times more Senators. The League likewife continued that was made amongst the Cities of Lombardy against the Emperour Frederick Barbaroffa, which were Milan, Brefeia, Mantona, with most part of the Cities of Romania, and befides them Verona, Vicenza, Padoua and Trevigi. On the Emperours part were Cremona, Bergamo, Parma, Reggio, Modena and Trent. The other Cities and Castles of Lombardy, Romania and Marca Trevigi-

ı

1

-

ì,

ń

Trevigiana took according to the necessity of the times now one part, now the other. There was come into Italy, in the time of Othe the Third one Ezelmo, of whom remained in Italy, one Son that begot another Ezel-He being rich and potent, addreffed himself to Frederick the Second, who (as has been faid) was become enemy to the Pope, he took Verona and Mantona, difmantled Vicenza, garrison'd Padna and defeating the army of the Colleagues, takes his course towards Tuscany. Insomuch that Ezelmo had subdued all Marca Trevigiana; but he could not Mafter Ferrara it being too well defended by Azone d' Este, and those people the Pope had in Lombardy. Whereupon raising his Seige, the Pope gave that City in Fee to Azone d' Efte, from whom are descended the present Lords of it. Frederick stay'd at Pifa, desirous to make himfelf Lord of Tufcany, and by firiving to distinguish between his friends and enemies, he fow'd those feeds of division which occasioned the ruine of all Italy: For the faations of the Guelfs and the Ghibellines multiplyed; Those who followed the Church being catted Guelfs, and those who fided with the Emperour Ghibellines; in Piftoya were these names first heard. Frederick departing from Pifa, wastes and destroys the Territories of the Church. So that the Pope having no other remedy, sets on foot the Croifado against him, as his Predecessors had done against the Infidels: And Frederick

The Factions of the Guelfs and Ghibellines multiply. ty

er. 0-

nel-

ed

as

he

f-

nd

ces

nat

a;

00

ofe

e-

at

m

en-

li-

es,

C-

a-

1-

d

Va e-

ne

ie

ot

rs

2-

derick, that he might not in an instant be forfaken of his people, as Frederick Barbarolla, and other his Ancestors had been . hires great numbers of Sarazens, and to oblige them to his fervice, and erect to himfelf a Bulwark in Italy, firm enough to withstand the Church, without fear of the Popes curses; he gives unto them Nocera in the Kingdom of Naples, that having a refuge of their own, they might with more fecurity ferve him. Innocent the Fourth Image was now come to the Popedom, who fear- Fourth ful of Frederick, first goes to Genoua, and thence to France, where he calls a Council at Lyons; to which Frederick determines to go, but was with-held by the Rebellion of Parma, from the Seige of which being repulled, he goes into Tufcany, and thence to Frederick Sicily, where he dyes, leaving his Son Conrade in Suevia, and in Puglia, Manfred born Naples dyes. of his Concubine, whom he had made Duke of Beneventum. Conrade comes to take poffession of the Kingdom, and arriving at Naples dyes, leaving only Conradine an Infant, and then in Germany. Whereupon Manfred first as Protector of Conradine , gets that Manfred his State into his hands, and afterwards giving base son gets out that Comadine was dead, makes himfelf the King-King, both against the will of the Pope, and the Neapolitans, whom he forced to give their confent. Whilft the Kingdom laboured under these calamities, many troubles were raifed in Lombardy by the Guelfe, and the Ghibelline Factions, For the Guelfe's flood

C

d

n

d

f

C

S

C

i

k

C

n

v

a

t

¥

t

t

t

C

1

6

stood up for the Popes Legate, and the Ghibellines for Enelmo, who was possessed

Purfues his

enmity a-

gainst the

Church.

of almost all Lombardy beyond the Po. And because in the heat of the War Padous had rebelled, he put to death twelve thoufand Padnons, and before the War was ended dyed himself, at about thirty years of age, after whose death all the Towns by him possessed were free. Manfred King of Naples pursued the Enmity of his Ancestors against the Church, and held the Pope, who was now called Urban the Eighth, in continual trouble and torment, in so much that to tame him, he set on foot the Croifado against him, and went to Perugia to attend their coming in to him; but perceiving that people earne in very flow and faintly, he concluded that to overcome Manfred more certain helps would be requifite, he therefore feeks the favour of France, and to that end, Charles of Anjou, brother of Lewis King of France, he creates King of Sicily and Naples, and encourages him to come and take poffession of that Kingdom. But before Charles could get to Rome, the Pope dyes, and in his stead Clement the

Fourth was got into the Chair; in whose

time Charles with thirty Gallyes arrives at Offia, having given order to his other peo-

ple to come by Land. Whilst he stay'd in Rome, the Romans to gratise him, made him Senator, and the Pope installed him in the Kingdom, on condition that he should yearly pay to the Church fifty thousand Florines.

The Pope creates Charles of Anjon, King of Naples.

He arrives

and

kI.

the

ffed

Po.

lona

ou-

nd.

of

wns

ing

In-

the

the

nt,

oot ru-

out

W

me

ıi-

ce,

er

of

to

n.

he

ne

ſe.

at

-

n

n

e

gold bridge

and withall made a Decree that neither Charles nor any other holding that Kingdom should be capable of being Emperours. Charles marches against Manfred, defeats and kills him near Beneventum, and fo becomes Lord of Sicily and Naples. But Conradine to whom by his fathers will that Scepter belonged, having gathered a great power in Germany, comes into Italy against Charles, with whom he fights at Taliacozzo, is defeated and flees, but in his flight being known, is taken prisoner and flain. Italy was now quiet till Adrian the Fifth fucceeded to the Papacy, and Charles being fifth Pope. now at Rome, and governing the City by virtue of his Senators office, the Pope not able to endure his greatness and power retires, and makes Viterbe his refidence, from whence he folicits the Emperour Rodolphus to come into Italy against Charles. Thus the Popes often out of specious pretences of their care of Religion, but oftener out of their own natural Ambition, never ceased calling fresh forces into Italy, and stirring up of new wars; and no fooner had they made any Prince powerful, but they repented it, and fought his ruine, not permitting any to possess that Province, which by reason of their own weakness they could not enjoy. And Princes stood in aw of them, because fighting or flying they always overcame, if they were not by some wile or other ops pressed; as were Boniface the Eighth, and fome others, who under the colour of Friendship

APPOYEL

· Sheet

Friendship were by the Emperours made reprisoners. Redolphus could not come into the Italy, being staid by the war he had in Bo- Po bemia, Whilest things stood thus, Adrian his Sticoles the dyes, and Nicoles the Third, of the Family of third Pope; of Orfini is made Pope, who contrived all or

ways imaginable to leffen the power of hi Charles, and managed things fo as to make m the Emperour complain that Charles kept a di Governour in Tufcany, and favoured the H Guelf Faction, which fince Manfred's death had been by him revived in that Province : Charles yielded to the Emperour, and withdrew his Governour, and the Pope fent one of his Cardinal Nephews Governour for the Empire: whereupon the Emperour in return of this Honour restored Romania to the Church, which had by his predeceffors been taken from it, and the Pope made Bertolds Orfini Duke of Romania: and now judging himself potent enough to look Charles in the face, he first took away his Office of Senatour, and made a Decree that none of Royal Blood should hereafter be Senators of Rome. He had next a mind to fnatch Sicily from Charles, and to that end held a private treaty with Peter King of Arvately with ragon, which afterwards in the time of his Successor took effect. He defigned likefrom Charles wife to make two Kings of his own Family, one in Lombardy, and the other in Tuscamy, whose power might be sufficient to defend the Church from the invasion of the

Germans, and insolencies of the French al-

Arragon to

ready

n

di th

h

n

C

tı 2

8

ti

y f

1

0 V

1

C

I

1

1

ce 2 th-

one

for

in

to

ors

ade

w

ok

his

nat

be

to

nd

1r-

nis

e-

ly;

4-

e-

he

1ly

ade ready in the Kingdom. But with these nto thoughts he dyed, and was the first of the Bo- Popes that gave such visible testimonies of this natural ambition, and who under colour nily of feeking the Churches advantage, fought all only honours and riches for himself and of his. And as in the times hitherto past, no ake mention is made of any Nephews or Kinot a dred of the Popes, fo for the future the Popes Ne the History will be so full of them that we shall and Relatiath not fail to meet even with their own chil- on first pal dren; nor can the Popes now have any ferred a thing more to tempt them, but as they enriched. have defigned all along to these times to make principalities hereditary, so now to contrive to make the Papacy fo. Indeed true it is that principalities by them erected are feldom long lived, because the Popes generally living themselves but a very short time, though they plant never so well; yet their plants not having time enough to foread and fasten in the root, having but flender hold must needs upon the first gust of wind flag, and wanting that virtue wlich should uphold them, fall. To Nicolas succeeded Martin the Fourth, who being of the French nation favoured Charles his Marin the party, and in requital Charles fent his Forces eighth Por into Romania that had rebelled, and being encamped at Furli, Guido Bonafi an Aftrologer gave directions that at a fignal given by him the people (hould fall on upon them, infomuch that all the French were taken or flain. In this time the practice fet on

B

los

an 21

shi

th

vii

Cr

the

for

WC tur

and

of

Po

alfo

WC

the

ker

the

kno

of I

dep

Phi

the

run

and

the

Por

get

100

and

of

ma

The French The Arago the Island.

Rodulphus Cells the Citheir free-

Boniface the eighth Pope

foot by Pope Nicolas with Peter King of Arragon was brought to effect, for the Sieilians maffacred all the French they found; maffacred in and Peter made himfelf Lord of the Island under pretence it belonged to him in right of his wife Constance the daughter of Manfred; but Charles providing for war in order to the recovery of it dyes, leaving behind him Charles the Second, who in that war was made prisoner in Sicily, and to regain his liberty, promifed that he would again deliver himself up prisoner, if within three years time he did not prevail with the Pope to invest the Kings of Arragon with the Kingdom of Sieily. Rodulphus the Emperour though he could not come into Italy, yet to gain the Empire some reputation there, fends his Embassadour with full authority to make all those Cities free that would purchase it; whereupon many bought it, and with their liberty changed their manner of living. Adolphus of Saxony succeeded in the Empire, and in the Papacy Piere del Murone who was called Pope Celestine, who being a Hermit, and of a strict and holy life, after fix months refigned, and Boniface the Eighth was elected: The Heavens that knew there would a time come that Italy should be freed from the French and Germans, and be left entire in the hands of Italians, so that the Pope if foreign obstacles were once wanting, could neither establish nor hold his power, raised up in Rome two mighty families, the Colonnest

loine fi and the Office that with their power The Pope and vicinity they might keep the Papacy at seks tore a bay ; whereupon Pope Boniface who knew Colones i this well, endeavoured utterly to extirpate the family of the Colonesi, and besides having excommunicated them, bandied the Croifado against them, which, if it damaged them, damaged the Church much more; for those arms which by faith and charity would do wonders, being by felf ambition turned against Christians, lose their edge and virtue: and thus the immoderate defire of fatisfying their own appetite, made the Popes by degrees difarm themselves. also deposed two of that family, which were Cardinals; and Sciarra the chief of the Family (in a disguise) flying, was taken by the Catalonian Corfairs, and put to the oar, but afterwards coming to be known in Marfellis was fent to Philip King of France, who frood excommunicated and deprived of his Kingdom by Boniface: and Philip confidering that in open war against the Pope, Princes either came off losers, or run great hazards, had recourse to cunning, and diffembling to make an agreement with the Pope, he fends Sciarra privately into Italy, who arrived at Anagnia where the Pope then was, and getting his friends together by night, took him, and though foon after the people of Anagnia rescued and fet him at liberty, yet nevertheless out of mere vexation to be so taken, he dyed mad. Beniface was the first that established Dyes mad

71100100

1

list

d

d.

he

M-

T

e-

at

e-

a-

h-

th

018

145

ne

e-

m

25

m

y

us

in

d

of

A

1,

1

ic

n if

d

d

fi

the Jubilee, anno 1300, and ordered the cele

G

ot th

m

ma W

Ba

to

ed

Ba

pa lat

Ž,

ă'n

Er

P

int

hu

Clement the Fifth, Popa

50

Harry of Lunembeargh Em perour.

brating it every hundredth year. About the times happened great proubles between the Guelf and Ghibelline factions, and because I taly feemed forfaken by the Emperous many Cities became free, and many were u furped by tyrants. Pope Benedict reftored the Cardinal Colone to the hat, and absolved Phil lip King of France; To him fucceeded Che ment the Fifth, who being a French ma removed the Court into France 1306. Du ring thefe things dyed Charles the Second King of Naples, to whom incceeded Reben his fon, and to the Empire was elected Harry of Luxemburgh, who came to Rem to be crowned, though the Pope was not there. Sad troubles arofe in Lombardy by reason of his coming for all those that were driven out, whether Guelfs or Gbi bellines, being returned again into their own Cities, and striving again to drive each other out, they filled Italy with war and tumult, do whatever the Emperous could to prevent it. Parting from Low bardy by way of Genous, he came to Pife where he begun to contrive how to refer Tufcany from King Robert, but not able to do any thing, he goes forward to Rom where he stayed but few days, for being driven out by the Orfini, encouraged by King Roberts favour, he returned to Pife and that he might more securely war gainst Tulcany, and withdraw it from under King Roberts yoke, he caused Frederic

King

the character was the character was

Pifa, fewe le to onic, eing

ing

Ring of Stelly to invade it, but whileft he was hoping to postell Tufeany, and take it was from Robert, he dyed. To whom fueceeded in the Empire Lenis of Bavaria And in the interior John the two and twentieth Lear of Be-Emperour cealed not to perfective the John the Guelfs, and the Church, whose chief defen- twentieth ders were King Robert and the Florentines, whence arole mighty wars managed in Lombardy by the Visconti against the Guelfs. The in Tufcany by Caffruceio of Lucca against the Florentines. But because the Family of the Vifeouti were those that laid the foundation of the Dutchy of Milan, The Vicanti one of the five principalities that after go- of Milan. verned Italy: I think it convenient to make a larger inquifition into their origihal. After the league in Lombardy, which we have before mentioned, made by feveral Cities to defend themselves from Frederick Barbaroffa, Milan, reftored from its ruines, to revenge the injuries it had received, joined it self in that league, which bridled Barbaroffa, and for a time kept the Church party in heart and life; and amidst the calamities of the war that enfued, the Family de la Torre became most potent in that City, and daily increased in reputation, while the Emperours authority was but feeble in that Province: but Frederick the Second coming into Italy, and the Ghibeline Faction growing potent by means of Ezelmo, and that humour spreading in every City. Amongst thofe

1

ì

C

9

h

t

li

b

w

r

z. W

to

pe to fir

ie

ad lo vivis I

umis Empe-

aris soul o bhe our

wirelierier

MONEY THE

est#1, 70

Pope

those who in Milan were leaders of the party was the Family of the Visconti who chased those de la Torre out of that City yet ere they had been long expelled, by a greement made between the Emperous and Pope, they were restored to their Countrey But the Pope being with his Court gone into Fance, and Harry of Luxemburgh coming into Italy to go fetch the Crown at Rome, was in Milan received by Maffee Vilconti and Guido de la Torre, the two heads of those Families; and Maffeo deligning to make use of the Emperour to drive Guide out of Milan, which he judged easie to do because he was of the contrary faction, took occasion from the grievances and complaint of the people at the tyrannous deportment of the Germany, and warily went about encouraging every one, and perswading them to take arms and free themselves from the flavery of those Barbarians: and when he thought he had disposed all things to his purpose, he caused by one of his confidents a tumult to be raised, whereupon all the people took arms against the German name and no fooner was the alarm given, but Maffeo with his fons and all his confederates arming themselves, ran with speed to Harry, telling him how this tumult arole from the Family de la Torre, who not content to live privately in Milan, had taken that or portunity to fack it, to gratifie the Guelfi Italy, and make themselves Princes of that City; but that he should be of good courage

k fi tha

whe

ity

V a

and

rey. m-

om

THE STATE OF

s of

to

do.

ook

ints

tof

OU.

to.

fla-

he

his

nts

the

ne i

but

CT-

to ofe

ent

op O hat

age for

for they and their party if he were minded to defend himself, were ready to run all hazards to fecure him; the Emperour believed all that Maffes told him, and joining his forces to the Visconti's, fet upon those de la Torre (who were dispersed up and down the City to appeale the rumult,) and those they could light of they flew, and the reft having dispoil'd them of their goods banished; thus remained Maffeo Vifconti as Prince in Milan, and after him Galeago and Azo. and after them Lucinus and John, John became Arch-Bishop of that City, and Latimus (who dyed before him) left Iffue. Barnaby and Galeago, but Galeago, dying foon after, left behind him John Galeazo, called the Count of virtue; who after the death of the Arch-Bilhop treacherously slew his Uncle Barnaby, and remained the fole Prince of Milan, and was he who first bore the title of Duke; of his iffue remained Philip, and John Maria Angelo, who being flain by the people of Milan, the State remained to Philip, who left no Issue-male, and so was this Government transferred from the Family of the Visconti's to that of the Sforza's, in the manner, and for the reasons which shall in due place be declared. to return where we left off, Lewis the Emperour to give reputation to his party, and Emperor to to take the Crown, comes into Italy, paffrom the fing through Milan, and having occasion to Milanger, levy some money among the Milaneses, imprisons makes a show of giving them liberty, and the Vijenti.

E 5

puts

puts the Viscontiin prison, whom afterwards

by means of Caltruccio of Lucea, he releated and going to Rome, the better to disturb the peace of Italy, he makes Peter Comera Anti-

Pila and

John King of Bebemia romes into Laly.

pope, by whole reputation and the Visconti's arms, he hoped to weaken the opposing parties of Inscany and Lombardy; but Castrue. cio dyes, and his death was the principal cause of Lewis his ruine, for Pisa and Luc-Luccarebel. ca rebelled against him, and the Pifans sent the Anti-pope prisoner to the Pope in France, and the Emperour despairing of the affairs of Italy, returns into Germany: No fooner was he gone, but John King of Bobemia comes into Italy, invited by the Chibellines of Brescia, of which and Bergame he makes himself master: and because his coming was by the Popes consent (though the contrary was pretended) the Legate of Bolonia favoured him, judging it a good expedient against the Emperours return into Italy. By this accident the face of things in Italy were quite changed, for the Florentines and King Robert feeing the Legate fayoured the attempts of the Ghi belines, became enemies to all those, to whom the Legate and King of Bohemia were friends: and without respect either to Guel Ghibelling drew in many Princes into league with themselves; amongst whom were the Visconti, those de la Scala, Phili Gonzaga of Mantona, those of Carrara, and those D'este, whereupon the Pope excommunicated them all, and the King doubtful

of'

Kr

for

cul

dif

Bol

gai

po mia

de

Cit

CH

ve

Mo

Fle

the

WC

Ar:

de

for

Pe

bo

H

In

W

ìn:

an

CO

À

gn de

a

da di

4

D.

у ;

of he

0.0

DC.

nt

he

4

re.

ace

for

the bi-

10

ere

κĮĮ.

920

mo

Lig

nd

m:

11

of

of this League, went home to recruit his Army, and returning again with greater force, yet found the enterprise very difficult: whereupon terrified, to the great difpleafure of the Legate, he returned into Bobemia, leaving only Reggio and Modena garrisoned, and recommending Parma to Marfelio, and Peter de Roffi, who were very potent in that City. He being gone, Bolo-War entred into the League, and the Confederates divided among themselves four Cities, which still remained on the party of Church, agreeing that Parma should be given to those della feale, Reggio to Gonzaga, Modena to the D' Efte, and Lucca to the Florentines. But in the Enterprise of taking thefe Towns many broyls enfued, which were most of them at length composed by the Venetians. It may possibly appear The rife of drange to fome, that among fo many acci- Venice. dents which happened in Italy, we have fo long deferred to make any mention of the Venetians, they being a Common-wealth, both in point of Rule and Power, to be celebrated before any other Principality of Haly. But to take away any fuch cause of wonder; I will go back fo far, that every one may understand, what were its beginnings, and why they deferred for fo long a time, the concerning themselves in the affairs of halv. Attila King of the Huns belieging Aquilegia its inhabitants after having a long time defended themselves, despairing of their fafety, carrying off their moveables in the best

1

4

t

¢

1

a

C

¥

Ç

C

2

t

C

C

ù

TAL

best manner they could, sheltred themselves upon a great cluster of uninhabited Rocks at the point of the Adriatick Sea. The Paduant likewise seeing the fire brought almos to their own doors, and fearing after the taking of Aquilegia, Attila would fall like wife upon them, all their moveables of mol value they carried likewife into the fame Sea, to a place called the High-bank, whither they fent likewise their Wives, Children, and old Men, keeping only the young Men in Padoua to defend it. In like manner those of Montselice urged by the fame fear, came to feek shelter in those Rocks But Aquilegia taken, and Attila having Spoiled Padona, Montselice, Vicenza, and Vo rona, those of Padona, and the most powerful of the others, continued to inhabit those Marshes that were about the High-bank, And in like manner all the people about that Province, which was anciently called Venetia driven by the fame accidents fought a refuge in those Marshes, and fo forced by necessity; they forlook pleasant and fruitful places, to go and inhabit in places wild and barren, and wanting all manner of necessary conveniencies. But having people enough in an inflant gather ed together, in a very short time they made those places, not only habitable but delightful; and conflituting Laws and Orders a mong themselves, among all the Ruines, and Rapines which Italy groaned under, lived quiet and fecure, and in a fhort time grew

lves

S.at

Pa.

nof

the iko

nof

arne

vhi-

hil

ing

an

ame

cks

ing Vo

ver-

nose

ink.

out lla

nts fo

ant

10

cr ade

ht-

ics, ler.

m¢

ew

grew to power and reputation; for belides the forementioned inhabitants, many of the Cities of. Lombardy fleeing from the cruelty of Clefis, King of the Lambards, took fanduary here, which added no finall increase to this City. In fo much, that in the time of Pepin King of France, when at the Popes intreaty he came to drive the Long bands out of Italy. In the Articles agreed on between him, and the Greek Emperour. the Duke of Beneventum, and the Venetians paid Homage to neither, but in the midft of both, enjoyed their own liberty. Moreover, as necessity had driven them to live among the Waters to (no more relying now upon the Land) it forced them to bethink themselves how they might honestly live, and thereupon trading with their Ships to all parts of the World, they flockt their City with fundry forts of Merchandize which others wanting, begot a necessary and frequent concourse of people thither; Nor thought they for a good while of any other Dominion, but fuch as might be most commodious for their Trade, and therefore possessed themselves of many Ports in Greece and Syria; and upon the paffages made by the French into Afia (because they made use of their (hipping) the Island of Candia was configned to them. And whilft they lived in this manner, their name grew terrible upon the Sea, and respected through all Italy, fo that few controverses happened, in which they were not made Arbitrators, bitrators

As particularly in this difference which a role among the Confederates on account of the Territories to be divided amongst them. who referring the matter to the Venetians, the Vifcome had affigued them Bergamo and Buffia. But in process of time; having added to their Dominion, Padona Vicenza and Trevegi, and afterwards Verana Bergamo and Brefeia, and in the Kingdom, and Rosiania, divers other Cities, hurried on with a defire of rule, they grew into fuch an ely appeared terrible to the Princes of Italy but even to remoter Kings: Whereupon all confpiring against them, they had in one day taken from them all that Dominion, they had in to many years, with fuch infinite expence of blood and treasure been gaming. And though indeed in these latter times they have regained fome part, yet having recovered neither that reputation, nor power, they live (as do all the other Princes of Italy) Benedit the at the differetion of others! " Benedit the Twelfely was now advanced to the papacy, and imagining he had utterly loft the porfelfion of Italy fearing left Lewis thould make himfelf Eard of it, he descrinined to usurped the Cands that formerly paid obedience to the Empire, and to the end he perour, and bind them the farmer to the defence of Iraly; he made a Decree that all the Tyrants of Lembardy fliould poffels the 1-namigile lis

Twelfth Pope.

Lands

Ė

of

n,

Ŋ

d

da

id

no

64

th

رنا

n.

ill

ay

cy

X-

g.

ey

0-

7

y) he

Y.

H

to

H

ė.

tH

ic

ds

I ands they had usurped, by just Title ; But the Pepe dying, during this concession, Glament the Sixth confirmed it. And the Emperpur feeing with what liberality the Pone digiven away the Lands of the Empire. that he might not be less liberal then he in disposing the goods of others, he gave to all the Tyrants, that had usurped upon the Territories of the Church, all their Lands. to hold them by Imperial Authority, by making ald which means Galeotte Maletelli and his brethren became Lords of Rimini, Pefare and Fano. Antonio of Montefeltiro of Marca and Unbine; Gentile of Vanano of Camerine; Guido de Polenta, of Ravenna; Sinihalds, Ordelaff of Furli and Cefena. John Manfredi of Faenza. Lodovico Aledofi of Imola, And besides these many other Territories, so that of all the Lands belonging to the Church, few but had a new Prince; which, even till the time of Alexander the Sixth, kept the Church very weak, but he in our times with the ruine of their descendants reflored its Authority. The Emperour when he made this Concession was at Trent, and gave it out that he had a design to pass into Italy, which occasioned great Wars in Lombardy, by which the Visconti became Lords of Panna. About this time dyed Robert King of Naples, leaving behind him Robert Kin only two grand Daughters of his fon dyes. Charles's (who was dead a little before him) and willed, that the eldeft, which was called Joan, should inherit the Kingdom, taking

taking for her Husband Andrew fon to the

King of Hungary his Nephew. Andrew lived not long with her, but the murdered him, and marryed another of her Couling Lewis Prince of Taranto. But Lewis King of Hangary to revenge his Brothers death, entred Irely with an Army, and drove Joan and her Husband from the Kingdom, About this time a very memorable thing ble accident happened at Rome. One Nicholas di Lozenza Chancellor in the Capitol, drove the Senators out of Rome, and made himself, under the title of Tribune, head of the Roman Common-wealth, and reduced it to the primitive form of Government, with to much reputation of Justice and Virtue, that not only the adjacent Territories, but all Italy fent Ambaffadors to him: In fo much that the ancient Provinces seeing Rome as it were born again, raifed up their heads, and fome moved by fear, others by hope gave honour to it : But Nieholas himself notwithflanding fo much reputation, of his own accord in its very beginnings forfook it, for not having a foul large enough to bear fuch a weight, without being opposed by any body, he fecretiy fled, and went to Charles King of Bobemia, who by order of the Pope in form and contempt of Lewis of

Bavaria had been elected Emperour) and he

to gratifie the Pope, fent him Nicholas prifoner. Te followed not long after in imita-

tion of this that one Francisco Barocegli

took upon him the Tribuneship, and drove out 1

Ô

1

P 6

L ti

E

E

fa

A

m

ns, ing th,

ean rn,

.

ıf, o-

to

iat

all

ch

ît

nd

ve

10-

iis

it,

ar

by

to

of

of

10

14

li

è

ıt

out the Senators, so that the Pope as a quick remedy to suppress him, takes Niebelas out of prison, and sending him to Rome, restores him to the office of Tribune, who having thus regained the command of the State, puts Francis to death. But the Colenness becoming his enemies, he was himfelf foon after flain, and the Senators reflored. Mean time the King of Hungary having expell'd Queen Joan, returned into his own Kingdom; but the Pope who sometagest had much rather have the Queen his Neigh-bour, than that King, wrought to, that he rettored to was content to reftore her Kingdom, don provided Lewis her Husband would be content with the Title of Taranto, and not be called King. Now came in the year The Jubilee 1350, and the Pope thinking good that decreed ethe Jubilee ordained by Pope Beniface the year. Eighth for every hundred years, should be reduced to fifty, decreed it accordingly, for which kindness and benefit, the Romans were content that he should fend four Cardinals to reform the Government of that City, and make Senators according to his pleasure. The Pope likewise pronounced Lewis of Taranto, King of Naples, for which favour Queen Joan gave Avignion, that Avienim was part of her inheritance to the Church, siven to the About this time dyed , Luciino Visconti Church. whereby John Archbishop of Milan re- State of mained fole Lord, who waged great Wars lan. with the Tuscans and his Neighbours whereby he ftill grew more powerful. After

Cardinal . thores the

Drugg the Fifth Pope.

to the di

m

te

to

Cardinal Migidius re-Churches

reputation.

at baroffer

Urban the Fifth Pope.

Twelfth Pope.

After him remained of that flock his Ne phew's Edward and Galeage ! But hortly after Galeage Ayed , leaving John Galeage his fon, who divided that State with Barmany. In their times Charles King of Bo-Sixth Pope, who fent into Italy Cardina Egidiat a Spaniard born, who by his va-lour and conduct, not only in Romagnia and Rome, but also throughout all listly reflored the reputation of the Church. He Curen Juga recovered Boloma, which the Archbishop of Milan had taken : forced the Romans to ding dingaccept one forreign Senator, which the Pope was every year to lend them; made an ho-nourable peace with the Vijeouti; routed and took prifoner Sr. John Hankwood, an derreed c. wild you Englishman, who with four thousand Eng. fish made war in Tufcany, in behalf of the Ghibelines: Whereupon Troan the Fifth fucceeding to the Papacy, and hearing of fo many Victories, he determined to visit Italy and Rome, whither likewife came the Emperour Charles, and after some few months flay, Charles returned to his King-Greeny the dom, and the Pope to Avignion. After Urbans death was created Gregory the Twelfth, and because Cardinal Egidins was dead, Italy turned into its wonted diforders, by reason of the confederacy of divers Towns against the Visconti : In so much, that the Pope sent first a Legar into Italy with fix thousand Britans, and after coming himself in person, brought again the Court to

とけどけっ

He Ma

10

ol to

pe o-

ed an grant he

of

fit

he

W g-

cr

he

125

ir-

h,

ily

ng

to

to Romein the year 1376 after ferenty que years beinge in Frances But he being dead Union the Sixth was treated, and Soon after Two Popel han not to have been duely chosen was Cha west the Seventh created min thefe times the Genoueles, who for many years had lived under the Government of the Wife mi rebelled, and between them and the Vens tiens fucceeded a most important war about War bethe Island Tenedos, by which all Isely was tween Gedivided. In this war were Artillery fieft Penice. made use off lately found our by the Gira mans: and though the Geniuefe had once the better of it, wet the Venetiano came of Victors at last, and by the Popes intermif fion made peace. In the year 138 arofs a Schism in the Church, as we have faid be fore, wherein Jone Queen of Naples fided with the Schismatical Pope, whereupon Un han canfed Charles of Durazzo defeended of the blood Royal of Naples, to make an at of Naples to tempt upon her Crown, who coming took pell'd by away her Kingdom, and posses hanself Durates. of it, forced her to fee to France The King of France angry hereat, fends Leone man of Anjon into Italy to recover that Kingdom Anj for the Queen, drive the Pope out of Rome and feat the Anti-pope in the Chair: but Lewis in the heat of this enterprize dies, and Dec. his people defeated and broken, returned into Brance. In the mean time the Pope went to Naples, where he imprisoned nine Cardinals for having adhered to France and the Anti-

his Nephews Prince of Capus, and differn-

poper afterwards he grew angry with the King, because he would not make one of

bling an indifferency for it, he requested Necera for his dwelling, where afterwards he fortified himself, and prepared to de-

t

n

t

ar

th

th

W

to

the

A

tu

de

Be

Ch

Fol

Wa

tro

Phi

Par

oth

the

bei

der

time

of Naples

prive the King of his Kingdom, whereupon the King took the Field, and the Pope fled to Genova, where he put to death those Cardinals he had made prisoners. Hence he went to Rome, and to gain himself reputation, created eight and twenty Cardinals. About this time Charles King of Nas ples went to Hungary where he was made Charles King King, and foon after dyed, having left his wife with Ladiflam and Joan her children at Naples. About this time likewife John Galeazo Visconti having flain Barnaby his Uncle, and feifed the State of Milan, not fatisfied to have thus made himfelf Duke of all Lombardy, he aimed likewife at Tufcarry, but when he just thought to have fnatch'd the Dominion of it, and afterwards have made himself be crowned King of Italy he dyes. To Urban the Sixth fucceeded Boniface the Ninth, and Clement the Anti-pope dying at Avignion, Benedici the Thirteenth was fet up. There were in

these times great multitudes of Soldiers in

Italy , English , Germans and Britains , brought thither partly by those Princes,

who at fundry times had come into Italy,

and partly fent by the Popes when they re-

fided at Avignion. With these for a long

The Schilm in the Charch con

of

n-cd

ds

e-

ou ed

le

CE

-

li-

de

de

is

en

bil

is

ot

Ke

5

ve

116

1g

C-

ne

ne m

in

13

3,

y,

24

ng

ne

time the Italian Princes used to bandy one another, till at length flarted up Lewis of Conio, a native of Romagnia, who formed a company of Soldiers, and calling them S. Georges band, did in a short time by their & Georges Valour and Discipline take away the reputation of the strangers, and planted it among his Italians, of whom afterwards the Princes of Italy made use when they warred together. The Pope having some diffention with the Romans left the City, and went to refide at Seefi, where he fluid till the approaching Jubilee of 1400, at which time the Romans (that the Pope for 1400. their advantage might return to the City) were content to accept a new foreign Senafor of his choice and fending, and that he should fortifie himself in the Castle of S. Angelo, upon these conditions being returned to Rome, to enrich the Church, he popes redecrees that every one entring into a vacant turn to Benefice, should pay a years revenue to the Chamber. After the death of John Galea-20 Duke of Milan though he left two fons, John Maria Angelo and Philip, that estate was divided into fundry parts, and in the froubles that enfued John was flain, and The State of Philip for some time that up in the Rock ded. Pavia, whence by the fidelity and valour of the Governour he escaped. Amongst others that seized on the Cities possessed by their father was William de la Scala, who being a banished man had saved himself under the protection of Francis of Carrara

•

k

1

C i

1

P

b 2

8

C

ti ti

0

2

p

I

95

n

Ė

P

ti

W

re

W

C

7

Innoceent the Seventh Pope.

Gregory the Twelfth PopeLord of Padna, by whose help he gained the Territory of Verona, which he enjoyed but a short time, for by the orders of Francis he was poisoned, and the City Surprifed, whereupon the Vicentines who under the banners of the Visconti had lived fecure, fearing now the growing power of the Lords of Padna, yielded themselves up to the Venetians, in whose quarrel the Venetians waged war against him, and first took from him Verona and then Padua, Mean time dyed Pope Boniface, and Innocent the seventh was elected, whom the people of Rome befought to render up the Fortreffes, and restore their liberty, to which the Pope not confenting, they called unto their aid Ladislam King of Naples. Afterwards coming to an agreement the Pope returned to Kome, whence for fear of the people he had fled to Viterbo, where he made his Nephew Lewis, Earl of the Marca, dying afterwards, Gregory the Twelfth was elected, with condition to relign the Papacy, whenever the Antipope should renounce it; and for encouragement of the Cardinals, to make tryal if the Church Benedict the Anti-pope could be reunited. came to port Veneri, and Gregory to Luces, where many things were debated, but no thing concluded, so that the Cardinals of both parties forfook them, and as for the Popes, Bennet went into Spain, and Gregory to Rimini. Whilest the Cardinals with the favour of Baldaffare Coffa Cardinal and Legate

and invests Lewis of Anjon with that King-

dom, and together with the Venetians, Ge-

noneses and Florentines , and Baldaffare

Coffe the Legat, make war upon Ladiflaw.

and take from him Rome; but in the heat

of this war Alexander dyes, and Baldaffare

Coffa was created Pope, who took the name

ncrs ity

I.

in-

he red wer VCS

the firft lua. cent

co-OTnich nto

teropt the he

erca. Was apa-

rethe urch Squo ecca,

nos of che egon

n the Le gate

Rome, and there finds Lewis of Anjon come Popewith an army out of Province, and giving battle to Ladiflaus, overthrew him, but not able to purfue the victory for want of guides, the King in a short time rallyes, recruits, and retakes Rome, and the Pope fled to Bolognia, and Lewis into Province: And the Pope confulting how to lessen the power of Ladiflaus, brought it so about that Sigifmond King of Hungary was elected Em- Sigifmond perour, whom he encouraged to come into King of Italy, and had parly with him at Mantona, Emperour. where they agreed upon fummoning a geperal Council to reunite the Church, that it might be the better able to withstand the power of its enemies. There were at this

gate of Bolonia, call a Council at Pifa, Alexander where they create Alexander the Fifth Pope, the Fifth who presently excommunicates Ladislaw, Pope.

of John the three and twentieth : He leav- John the ing Bolonia where he was created, comes to twentieth

time three Popes, Gregory, Bennet and John, Three which made the Church feeble, and of no Popes.

was made choice of for affembling the countil of Council, contrary to the intentions of Pope Constance.

reputation. Constance a City of Germany

John; and though by the death of Ladiflaus flaw the occasion that made the Pope move for a Council were taken away, yet now having obliged himself he could not refuse to go, but having been some sew months at Constance, and too late perceiving his errour, he attempted to escape, for which he was cast into prison, and sorced to resign the Papacy, Gregory one of the Anti-popes likewise by publick instrument renounced it, and Benner the other Anti-pope refusing

Martin the Fifth created Pope by the Council.

to do so was condemned for a Heretick. At last forfaken by his Cardinals, he was likewife constrained to renounce; and the Council created Odo of the house of the Colonni Pope, who was afterwards called Martin the Fifth; and thus the Church became united, after having for forty years been divided among several Popes. Visconti was (as we faid before) during these troubles in the Rock of Pavia: but Fantino Cane dying, who, during the divifions of Lombardy had made himself Lord of Verfelli, Alexandria, Novarra and Tortona, and gathered together mighty riches, having no children he left his wife Beatrice his Heir, and willed his friends to procure, that the might marry Philip, by which match Thilip grown powerful, regains Milan, and all the state of Lombardy: and afterwards as a token of his gratitude for fuch great benefits (a trick usual with all Princes) he accuses his wife of Adultery, and puts her to death: however grown very potent, he begun to bethink himself of

conti regains the State of

making

h

2

b

h

n

tı

in

fe

k

fo

21

te

2

S

in

ve

W

fe

hs

7-

he

zn

es

ed

ng

At

6-

he

he

ed

e-

TS

ip

ng

ut

j-

rd

0-

9,

e,

h

i-

nd

TC

ill

Y,

of

ig

making war with Tufcany, and profecuting the defigns of his Father John Galeazzo. Ladislans, King of Naples, had at his death left Joan his Sifter, befides his Kingdom, a mighty Army under the command of the expertest Leaders of those times, among the principal of which was Sforza of Contigmuola, reputed in feats of Arms very valiant. The Queen to avoid the flander of having too much kindness to one Pandolfelle a young man she had brought up, took to Husband Facob della Marcia a Frenchman, of the Royal Line, upon condition that he should content himself to be called Prince of Tarantum, and leave to her both the Title and Government of the Kingdom; but the Soldiers as foon as he came to Naples, called him King, whereupon grew great variance, and at last war between Husband and Wife, and oft-times overcame they one another: but at the last the Queen remaining settled in her Estate, became an enemy to the Pope; whereupon Sforza to reduce her to necessity, and that the might throw her felf into the bosom of the Church, when she least, imagined it deserts her service; whereupon feeing her felf on a fudden difarmed, and knowing no other remedy, the has recourse for succour to Alphonso, King of Arragon and Sicily, and adopting him her fon, entertains for her General Braccio de Montone, a man of no less reputation in Arms than Sforza, and a fure enemy of the Pope, haveing usurped Perugia, and some other Territorics

fo

CTS

th

fig

im tai

gai

rel

ly

pro

w

Ar

WI

O

of

Ro

CI

T

Re

In

de

ba

pa

pa

ce

of

S

ca

G

ic

tories of the Churches. Peace afterwards enfued between her and the Pope, but King Alphonfo fearing left the thould treat him as the had done her Husband, began to make himself Master of the strong-holds. But the being cunning, prevented him, and fortified her felf in the Rock of Naples: Thus fuspitions arising between them, brought them at length to open Arms, and the Queen with Sforza's affistance, who was returned into her fervice overcomes Alphonfo, and drives him from Naples, and withal cancelling his adoption, adopts Lewis of Anjon, whence sprung up a new war between Braceio, who had embraced Alphonfo's gnarrel, and Sforza who favoured the Queen. In the pursuit of this war Sforza passing the River Pescara was drowned, so that the Queen was once more left defenceless, and had been driven out of the Kingdom, had not the been affifted by Pbillip Visconti, Duke of Milan, who forced Alphonfo to return to Arragon. But Braccio nothing daunted at Alphonfo's forfaking him, continues the war against the Queen, and having belieged Aquila, the Pope not judging Braccio's greatness at all convenient for the Church, takes into his pay Francis the fon of Sforza, who marches towards Braccio at Aquila, routs and kills him. Braccio left behind him his fon Odo, from whom the Pope took Perugia, and left him the State of Montone. But not long after he was flain fighting in Romania for the Florentines,

4.8

rds

ing

25

ke

But

or-

ius

ght

the

re-

260.

hal

of

be-

G's

the

Za

fo

ce-

ig-

lip

41-

10-

m, ind

g-

10 he

cio

eft

he

te

in

es.

60

fo thatof all remained of Braceio's Commanders Niebolas Piecinino had the most reputation. But because we are now coming to telate things neighbouring upon the times I defigned to treat of, and that what remains imports to nothing more than the war maintained by the Florentines and Venetians against Phillip Duke of Milan, which shall be related when we come to treat, particularly of the Florentine affairs. I shall here proceed no farther, only briefly fum up in what condition Italy with its Princes and The State of Armies flood, in those times we are now haly in these writing of. As for the prime Estates, times. Queen Foan the Second held the Kingdom of Naples; La Marca the Patrimony, and Romania, partly paid obedience to the Church, and in part were by its Vicars or Tyrants usurped, as Ferrara, Modena, and Reggio, by the Efti. Faenza by the Manfredi, Imola by the Alidoffi, and Furli by the Ordelaffi, Rimini and Pefaro, by the Malatefti, and Camerino by those of Varano. In Lombardy, part was subject to Duke Phillip, and part to the Venetians, for all those who held particular Territories in it were extinct, except the house of Gonzaga, who were Lords of Mantona. The Florentines were Lords of the most part of Tuscany, only Lucea and Siena lived under their own Laws. Lucea under the Guinigi, Siena free. The Genovese sometimes free, sometimes subject to the French Kings, or to the Visconti, lived unregarded, and accounted among F 4 the

cio

1231

He

th

to

01

G

ba

ha

·lig

T

ple

ev

A

gr

th

nc

of

no

pr

th

B

fa

tu

ce

in

(2

fa

in

the leffer Potentates : All these principal Potentates fought not with, nor employed any Armies of their own. Duke Phillip, thut up in his Chamber, & without fuffering himself to be seen by his own Ministers managed his Wars. The Venetians addicting themselves to acquisitions on the Land, stiffled that reputation had made them fo glorious upon the Sea, & following the Custom of other Italians, made war under the conduct of others. The Pope not becoming Armour, as being head of Religion, and Queen Joan being a woman, followed out of necessity what others did by election. The Florentines likewise submitted to the fame necessity, for having by their frequent divisions exhausted their Nobility; and that Common-wealth being fallen into the hands of men bred up in Merchandize, they followed the Orders and Fortunes of others. fo that the Arms of Italy were either in the hands of the leffer Princes, or of men of no Estate: for the leffer Princes not moved by Glory, but that they might live more richly and fecurely, undertook Commands. And the others having been trained up in Arms from their Youth, not knowing any other Trade fought by this way to advance themselves, either to Riches, Honour or Power. Amongst the most famous of these were Carmignuola, Francis Sforza, Nicholas Piecinino brought up under Braccio, Agnolo of Pergola , Laurence and Micheletto Attenduli, Tartaglia, Giaccopaccio,

pal

cd

ip,

ng

na-

ng Ni-

0-

m-

ng

nd

ut

n. he

nt

nd

he

ey

rs,

of

be

re n-

n

is

S,

d

eio, Ceccolino of Perugia, Nicholas of Tolentino, Guido Torello, Antonia of Ponte and Hera, and many other; with these were those Lords of whom I have above spoken, to whom were joyned the Barons of Rome, Orfini and Colonness, with other Lords and Gentlemen of the Kingdom, and of Lombardy, who making war, their subsistance had contracted a kind of League and intelligence together, and reduced it to a perfect Trade, with which temporifing as they pleased; it happened most an end, that whoever made war, both parties came off loofers. And in fine, they reduced it to fuch a degree of baseness, that any ordinary Captain that had but a dram of the Ancient Honour revived in him, would to the wonder of all Italy (who had so little Wit as to honour them) load them with fcorn and reproaches: of these floathful Princes, and these vile Arms must my History be full. Before I descend to which, it will be necesfary (as in the beginning I promised) to return to make a relation of the Original of Florence, that every one may plainly perceive and see the posture in which that City in those times stood, and by what means, (amidft fo many troubles, which for a thoufand years together befel in Italy) it came into that Estate and Condition.

THE

A to distance of the first of the A POR SERVICE STREET SERVICE war boat offer the state per per + 19 1100 2 1 3

6

vii tie

me

fic of

liv fer H m th

THE

s po medi

Florentine History

Written by

NICHOLAS MACHIAVEL.

BOOK II.



Mongst many other great and advantagious Orders and Rules cf ancient Commonwealths and Principalities, which are in these our times utterly extinct, was that, by

virtue of which, from time to time, many Cities and Towns were new founded or rebuilt: for nothing can be more becoming, the most excellent of Princes, or the best ordered of Commonwealths, nor more beneficial to any Province, than the building of Towns, where men may affemble and live together, either for conveniency of defence, or for encouragement of Trade and Husbandry: Which those people of old might the more easily do, because it was their custom to fend into Countries, whether conquered or waste, new Inhabitants, which

3

which they called Colonyes : For befide that by this course and order new Town were built, it also the better secured their Conquests, peopled the waste places, and by well diffributing inhabitants throughour the Provinces maintained them with greater facility, whence it followed that as men lived in more commodiousness, many Provinces the more and more they multiplyed and were still readier to offend, and abler to defend: Which Custom being at this day by the great fault and error of Princes and Common-wealths quite left off, the weaknels, and sometines ruine of Provinces enfues; for this Order alone is that, which makes Empires secure, and Countries, as I have faid maintain plentifully their Inhabitants: for that Colony placed by any Prince in a Country, newly poffeffed by him, is like a Watch-tower, and guard to keep the ref in obedience. Nor without this Order can any Province that is full inhabited subfift, nor preserve its Inhabitants in any orderly distribution, for all places are not alike healthful or apt for Generation, whence must succeed, that in one place Inhabitants will abound, and in another be deficient, and if there cannot be a way found to withdraw them from places, where they are too numerous, and plant them where they want, that Province will in a short time grow ruinous, for one part of it by reason of the scarcity of Inhabitants will be defart, and the other by having too many, must needs

n fu

Hi ti

ba

ca

m

of

u

of

fo

60

W

21

TO

di

th

ÓI

th

qı

k

ec

m

H

ti

di

d

0

ti

C

al

W

c II

ides

Wils

heir

and

Out

ater

men

Pro-

yed,

r to

day

and

ak-

en-

nich

as I

abi-

nce

like

reft

der

ub-

or-

ta-

nce

nts

nt,

th

are

ey

ne

on

rt,

uft

ds

needs grow poor, And becanfa Nature cannot Supply this defect, 'tis necessary that indufiry be added; for unhealthful Countries have often been made wholfome, hy a multitude of men flocking at one instant to inhabit them, for they by culture cleanse the earth, and by their fires purge the air, remedies which Nature cannot provide. A demonstration of which we have in the City of Venice, which feated in a Marish, and unhealthful place, by the great concourse of Inhabitants thither in an inftant, became found and healthful; Pifa, likewise by reafon of the malignity of the Air was never well replenished of Inhabitants, till Genous and its Sea-coasts were infested by the Saracens, which occasioned that those men driven from their Native Countries, fled thither in such shoals, as made that City at once populous and powerful: wherefore this order of fending Colonies failing, conquered Countries, are with more difficulty kept in obedience, waste Lands never planted, nor those that abound eased. Whereby many parts of the World (and especially Italy) are become in respect of ancient times, defart, all which has happened and does happen, because Princes have no true defire of Glory, nor Commonwealths, any Order that may deserve praise. But in old times, by reason of these Colonies, new Cities were oftentimes founded, or those The Origialready founded grew great. Among which pal of Flowas the City of Florence, which had its beginning A 2 2

Machiavels's Hiftory Book II. Bo

ginning from Fiefole, and its increase from cre Colonies. Most true it is, (as Dante and fo John Villani demonstrates) that the Citi- To zens of Fiefole (feeing their Town feated on the very fummity or top of the Mount tain) to the end their Markets might be the better frequented, and those who came thither with their Merchandize, be encouraged by conveniencie, had appointed their Market-place not upon the Hill, but on the Plain, between the foot of the Mountain and the River Arm: These Markets were, as I judge, the first occasion of raising any buildings there, the Merchants defirous, as I suppose, to have Ware-houses and shelter for their Commodities, first erecting them, and Time and Trade perfecting them, fo that at length they became substantial buildings. And afterwards when the Romans had overcome the Carthaginians, and thereby put Italy into a fecurity of not being disturbed by foreign Forces, they were extremely multiplyed. For men never put themselves to any streights or difficulties, unless when necessity constrains them to it, so that whereas the fear of war forced these willingly to live in strong and mountainous places, that fear once past, convenience and advantage draw's them more willingly down to inhabit places, more Domettick and easie. That fecurity therefore which by the reputation of the Roman name was foren throughout Italy, might eafily give an increale

Sec.

Wa

Sy

for the

Fr

aft

201

the

fer

w

adi

wi

be

civ

all

it

va

fre

of

fir

fez

ing

en

m

the

ho

en

F

alı

an

ici teit

be

me

ouneir

the

ain

ère,

any

35 lter

em, fo

ild-

ans

and not

hey

ne-

difins

wat

and

Br.

em

es ,

fe

pu-

cal in

afe

om crease to those habitations already begun. and fo as to reduce them into the form of a Town, which in the beginning of it was filed Arnina: There arose afterwards civil wars in Rome, first between Marius and Sylla, then betwixt Cefar and Pompey, and foon after between Cefars murderers, and those that fought to revenge his death: From Sylla therefore in the first place, and afterwards from those three Roman Citi- Sylls and zens, who after revenging Cefor divided the Triumthe Empire amongst them, were Colonies colonies to fent to Fiefole, all or the most part of Florence. which erected their habitations in the plain adjoining to the town already begun, which with this augmentation appeared now to be fo full of Buildings, men and all other civil order, that it might well be reekoned among the Cities of Italy. But from whence it derived the name of Florence, there are various opinions, fome will have it fo called Various of from Florinus one of the chiefest or Leaders bout the of the Colonies, others will not have it at name of Flofirst called Florentia, but Fluentia, because rence. leated upon the flood Arno, and summoning Pliny for a witness, who says the Fluentini are near to the Flood Arno, which may be falle, because Pliny's design was to thew where the Florentines were feated, not how they were called, and that word Fluentini is very probably corrupted, because Frontinus and Cornelius Tacitus who wrote almost in the times of Pliny call it Florentia, and the people Florentini, for even then in the

Machiavel's Hiftory Book II

the times of Tiberius it was governed according to the customs of the other Cities of Italy, and Tacitus relates there came Flor rentine Embassadors to the Emperour to be feech him, that the waters of the pook might not be opened upon their Countrey, nor is it reasonable to think a City in the same time should have two names, I therefore firmly believe it was always called Floreuce, by what ever occasion it came to be named for And fo likewise by what ever er at 2 F 504 occasion it took its original, it had certainly er with tol its birth under the Roman Empire, and in the times of the first Emperours began by Historians to be recorded; and when that Empire was afflicted by Barbatians, Florence likewise was by Totila King of the Oftrogoths destroyed, and after two hundred and fifty years rebuilt by Charlemain, from which time until the year of Christ, 1215, it ran the same fortune with those who had the command of Italy, the first of which were the descendants of Charlemain, then the Berengarii, and lastly the Emperours of Germany, as in our general discourse we have fet forth; nor could the Florentines in those times grow great, or act any thing worthy of memory, by reason of the potency of those to whose Empire they sub-Notwithstanding in the year 1010 on S. Romulus day, a great Holy-day among the Fiefolani, they took and razed Fiefole, which either they did by confent of the Emperour, or because in the time from the

Deftroyed by Totila , and rebuilt by Charle-

2600 5030.

CY

m

tir

the

ger by

Th

oth

biti

Flo

Bu.

th

II 20-

los

be

ook

ey,

the

re-

lo-

be

ver

nly

in

by

hat

10-

the

red

om

15.

ad

ich

en

of

we

tes

ng

0

b-

ar

ay

ed

of

m

he

the death of the one, to the election of the other more freedom might be used : but after that the Popes affurned more authoristy in Italy, and the power of the German Emperour decayed, all the Cities of that Province behaved and governed themselves with less reverence to their Pringe, infomuch that in the year 1080; and in the time of Harry the Third; Italy was reduced between him and the Church into a manifest division, notwithstanding all which the Florentines until the year 1225 kept themselves united, obeying the Conquefour, and feeking no farther Empire than their own fecurity. But as in our bodies the later infirmities happen, the more dangerous and mortal they are; to Florence by fo much the later it came to be infected with the Factions of Italy, by so much the more violently was it affected with them ! The occasion of the first division is very notable and much celebrated by Dante and The first Di other writers. I will therefore be very Florence. bief in the relation of it. There were in Florence among other potent families, the Mondelmonti's and "berti's, and nigh unto them lived the Amadei and Donatis There was in the family of the Donati a widow very rich, and who had a daughter of an excelling beauty, and most charming aspect, whom in her private thoughts, thad defigned to marry to Signior Buonblmonte, a young Gentleman, and lead of hat Family; this delign of hers, whether through

Machiavel's Hiftory Book IL

shrough negligence, or out of a belief it was yet time enough the had never difcovered to any, till it happened that a marriage was treated and agreed on between Meffer Buon delmonte, and a daughten of oncot the Amadei, at which this Lady was mightily d flurbed yet hoping that her daughter beauty might ere the marriage were for lemnized prevent it, feeing Meffer Buon delmonte coming, alone, towards her house the gets down to the door, her daughter following her, and as he paffed by ftopping him I am glad indeed (faid the) the your are now marrying, though I had no ferved this daughter of mine purpolely for you and therewithal pushing open the door let him fee her, the Gentleman startle at the beauty of the young Lady, which was indeed extraordinary; and confidering neither her blood nor fortune, was inferiour to here to whom he was contracted find to here to whom he was contracted kindled immediately in his heart fuch a fierce defire of enjoying her, that forgether of his word and plighted faith, nor thinking of the injury he did in breaking it, and dreading the fad confequences might attend on violated promiles, makes answer, find you, fays he, have reserved her for me, the time enough) if I should result her; and is without any fayther delay he married here. without any farther delay he married her As foon as this business was known, the man mily of the Amadei were filled with rage a indignation, and those of the Uberti bein Metro link and a

Lice freft Die

Hou

i

ti

to to de con-

the

tled high ring

cha

etful rink

ten

Goo

ne, I

is pu

ink

min to them in Aminy, joyned now Hewite With Ment, and affertibling together great mumbers of the Kindred they concluded facts in injury, was not to be be levenged with less then the death of Meffer Buondelmonie. And though fome of them did discourse and argue the mischiefs might enfue. Moferia Lamberta told them that he that deliberated many things never concluded any adding withat that known proverb, a thing once done bas got a bead. Whereapon they gave the conduct and tharge of this Murder to Majeha Lembert, Bratti Uberti, Lambertuceio Amadei, and Oderion Fifanti. Thefe on Eafter day in the Morning at the hour of the refuncedides of Amadei, Scithate Between the Old Sidge and Church of Sr. Stephen, and whilst Signior Bandelmonre passed the Ri-Signior Bandelmonre passed the Ri-Signior Bandelmonre ry upon a white Horle, carelelly and like flain. man that believed fuch injuries, as flighting Marriage vow's; Were early to be forgotten; was by them affaulted at the foot of the bridge under a Statue of Mary and flain. This affathriate divided the whole City , The City diand one part joyned with the Buondelmonti, and the other with the Uberti. And because flore Families were very powerful in many years together without being able to expel one the other, and their entrities and latred, though never pacified, were forme-Bb 2 times

ndi wall west from

Lies Sidget.

10 distal 99

duces she to nother

Gueller 23 Christien

(according to new accidents) fometime

00 10 60

ret

Ci

dei

the

the

the

WC

tha

and

tha

tur

fif

the

a fo

2 P

DU

div

for

for

tian

yea:

m

reig

Cap

all .

wei

Rol

they were quiet, and at other times enrage Vext with these troubles was Florence, till the time of Frederick the Second, who be cause he was likewise King of Naples, per swaded himself that he might augment power over the Church : and to establish his Authority the better in Tuscany, he fa Which provoured the Uberti and their followers, who strengthened by his countenance drove ou the Buondelmonti. And thus our City (all Italy had for sometime before been) wa divided into Guelfes and Gbibellines. No do I think it impertinent to fet down the Families, that were followers of one and the other Faction: Those who adhered to the Guelfes were. The Buondelmonti, Nerli, Ro Frescobaldi, Gherardini, Foraboschi, Bagar Gindalotti, Sachetti, Manieri, Lucardefi, Ch aramonti, Campiobbefi, Cavalcanti, Giana nati , Gianfigliazzi, Scali, Guallerotti, portuni, Boftichi, Tornaquinci, Vecchierri, I fingbi, Ariguccii, Agli, Sitii, Adimari, Bifd mini, Donati, Pazzi, Della Bella, Ardinge Theobaldi and Cerchi. Those who fide with the Ghibellines, were the Ubersi, Ma nelli, Ubriachi, Fifanti, Amadei, Infangan Malefpini, Scholari, Gindi, Galli, Caprard

Lamberti, Soldameri, Cipriani, Toschi, Annen

Palmerini, Migliorelli, Pigli, Barrucci, Cattan Agolanti , Brunelleschi, Caponsachi, Elase

Abbati , Tedaldmi, Guiachi and Galigari

And moreover, both to one fide and the

fection of Guelfes and Gbibellines.

duces the

How the feveral Families fided.

other

other of these Noble Families, many Familes of the Commons joyned themselves. to that this peftilent division infected the whole City. The Guelfes thus driven out, The Guelfes retreated into the Vale of Arno, above the expelled City, where they had many firong Fortreffes, the Vale of which in the best manner they could they draw. defended against the power and force of . their Enemies. But Frederick dying, those who were the calm and indifferent men in the City, and who had most credit with the people, bethought themselves that it The City rewould be much better to reunite this City, united than by fomenting their divisions raine it, and fo effectually brought matters about that, the Guelfer (waving all injuries) returned and the Ghibellines (laying afide all fulpitions) received them. And thus united, And form they began to think it high time to fettle orders for a form of liberty, and put themselves into making pofture of defence before the next Empe- Free Seate four gained any power: Whereupon they divided the City into fix Parts, and chose for their Government twelve Citizens, two for every fixth part, which they called Antioni, or Aldermen, and changed every year. And to remove all occasions of cavil in giving judgement, they elected two forrign Judges, one of whom they stiled the Captain of the people, and the other the Poleftà or Mayor, who were to determine . all causes happening among the Citizens, as well givil as criminal, And because no Rule nor Government can be fafe or fettled till

Book II

he lacker

Their Mill- till a defence be provided for it, they elle bliffed twenty Colours for the City, an threefcore and fixteen for the Country, un der which they lifted all the Youth, giving first orders that every one should remi ready armed to his Colours upon any funmons from his Captain, or the Alderman And they varied their Colours according to their Arms, for one fort of Enfign had the Cross-bows, and the Targets another, and every year at Whitfontide they gave the E figns to new men and chose, and gave Command to new Heads or Chieftains of the whole Militia. And to give more majely to their Army, and knowledge to every one, whither, if repulled in battle, the might repair for refuge, and being rallyed again make head against the Enemy, the had a large Chariot drawn with two Oxes covered with red, on the top of which

was a white and red Banner planted. And to give yet farther. Magnificence and glon

to their Arms, they had a Bell called Man tinella, which continually founded a month before they drew out their Forces, to give warning to the finemies to prepare themfelves for their defence. So much gallantry had men in those days, that wheres

now the affaulting an enemy by furprife, is accounted a prudent and generous act, the thought nothing more vile and reproachful

This bell they likewife carryed with the Army, by which they let their Watches, and gave Signals to their Sentinels. Alpon

Their Standard.

Their bravery.

thele

A Charles

Š

thele Civil and Military Conflictutions did the Florentine's found their liberty, nor can it be imagined to what authority and power Florence in a short time attained, not only becoming Head of Tufcany, but accounted among the chief Cities of Italy, and had possibly risen to a vaster height, had not fresh and frequent divisions still afflicted it. Under this Government lived the Flo- Their first remines ten years, in which time they forced the Piftolefi, Aretini and Sanefi, to make peace with them, and raising their Camp from before Siens took Volterra, difmantled leveral Cities, and carried away the Inhabitants to Florence. All which enterprizes were made by counsel of the Guelphes, who were able to do much more then the Ghibellines, as well because these last were hated by the people for their proud carriage, when in Frederick's time they governed, as because the others sided with the Church, which was (more then the Emperour) then beloved; for with the help of the Church they hoped to maintain their liberty, and under the Emperour they feared to lofe it: Yet the Ghibelines, seeing their Authority The Ghibel-decay could not be quiet, but sought op-lines con-trive against portunities to refume the rule over the the State. State; which they thought was put into their hands, when they law Manfred, fon of Frederick become Lord of the Kingdom of Naples, and that he had much battered the power of the Church. Wherefore they held private intelligence with him

14

The Uberti

to regain their own authority, but could not carry things to close, but that their practices were discovered to the Antiani; Whereupon they cited the Uberti, who not only refused to obey, but taking Arms fortified themselves in their Houses. At which the people enraged took Arms, and with the help of the Guelphes made them retreat out of Florence, and with the whole Ghis belline party take shelter in Siena. From whence they fent for aid to Manfred, King of Naples, and by the industry of Meffe Farniata of the Uberti, the Guelphes were by the forces of that King defeated near the River Arbia, with fo dreadful a flaughter, that those who escaped from this rout fled not to Florence (judging their own City Manfred had loft) but to Lucca for refuge, made Count Giordano General of the Army, he fent to aid the Ghibelines, a man in thole times of great reputation in Arms. He af-

ter the Victory goes with the Ghibellines to

Florence, and reduced the City absolutely under the obedience of Manfred, annulling

the Magistracy, and every other Order in which there appeared the least form of liberty; which injury imprudently executed, was entertained with the Universal hate of the people, so that from being enemies to the Ghibellines, they were now become utter abhorrers of them, from whence in time their ruine ensued: And the necessity of the Kingdom, calling Count Giordan back to Naples, he left the Count Gnido Novello,

The State overturned by help of Manfred King of Naples.

Lord

th

G

F

21

T

b

h

n

fr

t

t

B

bluc

pra

mi,

not

for-

hich

the

reat

Gbi

rom

ing

effer

VCIE

the

ter,

fled

ity

had

my,

ofe

af-

to

ely

ing

in

li-

ed,

of

to

It-

ne he to

6,

rd

Lord of Casentino, Vicar Royal in Florence. The rand He calls a Council of Ghibellines at Empoli, de where it was generally concluded that to preserve the power of the Ghibelline party in Italy, it was necessary to raze Florence, as the only City, likely (having its people all Guelfes.) to recover strength to the Church party. This cruel sentence given against to noble a City, was neither by Citizen nor Opposed by Friend (fave only Meffer Farnists of the Uberi, Uberti) opposed, who openly, and without any Palliation defended it, telling them, That he would never with fo much pains have run through so many perils, had he had other thoughts than to have lived in his native Country, and that he was so far now from quitting what he had so eagerly sought after, or refusing what Fortune had thrown upon him, that he would become (rather than submit to it) a fiercer Enemy to those that should defign it, than he had ever been to the Guelphes; and if any one afraid of his Country fought its ruine, he doubted not to defend it with the same valour, wherewith he had chased out the Guelphes: Signior Farniata was a man of great courage experienced in War, head of the Gbibellines, and much esteemed by Manfred, fo that his authority ended the dispute, and they began to consult of other ways, how to preferve the power in themselves. The Guelphes who fled to Lucea, warned by the Lucchefes fearful of the Earls threats, went to Belonia, whence by the Guelphes of Par-

ma,

ca, go to af. fift those at Parma,

The Guelph me they were invited against the Ghibet fied to Line, and by their valour having overcome all their enemies, had their Estates given them: fo that mounted to riches and honour, and hearing that Pope Clement had called in Charles of Anjon to take away the

Kingdom from Manfred, they fent Ambaffadors to the Pope to offer him their alfiftance. And the Pope not only received them, but gave them his own Banner, which the Guelphs ever fince bore in their

Arms, and are the fame fill used in Flo-Banners.

rence. Manfred was foon after by Charles deprived of his Kingdom and flain; notice of which being arrived among the Guelphi

at Florence, their party grew brisker, and the hands of the Gbibellines were weakned. Whereupon they, who together with Earl

Guido, governed Florence, judged it requifite by some good offices to gain that peo-ple, they before had incensed with so many

injuries, bur those remedies (which had they been applyed in due time and order, might have helped, now when coming from necel-

fity) wrought not any good effect, but only hastned their ruine. Yet thinking to The State of gain the peoples friendship, and draw them

to their party, they reffored to them part of those Honours, and that Authority they

had taken from them, and chose thirty fix of the Commons of the City, who with two of the Nobles called from Bolognia

they appointed to reform the Government of the City. These as soon as they met, di-

vided

And the Pope gives them his

Florence in

part re-

ftored.

Π.

et:

me

èn

10-

ad

afaf-

cd

r,

eir

10-

les

ice

obs

the

ed.

arl

ui-

0-

ny

ey.

ht

ef-

n

to

m

irt

ey ix th

4 of

h-

ed

vided the City into Trades, and over every Trade appointed a Magistrate; who was to administer Justice to those under his charge, To every one of these companies they appointed a Banner, that under that the might parade when ever there was occaffon of fervice; these at first were twelve Companies, feven greater and five less, afterwards the less came to be fourteen, fo that they were in all, as they are at prefent. twenty one. The thirty fix Reformers proceeding to other matters for the common good, Earl Guido to encourage and pay his Soldiers, deligned a Tax to be laid on the Citizens: in which he found fo much difficulty, and averfenes in the people, that he durft not attempt by force to levy what was already impuled. And thinking now the Government loft, he that himself up with the Chiefs of the Gbibellines, and determined to take forceably from the people, what too imprudently he had granted them : And as they were getting their forces into order, the thirty fix being affembled, and the Alarum being given . whereat they affrightned, retired to their houses, and presently the Banners of the Companies were spread, and many armed men gathered about them. And hearing how Earl Guide, with his party were at St. Johns, Earl Guide beaten out they rendevouzed at the Holy Trinity, and of Florence. made Jobie Soldanieri their Leader. The Earl on the other fide, hearing where the people were advanced to fight them : Nor

did

did the people than the skirmith, but encountred their enemies near the place now called the Lodge of the Tornaquinei, where the Earl was repulfed with the flaughter of many of his men, and thereupon so daunted, that he began to fear least the enemy should by night affail him, and finding his men beaten and out of order kill him. And so strongly did this imagination work in him, that without feeking any other remedy, he determined rather to fave himself by flight than fight, and contrary to the advice of the heads of that Faction, goes with all his people to Prate: but affoon (as finding himself in a secure place) he had cashiered his fear, he saw his error, and would fain have mended it the next morning and at break of day returns with all his people to Florence, to enter that City by force, which his cowardise had deserted: but his defigns failed him, for that people, who might perhaps have found it a hard matter to have forced him thence, with ease now kept him out; so that with grief and shame he goes to Cafentino, and the Ghibellines returned to their Villages. The people thus remaining conquerous by the encouragement of those who loved the common good, they next confulted the reunion of the City, and recalled all the Citizens as well Guelfs as Ghibellines which had been expelled: thus returned the Guelfs four years after there being driven out, and the Gbibellines were also pardoned their late

The City once more reunited.

II.

n-

we

ere

of

nt-

ny

his

m.

rk

e-9

elf

d-

es

25

d

d

1+

is

y

:

1

T

late fresh injury, and restored to their Countrey, but were fill violently hated both by the Guelfs, and the people, for those could not cancel the remembrance of their Banishment, and these too well kept in memory their tyranny, whileft they lived under their Government: fo that neither one nor the other could have quiet minds And whilest Florence was in this wavering condition, a rumour was spread abroad that Conradine Nephew of Manfred was coming with an Army out of Germany to the conquest of Naples, whereupon the Gbibelines began to swell with hopes they might once more regain their authority; and the Guelfs consulted how to secure themselves from their enemies, and sent to Charles for aids to defend themselves from charles and Conradine in his passage; the coming of the Gooff. these forces from Charles made the Guelfs become insolent, and so affrighted the Gbibellines, that two days before their arrival, without flaying to be driven out they fled. The Ghibellines gone, the Guelfs made new Ther make orders for the Government of the City, new rules of and chose twelve heads, which should offi- in Flor ciate in the magistracy for two months, whom they called not Aldermen, but Goodmen; next to them was a Council of eighty Citizens, which they called the Credenza, and after them one hundred and eighty Commons, thirty for every division, and these together with the Credenza, and the the twelve Good-men they called the Gene-

by kde vine

ral Council. They fetled befides another Council of one hundred and twenty City zens. Nobles and Commons, by which they gave perfection to all things debated in the other Council , and which disposed of Offices in the Common wealth ; this Government thus established, the faction of the Guelfs further fortified themselves with Magistrates and other Officers that they might with more authority defend themselves against the Ghibelines, whose goods they divided into three parts, the one of which they affigued to the publick! the next to the Magiltrates of the Divisions, called Captains, and the third to the Guelfi in recompense of the lones they had fur frained: The Pope likewife to uphold the faction of the Guelfs in Tufcany, makes King Charles Imperial Vicar of Tufcany Thus the Florentines by virtue of this new Government, maintaining their reputation within, by Laws, and without, by Arms, In the imerim the Pope dyes, and after a Tiong difpate which lafted two years, Pope Gregory the Tenen was elected, who have ving long refided in Syria, and being there at the time of his Election, unacquainted with the humours of the Factions did not look upon the Guelfs with that es freem his predectifors had done , and therefore being come to Florence in his palfage to France, thought it the office of a

> good Paltor to reunite the City, and fo far contributed to it, that the Florenines were

The Guelfs divide the goods.

Pope Gregonot fo Florentines.

to color was

content

ich

tiu

ck

ed

on

es

Aci

Heb

fe'

he

k!

13.

193

1

he

ies

ty.

w

on

15

2

pe

40

re

d

of

63

nd

F

1

re

nt

content that the Syndicks of Commissiones of the Ghibelines should be admittell to mediate their return is and though the matter was concluded upon, yet the Gbibellius were so terried that they durit not come home; the fault of all which the Populaid ipon the City, and in angere scommunirates them, under which consumacy they and insocrete lay all the life of that Pope, but after his the Fifth ab death they were by Innocent the Fifth abfolved. Nicolas the Third of the house of Orfini was next exalted to the papers and because the Popes were always reasons of those who grew potent in Italy 6 fo that though by the Churches means and favour they arrived to their greatness, yet they always fought to humble and abafe them? thence forung the original of those many turnules and variety of troubles that erifued for the fear of one grown firing, made the Church interpose a weaker, and as foon as he was railed to power, fearing and feared, they frove again to level him this made one Pope Snatsb the Kingdom from Manfred, and give it to Charles, and this made another, grown jealous of him, feek his ruine, for now Nicolas the third moved by this miltruftful humour, by the Empeigurs means caused Charles to be removed KingCharles from the Government of Infeaty; and in from the to that Province under the Imperial Com- of Tascanti million was fent Latinus the Popes Legate, and the Florence was at this time in a very deplora- popes Legate fent ble wondition, for the Nobility of the Guelf thither. Faction

4.00

Government.

removed

Faction were grown infolent, braving and fearless of the Magistracy, so that every day murthers and other violences were committed, and the offenders escaped unpunished, being still favoured by forme one of the Nobility; to bridle these inconveniences and riots, the heads of the people thought it convenient to call home those were fled, which gave opportunity to the Legate to reunite the City, and the Ghibellines returned, and instead of the twelve Governours they made fourteen, of each party feven, who were to rule a year, and be elected by the Pope. Florence Submitted two years to this Government, till Pope Martin a Frenchman held the chair, who reftored King Charles to all that authority Nicolis had deprived him off; whereupon of a fudden the Factions were again revived in Infeany, for the Florentines fook Aims against the Emperours Governour, and as well to deprive the Ghibellines of the Government, as to bridle the Nobility or dained a new order of Government : it was now in the year 1282, and the City

Companies, fince Magistrates were assigned New fort of them, and banners given them, were grown Government into great repute, whereupon by their own authority they ordained that instead of the fourteen, there should be three created, under the name of Priors, who should have the Government of the Republique for two months, and might be chosen ou of the Gentlemen, or Commons, provided they vzere

·f

nd

TY

n-

në

è-

ole

Se

he

i-

ve

ch

nd

ed

pe

10

マーと出す

rit y d n

e

e

e

arolamin C

ne salderiff

Commods.

prioro tail

were Merchants or Tradefinen o reducing afterwards the first Magistrates to fix the out of every Ward there mighe the one which order was continued till the year 1342, that the City was reduced into ghare ters and the Priors made nine though in that interval of time by reason of fundry accidents they fometimes made twelve. This Magistracy occasioned (as in time will appear) the ruine of the Nobility, who were by the people upon various occasions first excluded and afterwards Without any manner of respect oppressed: to which the Nobles themselves at fifst contributed, by not foorning to be united to the people, and each party too eagerly covering to match the Government one from the other, they all loft it. They appointed this Magistrace a palace for their continual relidence if having formerly been the custom for the Magistrates and Councils to affemble in the Churches, they likewife honoured them with Sergeants and other necessary Miniflers, and though at first they only called them Priors, yet for the greaten Magnificence they added afterwards the file of Lords, terming them the Signer The Florentines were now for a while quiet at home, during which they made war with the Aretini, because they had chased out times war the Guelfe, and in Campaldino they happily with the Aovercame them. And the City increasing retini; in men and riches, they thought fit likewife And colores. to enlarge their walls, and brought them their walls.

with mil. m.

Andrew A

burry.

into

m

óf

in

TC

th

ba

ŔĨ

th

Ē

Ы

to

TE

íè

uj

tc

C

fc

th

T

f

2

C

a

n

t

P

Diffentions between Nobles and Commons.

into the compais they now are, for at first its Diameter was only that space between the old Bridge and S. Lawrence : War with out and peace within had almost extinguish'd the Factions of Ghibelines and Guelfa; only those humours (naturally ineident to all Cities) between the Nobility and the people were here inflamed, for the people being defirous to live according to Law, and the Nobles ambitious of Command, it is not possible they can ever agree together. This humour whilest the Ghibellines kept them in awe was not discovered, but as foon as they were tamed, it broke violently forth, and every day some of the people were injured, and the Laws and Magistrates were not powerful enough to vindicate them, for every Nobleman with his Kindred Friends and Followers defended himself from the power of the Priors and Captains: the Heads therefore of the Companies defirous to remedy this inconvenience, made provision that every Signory at the entrance into their Office, should create a * Galfoniere of Juffice out of the Commons, who should be ready with his Standard and men at Arms to affift Justice whenever by the Priors or Captains he was called. the first chosen was Ubaldo Ruffeli, he brought forth the Standard, and pull'd down the house of Galetti, because one of that Family had kill'd a Commoner in France, 'twas easie for the companies of Tradefinen to make this order, for the enmities

* The word figulfies a Standardbearer, RU

first

cen

ithe

tin-

and

in-

lity

the

to

m.

100

bi-

er-

ke

the

13-

in-

his

ed

nd

m-

-in

at

ite

n-

nn-

d,

ne

d

10

n

E

mities among the Nobles were awake, and they flept, never thinking of the provision made against them, till they saw the feverity of this Execution, which stroke a terrour into them at first, but yet foon after they returned to their infolencies, for forme of them being always of the Lords Priors, they had opportunities of hindring the Gonfaloniere from doing his Office; and belides that the accuser wanting Tellimbry could and none durff bear witness against the Nobles, fo that in a fhort time Florence fell into the same disorders, and the people still received from the great men the fame injuries; for the Judgment was gentle, and the fentence flowly or never executed: whereupon the people not knowing what course to take, Gianodella Bella of most noble blood. but a lover of the liberty of the City, encouraged the heads of the companies to reform the Government, and by his advice they ordained that the Gonfaloniere should refide with the Priors, and have four thonfand men under his command; they likewise incapacitated all the Nobles of fitting Severe Laws among the Lords Priors, bound all the ac Nobility. complices and acceffaries of the crime in the same punishtnehts with the principal, and made publick fame sufficient Testimony to give Judgment : by these Laws which they called the Ordinances of Justice, the people gained a mighty reputation, and Giano della Bella as great hatred, for the Nobles bore him not a little ill will, as the dea Cca firover

stroyer of their power, and the rich Citizens envied him, as thinking he had too much authority, which upon the first occasion was fully demonstrated. It happened that a Commoner was in a scuffle flain. wherein many Nobles were together, and because Messer Corfo Donati who was amongst them appeared the boldeft, the crime was attributed to him: wherefore the Captain of the people took him, but however matters went, either that Corfo was not guilty. or that the Captain durst not condemn him, acquitted he was, which acquitment highly displeased the people, so that taking Arms, they run to Giana della Bella's house and befought him he would be a means to fee those Laws observed, which himself had invented; Giano who defired that Corto thould be punished never made them lay down their Arms, as many thought he ought to have done, but advised them to go to the Signory to make their complaint, and defire right to be done, upon which the people enraged (judging themselves wronged by the Captain, and flighted by Giano) went not to the Signory, but to the Captains Palace, and took and fack'd it. which action mightily displeased the Citizens, and those who sought the ruine of Giato, laid all the fault upon him, and fo among the Lords that composed the succeeding Signory, there happening some that were his enemies, he was accused to the Captain as a mover of the people to infurrections and

a

èd

PX ch

If

ay he

te

nt,

ch

CS

by

he

it,

PE TE BE

ne,

and whilest his cause was debating, the people armed themselves, offering to defend him against his enemies the Lords; Giano would not make trial of these popular fayours, nor commit his life to the Magistracy, for he knew the malice of one, and the inconstancy of the other; so that to take away from his enemies an opportunity of injuring him, and from his friends of difobliging their Countrey, he determined to depart, and to give place to envy, and fo to free the Citizens of the fears they had of him, and leaving that City, which with fo much trouble and hazard he had freed from the flavery of the great men, he cast himself into voluntary exile. After his departure the Nobility began to conceive hopes of recovering their Dignity, and judging their misfortune to have accrewed by their Divisions, uniting themselves, sent two of their number to the Signory, whom they believed favoured them, to defire them to be content to moderate in some measure the leverity of fome Laws made against them; which demand, affoon as it was discovered, stirred up the minds of the people, for they were doubtful least the Lords should grant their request, and thus between the defire of the Nobles, and suspicion of the people, arms were on both fides taken up : The Nobility and Comthe Nobles made head in three places, at S. mons take John, in the new Market, and in the place Arms. called Mozzi, and under three Leaders, Meffer Forese Adimari, Meffer Vanni de Mozzi

c

4

66

te

m

CC

CC

to

th

W

pe

th

in

H

O

in

W

Mozzi and Meffer Geri Spini, and the people in mighty numbers flock'd to their Colours, under the palace of the Lords Priors, who then dwelt near the Church of Proculus: and because the people had some suspicion of the Signory, they deputed fix Citizens to govern with them: whileft both parties thus flood prepared for the skirmish, fome as well of the people, as of the Nobles, together with some religious men of great repute went between them to mediate a pacification, putting the Nobles in mind, That the honours they were deprived of and the Laws made against them were occasioned by their own pride, and haughty " carriage, and that now to take Arms to " repeal by force, what their own discords and ill managements had caused to bee-" nacted against them, could produce no " other effect than the ruine of their Coun-" trey, and the making their own condition worse, that the people were superiour to " them both in numbers, hatred and riches, and that that Nobility by which they " thought themselves so far advanced above others, was but an empty name, when men came to blows, for the Noblemans fword cut no deeper than the Commons, nor could Titles defend them a gainst multitudes. On the other fide they represented to the people, "That it was not convenient to pursue victories to " extremes, nor wildom to force men to " despair, for he who hopes no good, fears

A pacification endeayoured.

4 10

П

-05

cit

rds

of

mé

fix

oth

ifh,

les,

cat

pa-

nd,

of,

OC-

hty

to

rds

ee-

no

un-

ion

to

ics,

ney

2-

ne,

ole-

m-

ide

it

to

to

215

UO

no ill. That they ought to confider " that the Nobility were the men, who in times of war had honoured that City. " and therefore it was not just to perfecute them with so much hatred; and as the " Nobles had easily condescended to be deprived of enjoying the supreme Magistracy, but could not endure it thould be in " every ones power to drive them at plea-" fure out of their Countrey, it was highly " convenient to mitigate fomething of that unlimited feverity, and by fuch a good Office make them lay down their 4 Arms: that it was but a vain prefum-" ption to attempt the fray in confidence of " their numbers, fince it had been often "feen the many had been overcome by the " few. The people were in many minds, fome would needs fight as a thing that must one day be done, and therefore it was better to do it now, than to flay till their enemies were stronger, alleadging that if they could believe that the mitigation of the Laws could content the Nobles, it would do well to mitigate them, but their pride was fuch; that they would never be at quiet till they were forced to it: others wifer and more peaceably inclined, were of opinion that the moderating of the Laws was of no great importance, but coming to a bickering of utmost concern to both, infomuch that their opinion prevailed, and it was enacted that in acculations against Noblemen, proof by witnesses was necessary: laying herenpon CC 4

m

G

in

c

Arms laid down, but jealoufies continue. down their arms both parties fill remained full of suspicion, and fortified themselves with Caffles and Arms; and the people reformed the Government, reducing it to leffer number; out of an opinion they had that those Lords were favourers of the Nobility, the chief of those remained were Mancing, Magalotti, Altoniti, Peruzzi and Ceretaji, The State thus fetled, for the greater magnificence and fecurity of the Cords, in the year 1208 they founded their palace, and made a Court of the house formerly belonging to the Uberti. At the fame time likewise they began to build the publick prilons, all which buildings were in few years finished; nor ever was the City in a more magnificent or happy condition than now, abounding in men, buildings and reputation, the trained bands of the City being thirty thousand, and those of the Country feventy thousand; all Tufcam partly as Subjects, partly as friends obeyed them. And though between the Nobles and the people there fill remained fome grudge and jealoutie, it never produced any malignant effects, but they lived in peace and union, which happy tranquility had it not been diffurbed by new empities within need have doubted nothing from adroad; for the City stood then upon such terms as made it fearless either of the Emperour or its own Exiles, and might we power with any other State in Italy: but those mischiefs which could not be done from abroad were

2 0 0

ad

0-TC

nd

he

he

cil

les

hè

hë

rë

ity

Oñ

85

of Wed

les

me

ný

ice

it

m

dį

おの山田はある

were by intestine diffentions executed. There were in Phorence two Families, the New Cerebi and the Donati, both of them in Floresce, Nobility, Riches, and men very powerful between these, being Neighbours, some difguils had happened, but not to great as to bring them to extremities, and possibly Theoceas they might have been quite extinguished, on from had not the ill humours by other accidents Piplia. been augmented, Among the Prime Families of Pistoia was that of the Cancellieri, it happened that Lori, Son of William; and Geri, Son of Bertaccio, all of that Family being at play fell to words; and paffing farther, Geri happened to received a flight wound, which accident much displeased Meffer William, who imagining by humility to remove the scandal increased it: For he commanded his Son to go to the Father of the wounded Gentleman, and ask him pardon; Lori obeys his Father. But this act of fo much humanity Iweetned not at all the bitter mind of Bertacoio, but caufing his fervants to lay hold en Lori, to add the more contempt to the action, he caused his hand to be cut off upon a Dreffer: withal adding, Ga back to thy Father, and tell him that wounds are to be falved with feel, and not with words. This barbarous cruelty fo much enraged Meffer William, that he made all his friends take arms to revenge it, and Bertaccie armed likewife to defend himfelf; and not only that Family, but the whole

City

f

The great arrel of

Persuca

Profess

City of Piftoia was divided. And because the Cancellieri were descended of Signior Cancelieri, who had two wives, whereof one was named Biancha (which fignifies White) those descended of her called themselves Bianchi, and the other to take a name contrary to that, called themselves Neri (which signifies Black.) There happened many fatal bickerings between them with great flaughter of meni men, and ruine of houses, and not finding a way to reconciliation among themselves, weary of doing mischief, and desirous to put an end to their discords or by dividing others with them increase them they came to Florence, and the Neri having had acquaintance with the Donati, were by them favoured; whereupon the Bianchi, that they might have a powerful prop to uphold them against the Donati, had recourse to Mr. Veri d' Cerebi, a man no way, nor in any quality inferiour The humour thus to Meffer Corfo Donati. brought from Piffaia, revived and increased the ancient hatred between the Cerchi & Do mati, which was already so apparent, that the Lords Friors, and many good Citizens were every minute in doubt left they should come to arms, & with themselves divide the whole City. They therefore addressed themselves to the Pope, befeeching him by his authority to apply that remedy, to these growing humours, which it was beyond their power to do: the Pope fends for Meffer Veri, and charges him to make peace with the Donati, at which he feems much to wonder, telling him

ofe bi,

to

ics

Cr.

of

es,

ut ers

ce

1,

VC

he

i,

ur

d d

le

0

him that he had no enmity with them, and because making peace presupposes a war. he did not understand how peace was to be made, fince there was no war between them. Veri therefore returning from Rome without any other conclusion, the humours fwell'd to fuch a height, that they were ready upon any flight occasion, as soon afterwards they did to break out. It was in the month of May when on Holy-days they use publick sports, and Dancing in the Streets of Florence, and some young Gentlemen, as well of the Donati as their friends. being on horse-back, stood to see some women dance near the Place of the holy Trinity, whither foon after came fome of the Cerebi, accompanied with many other Gentlemen, and not knowing the Donati that were before them, but defirous to fee the fport fpurr'd up their Horses amongst them, and a little crouded upon them, at which the Donati thinking themselves affronted drew their Iwords, and the Cerchi bravely answered them, and after many wounds given, and taken on both fides, they parted. This diforder was of every fad confequence Florence at for the whole City, as well people as Nobi-vided into lity was divided, and the parties took the Neri. names of Bianebi and Neri: The heads of the Bianchi were the Cerebi, and to them adhered the Adimari, the Abbati, part of the Tofinghi, Bardi, Roffi, Frescobaldi, Nerli, and Mannelli : All the Mozzi, Scali, Gerrardini, Cavalcanti , Malefpini, Boftichi, Gian-

to

bo Ta

TH C

6

ar to

te

donati Vecebieti and Arriguezzi. To theis many Families of the people, and all the Ghibellines in Florence adhered , fo that for the mighty number that followed them they had, as it were, the whole Government of the City. The Donato on the other fide were Chiefs of the Nori, and with them joyned that part of the abovementioned Families which followed not the Bianchi, and belides all the Pazzi, Bisdomini, Manieri , Baguefe, Tornaquinci , Spini, Buondel menti Gianfigliazzi, Bruneelleschi, nor did this contagion only infect the City, but the whole Country likewife was divided, Whereupon the Captains of the Divisions. and whoever was a lover of the Guelphn and the republick began to fear left this new division should, together with the ruine of the City, revive the power of the Ghibet. lines, and fent again to Pope Boniface to confult of a remedy, unless he would have that City, which had always been the Buckler of the Church, ruined or turned Ghibelline. Whereupon the Pope fends Matthew d' Aquasparta, Cardinal Portuefe, Legat to Florence, who because he found the Bianchi high and flomackful, for that they being the greater party food least in aw, he goes in anger from Florence, and excommunicates it; fo that he left the City in a greater confusion than it was before his coming thither, And now all men having heart-burnings in their brefts : It happened that at a Funeral where there were

The Pope befought to finde a remedy to compose these bloody differtions. DAY WE

A B 4

ı, 4

id ne de s, n wolf de

o was disposed

n

¥

9 6

c

were a great many of the Cerabi and Donatio hey came to words, and thence to blows. ough this happened to be only a turnult, ind foon appealed: But every one being returned to their houses, the Cerebi resolved to affault the Donati, and with great numbers went to fearch them out; but by the valour of Meffer Corfo they were repulled. and many of the people wounded; the City was all in Arms; the Lords and the Laws were trampled on by the fury of the Stronger; the wifelt and best Citizens lived in jealousie and fear; the Donati on their part feared the most, because they could do the least; therefore to provide the best they could for themselves, Meller Corfo alfembling with the other Heads of the Next and the Captains of the Divisions agreed to request of the Pope, that one of the Blood-Royal might be fent to reform Florence, hoping by that means to overcome the Bianobi. This affembly and debate was told to the Priors, and by the adverse party, aggravated as a conspiracy against the liberty of the City; and both parts being in Arms, the Signery (of whose number Dante then was one) by his countel and prudence took heart, and armed the people, to whom many out of the Country joyning. they at length forced the Heads of both parties to lay down Arms, and confined Meffer Corfa Donati, and many that took part with the Neri: and to show that they were not partial in judgement, they like-

Faleis fene to bleren

6

N

hi

10 pe

ad

ye

pl

co

ffi hi

23

dr

his

tu

of

Pr pu

he

pe

fre Ne

m the

ot

OB

pla

me w

th

wife confined fome of the Bianchi, all which foon afterwards upon their pretences of honest occasions they released. Meffer Corf. with his adherents, because they thought the Pope favourable to their party, went to of Rome, and the requests they had before made in writing to the Pope, they now by word of mouth renewed. There happened then to be in the Court of Rome; Charles of Valois, brother to the King of France, who was invited by the King of Naples to make an invation of Sicily. The Pope therefore thought convenient (being so earneftly preffed by the expulsed Florentines fled thither) that till the feafon were more proper for the Sea, he should go to Florence, Charles accordingly comes, and though the Bianchi, who now ruled all were jealous of him, yet being Head of the Guelobs. and fent by the Pope, they durst not obftruct his coming, but to engage his friendthip, gave him authority to dispose of the City at his pleasure. Charles having this Authority, Arms all his friends and confederates, which created flich a jealousie in the people, that he defigned to deprive them of their Liberty, that every one took Arms and flood in the entrance of their houses. to be in readiness if Charles made the least motion. The Cerchi, and the Heads of the Bianchi (having been fometime Heads of the Republick) had by their proud behaviour made themselves universally hated, which encouraged MefferCorfo, and others fled

Charles of Valois fent by the Pope to Florence. f to

fore

by

ned rles

nce.

s to

ope

ear-

ines

orc

HCE

the ous

obs.

obnd-

the

this fe-

in

em

ms

fes.

eaff

the of

VI

d,

ers

led

hich fed thence with him, to return to Floho were the rather because they were favoured by Charles, and the Captains of the Wards. And when the City, out of fear of Charles, was all in Arms : Corfo with his fled friends, and many others that followed him, entred Florence without any impediment: And though Veri de Grebi was advised and encouraged to oppose him. yet he would not do it, faying that the people of Florence, against whom he came. should chastise him, but it fell out quite contrary, for he was received and not chaflifed by them, and Meffer Veri to fave himself constrained to flee, for Mesor Corfo. as foon as he had forced the gate of Pinti, The New drew up at great St. Feters, a place near to prevail. his house, and having got together multitudes of friends and people, who defirous of novelty flocks to him, first cleared the Prisons of all that either upon private or publick accounts were imprisoned; then he forced the Lords to return as private persons to their houses, and chuse new ones from among the people favourers of the Neri: And for five days imployed his forces in facking the houses of the principal men of the party of the Bianchi. The Cerebi and And the BL other Chiefs of their faction were gone anchi fee. out of the City, and retired into ftrong places, feeing Charles against them, and the most part of the people their enemies. And whereas before they would never follow the advice of the Pope, they were forced

The Popus clausid granlock g Schleger DOLLS !!

38

The Popes Nuntio makes a fickle reconciliation.

to flee to him for fuccour, representing to him that Charles was come to breed division and not to unite Florence, Whereupon the Pope fent again his Legat Matthew de Aqua-Sparte, who made peace between the Cerebi and Donati and confirmed it by new alliances and intermarriages, but being defirous that the Bianchi (hould likewise have there in of fice and command the Neriwho had got the Government into their hands would not admit it, whereupon he departed from Fla rence with as little fatisfaction, and no less anger than before, leaving the City for its disobedience excommunicated. So both factions continued still in Florence, and both discontented. The Neri feeing their enemies fo near them were angry and jealous lest with their ruine they should fnatch again from them their Honours and Authority. To which anger and natural jealoufie, they added new injuries. Meffer Niebolar Cerchi, with many of his friends, going to his Estate in the Country, was by Simon, Son of Meffer Corfo Donati met at the Affrieas Bridge and affaulted, the fray was bloody, and doleful to both fides in the end for Nicholas was flain, and Simon dyed next night of his wounds. This scrifte disturbed the City afresh, and though the party of the Neri were most in the fault, yet were they by those then governed and defended And before judgement was given, there was a confpiracy discovered to have been held by the Biambi with Peter Ferrante, a Baron

to

čT

ly

hi

OU

fi

te

Baron of Charles's, with whom they had plotted to be reftored to the government, which thing came to light, by Letters written from the Cerebi to him , though it was the opinion of many that the Letters were counterfeit, and produced by the Donati to varnish over that disrepute they had got by the death of Nieholas : However the Cerebi were all confined, together with all their followers of the Faction of the Bianchi (amongst whom was Dante the Poet) their goods put to fale, and their houses razed to the ground: Those that faved themselves. with many Ghibellines that adhered to their party, went up and down to fundry places, with new troubles feeking out new Fortunes. And Charles having done what he charles recame to do at Florence, returned to the Pope turns from to pursue his enterprize against Sieily; In Rome: which he proved neither wifer nor honefter than he had been in Florence; so that in the end with diffrace and the loss of most of his Army, he returned into France. Florence after Charles his departure lived very quietly: Only Meffer Corfo was unquiet within himself, because he held not that degree in the City he thought becoming him. But on the contrary, the Government being popular, he beheld the administration of affairs committed to many much his inferiours, and incited by these troublesome pasfions, he cast about how by an honest pretence he might justifie the dishonesty of his heart; calumniating many Citizens who.

1 15 200 V ni alierd

CAMPRICA.

ne all o att net and the hard of the state o

€0

CV

G

øv

mi

thi

dil

the

in

ado

bre

m

fpr

140

ho

Cip

the

fire

New civil broils in Florence. had had the administration of publick monies, as if they had converted it to their private use, and proposing it as convenient to find them out and punish them. This opinion was seconded by many, who had defires like his, towhich was added the igrance of many, who believed Meffer Corb moved to this out of love to his Country: On the other fide, the wronged Citizens having the favour of the people, defended themselves, and after many disputes, to blows they came, On one fide were Melle Corfo, and Meffer Lottieri, Bishop of Fla rence, with many Nobles and fome Commons; and on the other fide, the Signier with the most part of the people, so that the scuffle was in many parts of the City at once. And the Signiory feeing what hazard they were like to run, fent to Lucca for aid, and presently all the people of Lucu were come to Florence, by whose authoring things were for the present composed, the tumults quieted, and the people fetled in their State and Liberty, without any punithment of the Authors of the Sedition. The Pope had heard of these Tumults in Florence, and fent his Legat Nicholas de Prato thither; he being a man both for his Birth, Degree, Learning and Manners of great reputation, gained presently so much credit, that they gave him authority to reform and fettle the State as he pleased: And because he was a Native Ghibelline, he designed to restore those were banished. But

The Pope fends Nicho-las de Fraso Legat to Florence.

But be first thought fit to gain the Commons, and therefore reffored the ancient companies of the people, which order much increased their power, and quelled that of the great men. Thus the Legat thinking he had obliged the multitude, deligns next to restore those were fled, and after trying many ways, was not only unfuccessful in them all but fell under such jealousies of those that governed that he was forced to depart, & full of indignation returned to the Pope, leaving the City of Florence in confusion, and excommunicated. Nor was it only with one evil humour, but with many that this City was infefted, there being at one time the factions of the Nobles and People, of the Guelphes and Ghibellines, and of the Bisuchi and Neri. And now again was the whole Town in Arms, and continual skirmithes happened. And the first that moved this new broil were the Medici, and the Junii, who in favour of the Rebels had disclosed themselves to, and joyned with the Legat: So that there was now fighting in many parts of Florence at once. And to Agreat fire add to these miseries happened a fire, which in Florence, broke out first in the Gardens of St Michael in the Abbots house, and from thence spread it self into the houses of the Caponfacebi, and burnt them, together with the houses of the Mozzi, the Aniceri, the Tofchi, Cipriani, Lomberti and Cavalcanti, and all the new Market, from thence it got into the Breet, called Porta Santia Maria, and burne

Dd 2

UM

the sale is the

ry 1

ens ded

to

For 16

m

bat

y at

and

for

city

the

p4-

on,

in de

his

of ich

TCd:

he ed.

ut

49

it all, and wheeling about by the old Bridge, burnt the houses of the Gerardini, Pulei, Amadei, and Lucardefi, and with these so many more, that the number amounted to 1700 or more. It was the opinion of many, that in the heat of the scuffle this fire happened by chance : But others affirmed that it was kindled by the Abbot Neri Prior of St. Peter Searraggio, a dissolute fellow given over to all wickedness, who feeing the people ingaged in fighting, defigned to act a villany, not to be remedied whilst men were otherwise imployed; and that his mischievious intent might have the better success, he threw the fire into his conforts house. It was in the year 1304, when Florence was thus afflicted with fire and fword. Meffer Corfe, only among fo many tumults was not in Arms, judging he might by keeping quiet, the easier come to be made Umpire between both parties. when weary of fighting they fhould incline to an agreement: yet they laid down their Arms, more because they were glutted with mifery, than that they had any defire of Union, the only event was, that the Rebels did not return, and that the party favouring them had the worst of it. The Legat returned to Rome, and hearing of these new troubles, perswaded the Pope that if he would unite Florence, he must fend for twelve of the principal Citizens to come to him, whereby what nourished the mischief, being removed, it would be the easier to extinguish it. This

1304.

ti

ti

n t

0

ti

fi

a

k

h

fe

k

I

2

(

L

12-

to of

his

m-

eri

ite

he le-

cd

nd

he

nis

4,

ire

fo

he

ne

es,

ne

eir

th

ni-

id

ng ed

u-

u-

he

by

ď,

it.

is

this council the Pope accepted, and the Citizens furnmoned, obeyed; among whom was Signior Corfo Donati: after whose departure, the Legate let those were fled out of the City know; that now was their time (whilst the Florentines were deprived of their chiefes) to return, whereupon the Rebels making all the force they could, came The Kebels to Florence, and entring by the wall not attempt to yet quite finished, marched as far as S. John's possessite tempt to yet quite finished, marched as far as S. John's possessite tempt to yet quite finished. place. Twas remarkable that those who city. but a little before had fought for their return (when unarmed they entreated to berestored to their Countrey) now seeing them return armed, and endeavour to poffess the City by force, (so much did they efleem common good, before private friend-(hip) took arms against them, and uniting themselves with the rest of the people, forced them to return from whence they came. These people lost their design by But are releaving part of their men at Lastra, and not flaying for Tolofetto Uberti, who with three hundred horse was to come from Pistoia, for they thought celerity rather than firength was to get them the victory: So it often happens in enterprizes, that delay takes away the opportunity, and haft the power. The Rebels gone, Florence relapsed into its old Divisions, and to take away the authority of the family of the Cavalcanti, seized by force on the Stinche, a Castle scituate in the vale de greve, anciently belonging to that Family; and because Dd 3

44

mit to ea

thofe that were taken in it were the fine that were put into the prilons newly credi ed, they called those prisons from the name of the place whence they were brought, the Sthible, which name they to this day retain, The heads of the Republick reftored likewife the companies of the people, and gave them the banners, under which the comparies of the Trades first drew together, and they entituled the dhiefelt of them Standard bearers of the Companies, and Collearnes of the Lords, and appointed them to affilt the Signory against tumults with their dring, and in peace with their Council; to the two decient Rectors or Governours they joined an Executioner, who together with Goofalonieri, or Standard beuters were to prodeed against the infolm cles of the great men. In the mean time the Popertied, and Muffer Corfo and there thers were returned, and the City might have lived in peace; had it not been afred diffurbed by the refles mind of Confi This man to gain himself reputation was always contradictory to whatever was the opinion of those in authority, and fill made his own authority comply with what ever he faw was the inclination of the prople; and of all differtions and novelcies he was the head, and to him for affiftance au all those who desired to obtain some es traordinary thing, wherefore many Ciercia of repute hated him, and this hatred he greated in such manner that the party of the

P

b

it

CE

CI

1

Ы

6

d

8

R

si

2

6

t

H

iift

a.

me

the

in,

EVÇ

pa-

and

nd-

ol-

em

ich

in-

So-sho red con red con

un

10

古古

he

orand elle

Deierce.

the New felt into open Division, for Corfe valued himself on his private-power and uthority, and his adversaries on the Common-wealths; but fuch was the awe his presence carried with it, that every one feared him; however to lift him from the peoples favour they took a fure and ready courfe, which was by spreading abroad that he designed to usurp the Tyranny, and that it was the easier to perswade them to, because his course of life exceeded all modente and civil bounds, which opinion increased, because he now married a daughter of Uguecio of Faginola, head of the Gbibellines and Bianehi, and very powerful in Infeany; affoon as this marriage came to be known, it gave fuch heart to his adverfaries, that they took arms against him, and the people were so far from defending him that most of them joined with his enemies: the heads of his adverfaries were Rosa della Tosa, Pazzini de Pazzi, Gert Spini, and Berto Brunellefebi, thefe with their followers gathered together in Arms before the Palace of the Lords, and by their order put in an accusation to Peter Branca Captain of the people against Meffer Confo, as a man who by the affiffance of Utweeio fought to make himfelf Tyrant; apon which he was cited, and presently for contempt adjudged a Rebel: nor was there any longer time spent between the acensation and the sentence than the space of two hours: Judgment thus given, the Dd 4 Lords

Lords with the company of the people, with

His house Maulted 5

Defence.

banners flying went to find him out. Meffer Corfo on mean while, though he faw himself forsaken by many of his own Corfo Donari friends, septence given against him, the condemned; Lords with their Authority, and multitudes of his enemies coming to affault him, was not at all daunted, but fortified himself in his house, hoping that Uguccio whom he had fent to, would come and relieve him: His house, and all the ways to it were barricadoed by him, and fo well defended by the friends that adhered to him, that though the people were fo numerous they could not overcome them, however the skirmish was hot, and many killed and wounded on both fides; and the people feeing they could not by open ways overcome him, possessed themselves of the next adjoining houses, and by breaking through places not at all mistrusted, entered his house, Corfo now feeing himself encompassed with enemies, and trufting no longer to Uguecio's help, resolved since he despaired of victory, to try if he could fave himself; whereupon he and Gerrard Bonduci, with many others of his valiant and faithful friends, charging furiously upon the people forced their way through them, and got out of the City by the Gate of the Cross; however they were purfued by fo many, that Gerrardi was on the African Bridge by Boocacio Canicculli flain, and Meffer Corfo by some Catalonian horse in the Signory's pay

ł

L

th

'n

he

es 25

in

ad

i-

Dy.

at

cy

hě

nd

ole

r

xt

h

Ĉ,

th

6of

f.

h

al

le

ıt

1-

t

at Rovezano overtaken, and made prisoner, but in his return towards Florence, that he might not be gazed upon by his victorious enemies, or perhaps torn in pieces by them, he fuffered himself to fall off his horse, and corp. Done was by one of those had the Guard of him " Beat dispatch'd, his body was taken up by the Monks of S. Salvi, and without any pomp buried : fuch was the end of Meffer Corfo, from whom his Countrey and the Neri had received many good and evil Offices, who had he had a more quiet mind, his memory might have been more happy; yet deserves he to be enrolled among the bravest Citizens our City can boaft off: 'Tis true, his Factious and reftless spirit made both his Countrey and his confederates forbear conferring honours on him, had elfe been his due, and proved at last both the cause of his own death, and of much mischief to them: Uguccio coming to aid his fon in Law, hearing at Remoli how he was oppreffed by the people, and judging he could not do him any good, that he might not do mischief to himself, returned back. Meffer Corfo dead (which happened in the year 1308) the tumults ceased, and the City lived in peace till fuch time as they heard that the Emperour Harry was coming into Italy with all the Florentine Rebels, whom time Rebels he had promised to restore to their Coun-coming with trey, whereupon the heads of the Com- Emperour. monwealth thought fit to leffen the number of their enemies, and to that end deter-

mined

mined that all who had not by special name been benished, should be recalled, so

he should defend it: the Emperour coming, took the way of Pifa, and so by the Sea-

that there remained still excluded almost all the Ghibellines, and some of the Bianchi, among which were Dane, Alighieri, the children of Veri de Cerchi, and Giano de Bella: they sent moreover for aid to Robert King of Naples, and seeing they could not obtain it as friends, they gave him the City for five years, on condition that with his Forces

The Florentimes crave aid of Robert King of Naples.

The Empepersur firs down before Florence,

coast to Rome, where he was crowned, 1312. and afterwards determining to tame the Florentines, comes by the way of Perugia and Areazo to Florence, and fits down at the Monastery of S. Salvi, within a mile of the City, where he staid fifty days without doing any thing, infomuch that despairing of diffurbing the Government and State of that City, he goes to Pifa, where he makes an agreement with Frederick King of Sicily to invade the Kingdom of Naples, and being marched thither with his Army, in the height of his hopes of a victory, and King Robert's fears of ruine, at Bonconvens to he dyes. It happened a while afterwards that Uquecio de Faginola becomes Lord of Pifa, and presently after of Lucca, where he was put in by the Ghibelline party, and now with the help of these two Cities did great damage to his Neighbours, which the Florentines to free themselves from, defired of King Robert that his brother Peter might

Uguecio Lord of Pi-

edi n

cII.

Cial

hil-

la:

ing

ob-

for

rces

ng,

ca-

d,

me

ru-

wn

ile

th-

ir-

atè

he

ng

es, y,

nd

12.5

ds

of

te

might command their Forces: whileft Uruccio on the other fide ceafed not to enlarge his Dominion, and by force or ftratagem had in the Vale of Arno, and in the Vale of Nievole taken many Towns and Caftles': and fitting now down with his Forces before Monre Carini, the Florentines thought. it necessary to relieve it, and not let this fire confume their whole Territory, railing to that end a great Army, they marched to the Vale of Nievole, where they engaged with Uguccio, and after a tharp encounter were routed, here dyed Peter the Kings Paer the brother (whose body could never be found) Kings Broand with him more than two thousand men wore flain: nor had Uguccio's fide any caufe to rejoice at the victory, he lofing his fon, and many of the chief Leaders of his Army. The Florentines after this loss frengthened their Towns within, and the King fent them for their General the Count de Andrea, whom they called the new Count An-Count, by whose deportment, or because ral of the it is natural to the Florentines, that all Go- Florenimes. wornments grow irksome to them, and every accident divides the City, notwithflanding the war they had with Ugucoio, the Olty was again divided into Friends, and enemies to the King; the chief of the ene- She City amies were Simon della Tofa, the Magolotti gain divided with some of the Populary that were superious to others in the Government, these fent into France and Germany to leavy men. and fetch Captains, that at their arrival they

they might drive out the Earl, that was Go-

vernour for the King; but as fortune would have it, they could get none, yet they left not off, but seeking ashistance every where, though they could not from France nor Germany have any, they prevailed at A. gobbio, and having first driven out the Count, brought in Lando of Agobbio, and made him Bargello or Executor, giving him the amplest power any had ever had over the Citizens; this was a ravenous and cruel man who with his Soldiers marched up and down the Countrey, putting to death one or other at the will and pleasure of those that had elected him; and grew at last so insolent, that he stamped false money of the Florentine coin, whilest no body durst question or oppose him, to such a height had the difcords of Florence raised him, a great, 'tis true, but miserable City, whom neither the remembrance of their past Divisions, nor the fear of Uguccio, nor the Authority of a King could keep constant. The Kings friends and oppofers to Lando and his followers, were Nobles or wealthy Commons, and all Guelfs, yet because their Adversaries had the Government in their hands, they could not without great danger discover

themselves; but having determined to free themselves from so vile and tyrannical oppression, they writ privily to King Robert,

that he should make Count Guido of Buti-

I ando of Agobio's Tyranny.

Guide of Butifolle the Kings Lieu- folle his Lieutenant at Florence, which the tenant at l' lorence.

King gave present orders for (and though the

d

C

1

04

et

ry

ce

44

ıt,

m

R

5;

th

ne

er

24

t,

-

r

S

e

r

a

monol S end S

the Lords were the Kings oppofers) yet the adverse party durft not, because of the excellent qualities of the Earl, refuse him. yet he had not much authority, for the Signory and Standard-bearers of the Companies favoured Lando and his party. Whilest they lived under these afflictions in Florence. the Daughter of Albertus Emperour of Germany, came to Florence in her way towards Naples, whither the was going to Charles the Son of Robert her Husband; the was very honourably received by the Kings friends: who complained to her of the fad condition of the City, and the tyrannies of Lando, infomuch that before the parted. by her means, and those of the Kings party, the Citizens united, and Lando was deprived of his Authority, and (glutted with blood and plunder) fent back to Agobbio. In the Reformation of the Government, the Signory was for three years prorogued to the King, and because there was already seven Lords elected of those of Lando's Faction, they chose fix of the Kings, and some Magistracies were held with only thirteen Lords, but afterwards according to custom, they brought them again to fourteen. In or about this time the Signorys of Luccaand Pifa were taken from Uguccio, and Castruccio Castruc- Castruccio eani Citizen of Lucea became Lord of them, Lord of Lacwho being a young man, bold and coura- ca and Pifagious, and withal fortunate in his undertakings, in a very short time became head of all the Ghibellines in Infeany, whereupon the Florentines

tines laving afide their civil-discords, confulted how to stop the growth of Castruccials greatness, and defend themselves against the power he had already attained to: and because the Signory should better deliberate and weigh all affairs, and with greater and thority execute them, they chose twelve Citizens, whom they called Good-men, without whose counsel and consent the Lords could do nothing of importance: The time of the Government affigned to King Robert was now expired, and the City becoming Prince over it felf, re-ellablished the ancient and usual Governours and Magistrates: the great fear they stood in of Caltruccio kept them united, who after many feats done by him against the Lords of Lunigiana, belieged Prato; whereupon the Florentines resolving to relieve it, thut up their thops, and the people marched out twenty thousand Foot, and fifteen hundred Horse: and to weaken Castruccio, and strengthen themselves, they made Proclamation, That whatever Rebel Guelf should come to the relief of Prato, he should after that Action was over, be restored to their Countrey, whereupon above four thousand Rebels came in: This fo great Army, fo quickly brought to Prato daunted Castruccio in such manner, that without trufting to the Fortune of a Fight, he retreated towards Lucca: whereupon grew a difference in the Florentine Camp, between the Nobles and people; These would have followed him, and by

The Florentimes afraid of Castruccio.

He befieges Prate.

Difference in the Florentine Camp.

falling

On

rate

au.

lve

nen,

the

Ce/:

the

fta-

and

a of any

Luz

lon

neir

nty

fe:

nen

hat

re-Vas

re-

n:

ta er,

IC+ ine

e:

by

ng

00

folling in his rear have defroyed hims Those would return, alleadning that it was enough to have put Florence in danger to deliver Prato, which was well enough to be born with, whilest they were confrained by necessity, but now that was taken away, it was not at all convenient to tempt fortune; where the loss might be great, and the advantage could be but fmall. Thus, they not agreeing, the bufinels was referred to the determination of the Lords, who met in their Council with the same difference between people and Lords, which being understood in the City, the rabble turnultuously affembled in the great place, uttering many reproachful words against the Nobles, till they for fear consent to the pursuit of Costruccio but the resolution being taken too late, and unwillingly, the enemy had time to fecure himself in Lucca: this disorder so enraged the people against the Lords, that they would not permit their word paffed by Proclamation to the Rebels (though done by their own order and confent.) to be performed, which the exiles having fome hints of, that they might anticipate this refolve, they presented themselves before the City gate, to enter Florence in the Front of the Army, which matter being foreseen, they were by those which still remained in Florence repulsed, but to see whether they could have that by fair means, which they could not get by force, they fent eight Ambaffadours

baffadours, to put the Lords in mind of their promise; and faith given, and to confider the dangers they had run through out of hopes, to have that promife made good to them; and though the Nobles (who thought themselves, and their honours obliged in this cause, because they had particularly promifed what the Lords had proclaimed) laboured as much as they could in their behalfs, yet the Pique, the generality of the people had taken (that fince they had not overcome Castruccio in fight, they could not pretend to it) was fo univerfal, that they could not obtain it, which was a heavy blur and dishonour to the City. And many of the Nobles were fo incenfed at it, that they attempted to gain that by force, which they could not do by perfwation, and agreed privately with the Out-laws, that they should come armed to the City, and they within would take Arms in their assistance; but the plot was discovered before the appointed day, in so much that the exiles found the City in Arms, and in order ready to stop those without, which so frighted those within, that not one durst take Arms, so that hopeless they retreated, and gave over the enterprize. After their 'departure it was moved, that condign punishment should be inflicted on those, who had been the guilty cause of their coming, but though every one knew who were the delinquents, none durft name or accuse them: Wherefore that the truth

of

to

gh

les

115

II.

0

ıld

10-

ice

nt,

11-

ch

ty.

by

1

he

to

ns

0-

ch

br

ch

ne

ey

e.

at

n

of

W

ft

96

h

muth might be known without respect, it was ordered, that in the Council they should write down the Delinquents names, and privately give the writing to the Captain of the people, by which means accusations were given in against Amferigbo Donati Teghiaio Frescobaldi, and Lotteringho Gerardini, who finding a more favourable Judge than possibly their faults deserved, were only fined. The Tumults which were miled in Florence, by the Rebels coming to the Gates, made it appear, that one Chief was not enough for the Companies of the people, and therefore for the future they would have three or four Leaders for each Company, and to every Standard-bearer, they added two or three, which they called Pennoniers, to the end, that in time of neceffity, where all the Company was not to be drawn together, part of it might be employed under one of the Leaders, and part under others. And as it happens in all Republicks, after some accidents, old Laws are repealed, and new ones enacted; whereas formerly the Lords were created from time to time, the Signiory and their Colleagues now fitting (to amplyfie and enlarge their power) enacted, that they and their fuccessors should continue forty Months, whose names they put into a purse, and every two months drew them, but before the term of forty Months was past, many of the Citizens doubting that they were not in the purse, there was a new imburfation Ee

fation required. From this beginning forung the order of chusing out the of pure the Magistrates both within and without the City, whereas, first, at the end of their Magistracy, by the succeeding Council they were chosen: These and the name thus put into the purse, they afterwards called * Squittini; and because every three, or at most every five years only it was done.

they conceived it eased the City of much

trouble, and took away many occasions of Tumults, which at the creation of every

* The word fignifies ajoyning or coupling together.

1325.

The Florentines determine to affault Piftois.

Magistrate, by reason of the number of Competitors usually happened, which diforders not understanding how otherwife to prevent, made them make choice of this way, not forefeeing the defects that lay hid under fuch flender conveniencies. It was now the year 1325, and Castruccio having poffeffed himself of Piftoia, grew to potent that the Florentines fearful of his or greatness, resolved before he was well fetled in the Dominion of it, to affaule it a and refcue it out of his clutches. And a- fi mong their Citizens and Friends, they le- 4 vied twenty thousand foot, and three thoufand horse, and with this Army they encamped against Altopascio, that by taking so that, they might cut off all relief from Pistoia, the Florentines were successful in de taking this Town, and from thence proceeded towards Lucea, wasting the Country; de but by reason of imprudent management la and infidelity in their General, they mach little

ning

purle

hout

their

ame

vards hree,

one.

much ns of

every

er of h dif-

ifoto f this

at lay

little progress: Their present General was Raimond of Cardona, who having observed the Florentines very liberal of their liberty, fometimes having yielded it to the King, Ametimes to the Legat, and fometimes to uncil men of meaner quality, he thought by reducing them to some necessity, it might probably happen that they might make him Prince: Nor did he forget to put them often in mind to grant him the same authority in the City, that he had in the Field, alladging that otherwise, he could never laye that obedience, which was requifite for General. And because the Florentines confented not in this, he let flip those opportunities, which Castruccio laid hold of. for in the mean time those aids promised by the Visconti, and the other Tyrants of ruccio Lombardy arrived; and now grown potent: ew fo Raimond, who before for want of fidelity f his would not overcome, now for want of pruwell dence knew not how to fecure himself, but ule it moving flowly with his Army, was by Cand a fruccio near Altopascio affaulted, and after ey le- thloody battel totally routed, where many thou- Citizens were taken and flain, and among y en- them Meffer Raimond himself; on whom aking fortune justly inslicted this punishment, from which his fallhood and evil counsels had ful in delerved from the Florentines, pro-mage Castruccio did the Florentines in plun-ntry; der, prisoners, ruines and burnings can mene hardly be related, for without any oppomachinen, he for feveral months over-run their little Eez-Coun-

XUM

Charles Duke of Calabria chofen Lord of Florence.

Country; and for the Florentines it feem'd enough after such a loss to save their City; yet were they not fo cow-hearted, but they made great provision of money, hired Solders, and fent to their friends for aid, but against such an enemy no provision was sufficient: They were therefore constrained to chuse Charles Duke of Calabria, Son of King Robert their Lord, if they would have him come to their defence, for that Family being used to Lord it over Florence, chose rather their obedience than their friendship: but Charles being engaged in the war of Sicily, and not at leifure to come and take possession of his Lordship, sent Walter, by Nation a Frenchman, and Duke of Athens. He as Lievtenant to the Lord took poffeffion of the City, and ordained Magiftrates at his will and pleasure; yet was his deportment so modest, and in a manner contrary to his Nature, that every one loved him. Charles as foon as the Sicilian Wars were ended, with a thousand horse comes to Florence, where he made his entrance in July 1326, whose presence put a stop to Caltruccio's inroads into the Florentine Country, or at least awed him so, that he could not make them fo freely: but whatever reputation he gained abroad, he loft within, and those injuries and damages, their enemies were flopt from doing, their friends did at home, for the Signiory now acted nothing without the Dukes confent, and he raised four hundred thousand FloП.

'nď

7

icy

ol-

uf.

of

VC

ilv

óľe

ip:

of

ike

by

MJ.

Æ-

gi-his

ner

ed

ars

nes.

in

to

ine

12t

ur

he

es,

eir

W

nt.

10-

315

realmer

view upon the City, notwithstanding by greement, he was not to exceed two hundred thousand. So heavy were the loads wherewith he or his Father daily oppreffed the City. And to these grievances new jealousies and fresh enemies were joyned; for the Ghibellines of Lombardy were fo allarm'd at the coming of Charles into Infeany, that Galeazzo Vifconti, and the other Tyrants of Lombardy, with money Lewis Duke and promises prevailed with Lewis Duke of Baviera, who against the Popes will had marches inbeen created Emperour, to make an expedition into Italy. He comes into Lombardy, and from thence into Italy, and with Castruccio's aid makes himself Lord of Pifa, where refreshed with money, he marches towards Rome, which made Charles hafte from Florence, (being in fear for the Kingdom) and leave Meffer Philip de Sagginetto his Lieutenant. Caltruccio after the Emperours departure makes himself Lord of Pifa, and the Florentines by a cunning plot and contrivance took from him Piftoia. Which presently Castruccio fits down before and besieges, where he kept his ground with fo much valour and obstinacy, that though the Florentines made many attempts to relieve it, and oft-times with their Army made show of making inroads into his own Country, to draw him off thence, yet they could never, either by force or cunning make him raise his seige, so cagerly he defired to chastife the Piltoians. Ee 3 and

of Baviera Emperor to Italy.

01.32.25.6

Castruccio retakes Pistora,

And dyes.

Charles of Calatria dyes at Napieses and baffle the Florentiner of that at last the Pilloians were confirmined to accept him for their Lord : which though it was a great addition to his glory, yet was dearly purchased, for at his return to Lucca he dved. And because Fortane rarely gives cither good or evil fingly, Charles Duke of Calabria, and Lord of Florence dyed about the fame time at Naples. So that the Florentines beyond their expectation were in one inflant delivered from the fear of the one and Tyranny of the other; who having thus recovered their freedom, reformed the City, and vacating all the Orders of counsels, created two new, one of three hundred Citizens, Commoners, and the o ther of two hundred and forty Nobles and people mixed, the first of which they called the Council of the people, and the other the Common-council. The Emperour at his arrival at Rome, created an Anti-pope, and enacted many things against the Church and attempted many others unfuccefsfully: So that at last he went thence with difgrace and comes to Pifa, where either fome Jother way affronted, or for want of pay eight hundred Germane Horse revolted, and on Monte Chiaro upon the Ceruglio strengthned themselves; these as soon as the Emperour was gone from Pifa rowards Lombardy, finprized Lucca, driving out Francis Cafracani, left there by the Emperour; and hoping to make fome advantage of this feifure, they offered that City to the Fo rentines

Luces offered to the Florentines for twenty thousand Florins laft

him

as 2

car

t he

s ci-

e of

oout

Flo-

e in

the

vine

med

rs of

hree

e o

and

llod

the

Trat

Opc,

rch

III.

ace

dib ght

CUI

fdr-

ins-

and

rentines for twenty thousand Floring, which by the advice of Simon della Tofa was refused, and it had been well for the City, had the Florentines been confrant in their determination, but as they foon after varied their minds provedvery hurtful; for as now for fo fmall a price they might have been peaceably possessed of it, and would not, afterwards when they would have had it, they could not, though they would have bought it at a much vafter rate; but it happened in this s in their change of Government, which the Florentines often altered to infinite damage. Lucca thus refused by the Floren- Lucca tines, was bought by Gerardine Spinola a bought by Genouese, for thirty thousand Floring. And Spinola. because men are less eager, after what they may have then what they cannot obtain, as foon as ever they heard of Gerardines bargain, and confidered at how easie a rate he had it; the whole people of Florence were enflamed with a mighty defire of having it, condemning both themselves, and them that had discouraged them from buying it. And to gain by force what they would not purchase with money, they sent their forces to prey upon and spoil the Lucchefe Territories. The Emperour in the interim was gone out of Italy, and the Anti-pope, by order of the Pifans fent prifoner into France. And the Florentines after the death of Castruccio, which happened in 1328, till 1340 were quiet within, and only attended their affairs abroad, and in Ee 4

UM

Florence adorned with new Buildings.

A great flood in Flo-

rence.

New occasions of diffetence.

Lombardy, by reason of the coming of John King of Bobemia & in Tufcany upon account of Lucca they had many Wars. They likewife adorned their City with new buildings, & recting the Tower of Santia Reparata, by the advice of Giotto, a famous painter in those times, and in the year 1334 happened an extraordinary over-flowing of the River Arno, infomuch, that in some places of Florence the Waters role above twelve yards. whereby part of the Bridges, and many Buildings were ruined, which with great charge and industry, they strove to repair. But in the year 1340 new occasions of difference happened. The richest of the Citizens had two ways to increase and maintain their power. The one was by ordering in fuch manner, the imburfations of Magifrates, that it should always light upon them, or some of their friends; the other to be Chiefs in the Elections, that they might be afterwards in their judgements favourable to them. And fo highly did they esteem this second part, that two Rectors or Governours not fufficing them. they many times for their own ends brought in a third; and now they had in an extraordinary manner brought in under the title of Captain of the Guard Meffer James Gabriel of Agobbio , and given him all manner of Authority over the City. This man in complyance with those that governed; did multiply injuries, and among others affronted Meffer Piedre

uni

, 0

by

in

ned

ver

ds,

my

eat

ir.

th

in

íń

31-

on

er

cy

ts

id

0

d

ń

de Bardo and Meffer Bardo Frescobaldi. These being of the Nobility and Naturally proud, could not put up an affront from a ftranger, who was in the wrong, and who only in complyance of a few people that governed had abused them, wherefore to revenge themselves, both of him and the present Governours, they formed a conspiracy, in which many Noble Families, and some of the people joyned, displeased with the Tyranny of those fat now at the They had defigned among themfelves, that every one of them should afsemble as many armed men as they could in their houses, and at the time of Mattins on All-Souls day, when the people were dispersed in the feveral Churches to pray for their dead, fall on, kill the Captain, and the heads of the Government: and so with new Lords and new Orders reform the State. But because in perilous attempts, the longer they are debated on the more difficulties appear, and consequently they are the more unwillingly undertaken: it generally happens in conspiracies delay of execution begets a discovery. Thus Andrea Bardi being one of the Conspirators, fear of punishment happened to have more power over him than hopes of revenge, whereupon he discovered all to James Alberti his kinsman; James to the Priors, and they to the Governours; and because the danger was nigh (All-Souls day being at hand) they judged it hazardous to delay, but ad-

A plot a gainft the State. vifed the Lords to ring out the Bell, and fummon the people to Arms, Taldo Valor was Standard-bearer; and Francisco Salviai one of the Lords : Thefe being of the Bardes relations withflood the ringing out of the Bell, alleadging it was not convenient on every flight occasion to Arm the people. because the Authority of the unbridled multitude never did well; and that Tumults were eafily raised, but hardly quelled, And therefore it were more judicious first to examine the truth of the matter, and civily punish the offenders, than adventure their Chaftifements tumultoufly, and upon a fingle relation, bazard the ruine of Flarence. Which reasons were so far from being allowed of, that with villanous and reproachful words, the Lords were forced to make the Bell be rung out. At the found of which all the people gathered in Armsto the Piazza. And on the other fide the Bardi and Frescobaldi, seeing themselves discovered, that they might overcome with glory, or dye without shame; betook themfelves to Arms, hoping to defend that part of the City on the farther fide of the River, where their houses flood relying on the help they hoped to receive from the Nobles in the Country, and other their friends: But this their defign was prevented by the people, which inhabited that part of the City, who took Arms for the Lords. Whereupon feeing this interpolition, they retreated into the Street, where the Bardi dwelt

k II.

and

riati

the

on

ple.

led

Fu-

led.

irft

nd

ure

oon

10-

be-

re-

to

nd

to

he

CS

th

n-

rt

j-

dwelt as stronger than any of the rest, and that they vigorously defended to James of Agobbio knowing all this conspiracy made against him, fearful of death, in fright and amazement kept himself in the midst of his armed men, near the palace of the Lords ; but the other Governours who were less faulty had more courage, and especially the Podefta, or Mayor, who was called Meffer Maffeo da Magzadi, This brave Gentleman coming into the hottest of the skirmish, on the other side the bridge Rubaconte, and entring amidst the swords of the Bordi, made a fign to parley with them; and the reverence they bore to the person of the man, to his good manners, and other excellent qualities, made them in an inflant forbear fighting, and quietly liften to him, who with grave and modest words blamed their Rebellion, and thewed them the danger in which they were, if they yielded not to the force of the people, giving them hopes that they should afterwards be heard, and favourably judged, and promiting to be a mediator for compassion to their to reasonable provocation : and then turning to the Lords perfwaded them that they would not strive to overcome with the blood of their own Citizens, nor judge any The Rebels unheard. And fo far he prevailed that the favourably Bardi and Frescobaldi without any oppositi- means of the on left the City, and retired to their own Ca- Pouffa. ftles; they gone, and the people having laid down their Arms, the Lords proceeded only

against

them made Example. made.

gainst those of the Families of the Bardi Yet some of and Frescobaldi, that had taken Arms, and to devest them of all power, they bought Severe Laws from the Bardi the Castles of Mangona and Vering, and by a Law enacted that no Citizen should possess any Castle within twenty miles of Florence: fome months after Stiato Frescobaldi was beheaded, and many others declared Rebels; nor were those who governed content to have overcome the Bardi and Frescobaldi, but as all men usually do, the more authority they have the worfe they use it, and the more insolent they grow, whereas before one Captain of the Guard afflicted Florence within, now they chofe another with unlimited authority to torment the Countrey without, so that none they were jealous of, could inhabit either in Florence or abroad; which so much incensed all the Nobles against them, that they were even ready to to their da- fell the City and themselves for revenge, and waiting only for an opportunity; it happened well, and they used it better. By reason of the many troubles of Tuscany, and Lombardy, the City of Lucea was fallen into the hands of Mastino della Scala Lord of Verena, who (though by contract he was to confign it to the Florentines) yet being Lord of Parma, and judging himself able to keep it, he had not done it, but flighted his word, and broke his Faith; whereupon the Florentiees to revenge themselves, joined with the Venetians, and reduced him

The Commons incense the Nobles! mage.

Maftino Lord of Verons gets

di

nd nt

d

d

e

to the very point of loling his whole effate. vet all the advantage Florence got in the. end, was the fatisfaction of having recovered Mastino: for the Venetians (as all that allye themselves with the weaker do') after having gained Trevigi and Vicenza (without any respect to the Florentines) made peace: but sometimes after the Visconti Lords of Milan having taken Parma from Mastine he thinking now he could no longer hold Lucca, offered it to fale; the Florentines and the Pifans were the chapmen bid for it, but in driving the bargain, the Pifans feeing that the Florentines as the richer would carry it, applyed themselves to get it by force, and with the aid of the Visconti took the Field; the Florentines however drew not back, but compleated their purchase with Mastino, paid part of the money down, and times buy for the rest gave Hostages, and went to Luces of take possession: Naddo Ruciellai, John Bernardine de Medici and Roffo di Ricciardo were fent, who entring Lucea by force, had the possession delivered them by Mastino's people; yet the Pifans pursued their enterprize, and with all imaginable industry fought to gain it by force, and the Florentines to raise the siege: and after a tedious war the Florentines with the expence of money, and purchase of shame were driven The Florenout, and the Pifans became Lords of Luc- out by the The loss of this City (as in such cases Pifam. it always happens) made the people of Flotence mad at their Governours, and in all places

places and publick meetings they rail'd at them, villifying their Authority and evil

Councils. At the beginning of this war, the administration of the war was given to twenty Citizens, who made choice of Mr. Rimini di Malatesta for General of the expedition; who with little courage and less prudence had managed it, and because they had fent to Robert King of Naples for aid, that King had fent them Walter Duke of Athens, who by the will of Heaven that was preparing the enfuing miffortunes arrived in Florence, just in the time that Lucca was utterly loft: whereupon the twenty feeing the people enraged, bethought themselves of electing a new General; imagining by fuch election both to revive their hopes, and to bridle or take away the occasion of their calumniating them: and fince all cause of fear was not yet past, and that the Duke of Athens could with more Authority defend them, they first chose him Conservator; and afterwards Captain General of their Armies. The Nobles who for the reasons abovementioned, lived in discontent, being many of them well acquainted with Walter (when formerly in the name of Charles of Calabria, he governed Florence) thought now the time come, that they might with the ruine of the peoples liberty quench the fire in their own

houses, believing they had no other way

to tame the people that had oppressed them, but by submitting themselves under a

Walter Duke of Athens fent agin to Florence,

The Noblse encourage him to make himfelf Prince-

Prince

1

h

t

I

0

V

fi

t

İ

1

IJ.

vil

ar,

to Mr.

X-

ess

use

les

ter

eaif-

me he

ht

l;

ve

he

nd nd

re fe

in

10

in C-

in

n-

e,

)~ n

y

n.

ce

Prince, who sensible of the virtues of one party, and the insolencies of the other, would bridle this, and cherish that: adding to this the hopes of what they should deferve from him, when by their means he had obtained the principality: they had therefore many private meetings with him, perswading him to take the Government upon him, and offering him their utmost affistance; and to the Authority and encouragements they gave him, some Families of the Commons, joined theirs, as the Perruzzi, Acciavoli, Antellesi and Bonacorsi, who owing more than of themselves they were able to pay, were covetous of other mens goods to discharge their debts, and by enflaving their Countrey, thought to free themselves from the slavery of their Creditors. These perswasions stirred up the ambitious mind of the Duke to a greater defire of Rule, and to gain himself the reputation of being just and severe, and by that means win favour among the people, he profecuted the mannagers of the Lucchefe The manawar, and John de Medici and Naddo Ruc- gers of the cellai, and William Altoviti he put to death, War punishand many he banished, and more he fined. ed. These Executions extremely affrighted the middle fort of Citizens, only the Nobles and Plebeians were pleased at them, these because it is their nature to rejoice at michief, those because they faw themselves in a way of revenging fo many injuries the people had done them : and even as he paf-

fed

ter

fift

Ty

Lo

is

HOT

394

ba

per ma

pe bu

yas the

24

411

in

ti

ba ke

yo

fed the streets, they with loud voices praised the Erankness and Generosity of his mind and publickly encouraged him to examine and punish the frauds of the Citizens. The Authority of the twenty thus came to nothing, and the reputation of the Duke augmented, and the awe of him increased and many to honour him, caused his Arms to be painted upon their houses, nor wanted he any thing of Prince but the Title: and now thinking he might fecurely do what he lift, he fent to let the Senators know, that he judged it for the good of the City. that they should leave the Government freely and absolutely to him, and (fince the whole City were wellpleafed with it) he defired their confent likewife: the Senators (though they had long before foreseen the ruine of their Countrey) were much allarmed at this demand, and though they knew their danger, yet not to be wanting to their Countrey resolutely denyed it. The Duke had to make the greater show of Piety and Devotion, chosen for his residence the Convent of the Friars Minors of the Holy Crofs, and defirous to bring his malignant defigns to effect, he caused Proclamation to be made. That all the people should appear before him in the Piazza of the Holy Crofs, on the morning following. This Proclamation startled the Senators more than his Demands had done, and they got together with those Citizens, whom they judged lovers of their Countrey, and of Liberty, kII

fed. rms ited

and hat

W. ity,

eeole

red igh of

at eir

m-

ad le-

nly

nt on p.

ly rc

ot

the Dukes power) to apply any other remedy than prayer and perswasion, and determining totry, fince their Force was infufficient, if entreaties could make him defill from the attempt, or at least make his Tyranny the easier; whereupon part of the Lords went to him, and one of them spake after this manner. We come bither, Great Sir, to you, moved first by your Demand, and since by the of the Lords Proclamation you have made to assemble the to the Duke people: for it is apparent to us, that you would to dissipade is an extraordinary manner assume that him from the Iyranny which by ordinary ways we cannot grant you; nor is it our intention with any Force to oppose your Designs, but only to demonstrate bom beauty the load is, you lay upon us, and bow

perilous the action you undertake; that you

may at all times remember our Costnfels, as

well as theirs, who not for your advantage.

but to wreak their own malice bave advised

you to this. You attempt to enflave a City,

that his always lived free; for the Authority

we have formerly granted to the Royal Blood

f. Naples, was as Companions, not as Ser-

vants. Have you considered of what influence

and importance the very name of Liberty is

in this Gity? which no power can tame, no

time consume, nor no merit counterpoise : Do

but think Sir, what Forces are necessary to keep in bondage such a City; those strangers

you have entertained will not suffice, those

within, you cannot rely upon, for they who are now your Friends, and have advised you to

Liberty, not daring (as knowing too well

this attempt, when with your Authority the have quelled their enemies, will feek you Destruction, that they may make themselves Princes. The Plebeians in whom you confide will upon the least accident that can befal, in volt from you, fo that you may reasonably fear in a fhort time to have the whole City your ene. mies, to the ruine both of it and your felf nor is there in nature any remedy to prevent this ; for those Lords may make their Dominion Secure, who having but few enemies, can with death or banishment root them out, but when the batred is universal, no security can be found, for you not knowing whence the end will arise, he that fears every man, can affin bimself of none, or if you try to do it, you be aggravate the danger, for those which remain (more enflamed with bate and anger) will h more ready for revenge: that time is not able with its Iron teeth to devour the defire of Li berty is most certain, for it has often been known to have been reassumed in a City that had mver themselves tasted it, but had only a me mory kept alive bow their Fathers loved it, and once recovered, they have preserved it with all obstinacy and hazard, and had they not been put in mind of it by their Anceftors, the public Palaces, the Seats of the Magistracy, and the Badges of the free Orders would have recalled to memory, things which with all earnefine of defire must needs be again wished for by Citizens. What can yau pretend your Ad shall be, to counterpoise the sweetness of Liber ty, or to extinguish in men a defire of return

1

i

t

C

- f

Ш

low ide.

10

feat

ene-

alf.

vent

High

mil

ben

t be evil

Tarre

i bit

nrain

ill be

abh

Li

110WH

d me-

mr-

ball

ben blick

d the

alle inej

y all

All

ing

ing to their former freedom? the adding all Tuscany to this Dominion would not do it: m! though you should every day return triumphant over our enemies, for the Glory of all this would not accrue to us, but to you; and though your manners were hely, your deportment kind and your judgment just yet would not all these be sufficient to install you in the peoples love; nay if you think they could free you from their bate, you would be deceived, for to bim that's accustomed to live unbound. Fetters of Gold are beavy, and Silken Cords pinch; besides, for a good Prince violently to detain a Government, is impossible for it betomes a necessity that be either grow violent too. or that one or both run to ruine: You must therefore resolve either with an extremity of violence to keep in awe this City (which, Cittadels, Guards, nor Forreign Friends will not be enough to do) or else content your self with that Authority we have given you, to which we exhart you by remembring that that Dominion only is durable, which is voluntary, and do not (blinded by a little Ambition) be hurried into that Precipice, where not being able either to stand or climb higher, you must needs to your own, and our great damage fall. These words did not at all move the ob- The Duke durate heart of the Duke, who told them with the that it was not his intention to take away Lords the Liberty of the City, but restore it, for disunited Cities only were flaves, but united free. That if Florence by his means were delivered from Ambition, Parties and Factions, Ff 2

Factions, he should not take any away, but give it new freedom, that not of his own ambition, but the intercession of many Citizens led him to this attempt, and therefore they would do well to content themfelves with what others consented to : as for the dangers which he might possibly encounter he contemned them, for it was the part of a dishonest man to leave doing good for fear of evil and of a coward to give over a glorious enterprise, because the event was doubtful; but he hoped to carry himself fo, that they in a short time should believe they had trufted him too little, and feared him too much: whereupon the Lords agreed, (feeing they could do no other ways) that the morning following the people should affemble in the place before their Palace, by whose Authority they would give the Duke the Government for one year, with the same conditions were once given to Charles Duke of Calabria. It was the eighth day of September, and in the year 1342, that the Duke accompanied by Meffer John de Tofa, and all his conforts, and many other Citizens went to the place, and together with the Lords went up to the Ringbiera (fo they call the platform at the foot of the Palace of the Lords) where they read to the people the agreements made between him and the Senators; but when they came to the reading of that passage, that for one year they gave him the Government, the people cryed out amain, For Life

The Duke of Arbeni made Lord of Florence.

the

off ed

an

60

pie lac

VC:

thi

to

ve the ber

Go

ple

th

an

be

CII.

but

own

Ci-

ere-

em-

: 25

en-

the

ocd

ver

Was

nfelf

ieve

ared

sa-

ther

oeo-

heir

uld

one

nce

Was

ear

lef-

and

ind

the

the

ere

ade

nen

ge,

rn-

For

ife

Life, for Life; and Francisco Rustichegli one of the Senate rifing to speak, and mitigate he tumult, his words were drowned with he out-cryes of the people, so that by the peoples consent not only for a year, but for er, he was chosen Lord, and taken and arried through the multitude, who ecchoed out his name through the whole City. It scustomary that he who has the Guard of the Palace should in the absence of the Seators be lock'd within it, and Riveri de Gotto now had that charge, he corrupted by the Dukes Friends, without any violence offered, let him in, and the Senarors daunted and dismayed, returned to their houses, and their Palace was by the Dukes Family ack'd, the Standard of the people torn in piece, and his Arms let flye upon the Paaces, which was look'd upon with extreme vexation and grief by all good men, but with great delight by those who either through ignorance or malice had confented to it. The Duke thus possessed of the Go- The Duke vernment, to take away all Authority from makes new those who had used to be defenders of Li- and annuls berty, prohibited the Lords from meeting old ones. in the Palace, and affigned them a private house, took away the Standards from the Gonfalonieres of the Companies of the people, annulled the orders of Justice against the Nobles, fet all prisoners free, recalled the Bardi and Frescobaldi from Banishment, and forbid any one carrying Arms: and the better to defend himself from those within, Ff 2 made

Inftitutions,

made friends of those without : Highly o. bliged the Aretines, and all other Towns Subject to Florence , made peace with the Pifans, though he was made Prince to continue the war with them. Took the affigurents from those Merchants, who in the war of Lucca had lent the Commonwealth money: Increased the old Taxes and imposed new, deprived the Lords of all their Authority, and his chief Rectors of Ministers were Meffer Baglione of Perugia, Meffer William of Seefi, from whom, and Messer Cerettieri Bildomini, he took counsel, The Taxes he had laid upon the Citizens were heavy, and his judgements unjust, and all that uprightness and humanity he had feigned, was turned into cruelty and pride; and that he might not govern better without than within, he constituted fix Rectors or Governours over the Country. who rob'd, fpbil'd and oppressed, the Country people. He grew jealous of the Nobles, though they had been so assistant to him; and that he had reflored many of them to their Country, for he could not imagine that generous fouls, who used to live as a free Nobility, could be content to obey him. He therefore addicted himself to oblige the Plebeians, hoping by their favour and forreign force to maintain his Tyranny. And when the Month of May was come, in which the people used to fealt, he formed several Companies of the Plebeians, and meanest of the people, of whom one

C III

Wing

the

-do

36-

Xes.

of

s of

and fet.

ens uf.

he

nd

et4

6 x

n-o-

to

of ot

to

lf

S

me part went feafting throughout the City, and the other with great pomp received the Feafters. As foon as the Fame of his new Lordship was spread abroad, many of the French Nation addressed themselves to him, to all which he gave employs as the people he had the most considence in : So that Florence in a short time became not only subject to the French, but even to their Habits and Customs: for the Men and Women, without any respect to civility orshame, followed their Fashions; but that which fretted mens minds most of all, were the violences offered by him and his, to women. Thus then the Citizens lived full of inward indignation, feeing the Majesty of the State mined, it's Orders destroyed, it's Laws annulled, and all honest conversation corrupted, all civil modefly extinguished; for those who used never to see any Regal Pomp, could not but with grief behold themselves in every street, encompassed with Guards of Horse and Foot; and that which made their grief and shame more poinant, was that they were to honour him, whom they above all the world hated: To which fear and terror was added, feeing the frequent Executions and continual Taxes, wherewith he confumed and impoverished the City, which fear and indignation of the people were well known and dreaded by the Duke, yet he made no show, but feemed still to believe himself beloved: Whence it happened that Matthew Morozzo, Ff 4

either to gratifie him, or free or rescue himfelf from the danger, having discovered how the Family of the Medici, and some others had conspired against him. The Duke not only forbore making any inquifition into the matter; but put the informer to a miserable death: by which act he discouraged those that would have given him advice how to secure himself, and created intelligence to those who fought his ruine, He likewise caused Bertini Cini's tongue to be cut out, and that with so much cruelty that he dyed of it, only for railing at the Taxes he had imposed on the people, which barbarifms begot heart-burnings in the Citizens, and extrem batred of the Duke: for that City which had lived under a Custom of doing and faying any thing they pleased, could not endure to have their hands bound, and their mouths flopt. In short, these disgusts and animosities grew to that height that not the Florentines only (who neither know how to be free, and yet cannot endure to serve)but the most servile Nation in the world would have hazarded all to have regained their freedom; and thereupon mamy Citizens of all qualities, resolved either to recover their Liberty, or lose their lives. And in three parts by three forts of Citizens, three conspiracies were formed, to wit, of the Nobles, Merchants and Mechanicks, moved (belides the universal and general cause) from the Nobles thinking they had not advanced the State, nor theinfelyes

Three Confpiracies at once against the Duke.

dich

IK

red

The

iiG-

ner

dif

im

ted

ne,

to

the

ich

iti-

for .

m

d,

id,

efe

ht,

II

in

ve

éţ

O

n

in it : The Merchants that they had loft its and the Artificers that they wanted trading. Meller Agnolo Acciarvolo was now Arch-bithop of Florence, who in all his Sermons had magnified the Dukes actions, and made him gracious in the eyes of the people, But now fince he faw him Lord, and beheld his Tyrannies, he was conscious to himself of being a betrayer of his Country. And to gain absolution for that fault, he believed the best remedy was, that the hand which had made the wound should heal it; and of the chief and strongest comspiracy, became himself the Head: In which were the Bardi, Roffi, Frescobaldi, Scali, Altoviti, Magolotti, Strozzi, and Mancini; of the second were Chiefs Messer Manno, and Corfo Donati, and with them the Pazzi, Caviciuli, Cerchi and Albizzi; Of the third was Head Antonio Adimari, and with him the Medici, Bordini, Rucellai, and Aldobrandini. These last thought to have flain him near the Palace of the Albizzi, where, ras it was imagined he was to come and fee a Horse-race; But he not going thither Sthat failed; they determined then to affault him as he paffed about the City: But this was found difficult, because he always went well guarded and armed, and every day changed his walk, fo that it was impossible to lye in ambush for him in any certain place: They confulted also to kill him in Council, but 'twas then sonfidered, that though they should effect it,

his

fer

H

fo

h

21

Of

ch

T

di

-

el

t

t

b

-

t

1

it, the conspirators must remain at the difcretion of his Guards. Whilft thefe things were debated amongst the conspirators, Antonio Adimari discovered the whole matter to fome of his Friends at Siena (hoping to gain some aid from thence) openly declaring to them that part of the conspirators, and affuring them the whole City was disposed to regain their lost Liberty. Whereupon one of them disclosed the matter to Francisco Brunelleschi , not out of intention to discover it, but out of a belief that he was likewise of the plot. Brunel leschi terrified for himself, and hating the others, told all to the Duke; whereupon Pagolo de Mazzecchi, and Simon de Monte reppoli were taken; who confessing the quantity and quality of the Conspirators, affrighted the Duke, and he was advised that he should rather send for them friendly than arrest them; for if they fled, he might without any scandal or dishonour secure himself by their banishment. The Duke there fore fent for Antonio Adimari, who confident of his companions immediately appeared; and he being detained, the Duke was by Meffer Francisco Brunelleschi, and Messer Uguecione, Buondelmome advised that he should with his Soldiers scoure the ffreets, and whoever he took put to death: but this way he could not approve of, judging his Forces too few for fuch an adventure, he pitcht therefore on another, which if it succeeded, made him secure of his

The plot lifcovered. II.

IG

igs

n-

ter

to

le-

ra-

Vas

re-

ter

in-

icf

el.

he

Off

rete

he

ed ed

lly

ht

31

re-

f-

p-

ke

nd

at

he

14

x,

an

r,

is

his enemies, and ftrengthened his own power. The Duke had made it a Custom when any matter of weight occurred to fend for the Citizens, and ask their advice. Having therefore now first fent out to get forces in readiness, he makes a lift of three hundred Citizens, and fends out his Seriemes to warn them in under pretence of advifing with them; defigning when he had once got them in his clutches, either to put them to death, or closely imprison them. The detainour of Anthony Adimari, and the drawing together of his forces, which could not be kept fecret, fo startled the Citizens, especially the guilty, that the boldest of them denyed to appear. And because every one had read the lift, they went to feek each other out, heartning themselves up rather to dye like men with Arms in their bands, then be led like Sheep to the flaughter: fo that in few hours every party of the Conspirators had discovered their intentions one to the other, and determined the day following, which was the 26 of July 1343, to raife a Tumult in the old Market, and thereupon taking arms, call out the people to Liberty. And accordingly the next day at nine a clock, the time appointed, they all took Arms, and the people likewife at the cry of Liberty armed themfelves, and each party fortified themselves in their own Streets under Banners, with the peoples Arms in them, which the Conspirators, had caused privily to be made:

1343.

All

Ma

fen

he

the

ftir

he

hin

of

lab

Fo

Me

bet

pe

all

W

tec

He

th

m

op

ar

th

ar

C

D

th

at

p

f

n

2

t

All the Heads of the Families, as well Nobles as people met and swore to their own defence, and the death of the Duke (except only some of the Buondelmonti and Cavalcanti, and those four Families of the Commons, that had confented to make him Lord, who together with the Beccai, and the Rabble of the people, ran armed into the Piazza to defend the Duke.) Upon this rumour the Duke fortifies the Palace, and his men that were lodged in divers parts came out mounted on Horse-back to get into the Piazza, and in feveral places, were met with, fought and flain; yet about three hundred Horse got thither. The Duke was in doubt whether he should fally out and fight his enemies, or defend himfelf in the Palace. On the other fide, the Medici Cavicciulli Ruccellai, and other Families, which had been most oppressed by him, doubting left if he should issue out, many that had taken Arms against him would revolt, and prove his friends, refolving to deprive him of that opportunity of adding to his power, made head and affaulted the Palace : Upon their advancing, those Families of the Commons, which had fided with the Duke, seeing him thus briskly affaulted, changed their minds, fince the Duke had changed his fortune, and all joyned with the Citizens, fave only Uguecione Buondelmonte, who went to the Palace, and John Cavalcanti, who retreating with fome of his conforts into the New Market

III.

well

hetr

uke

and

the

nim

and

nto

noc

ce,

ers

ck,

es,

out

ike

out

elf

Ic-

ni-

by

ıt,

r.

ty id

r.

11

MU

Market, leaping upon a stall, intreated the cople, who paffed armed by towards the Piezza, that they would undertake the defence of the Duke, and to frighten them, he boafted his own power, and threatned them all with death, if they continued obfinate to oppose their Lord; but finding he neither could get any of them to follow him, nor that any of them took notice of his infolence to chaftife it; feeing his abour in vain, he would no longer tempt Fortune, but retired to his own house. Mean while the Bickering in the great place, between 'the forces of the Duke and the people was hot; and though the Palace gave all the aid it could to the Dukes party, they were overcome, and fome of them submitted to their enemies, and others, leaving their Horses in the Palace fled. Whilst they thus fought in the Piazza: Corfo, and Amerighe Donati of the peoples fide, broke open the Stinche, burnt the Mayors Recods, and those of the publick Chamber, fack'd the houses of the Rectors or Governours, and all those Ministers of the Dukes they could light on they flew. Mean while the Duke feeing he had loft the Piazza, had all the City his enemies, and no hopes of help attempted by an act of kindness to gain the people: And fending for the Prisoners, with lweet and obliging words he released them, making Antonio Adimari (though much against his will) Knight, he eaused his Arms to be taken down from the Palace, and put

COL

cet

tit the

W

面由

ha

ta

fil

to

ti

d

.

6

d

1

1

3

The Citizens take order to new, model the State.

up those of the people: Which things be ing done too late, and out of due order, forced and done by conftraint flood him in little fread; for he had fill the discontent to behold himself close blieged in the Palace, and to confider that by grasping too much he had loft all, and must in few days dye either by Famine or the Sword. The Citizens to give form again to their State, retired to Santia Reparata, and created fixteen Citizens, one half of the Nobles, the other of the People, who together with the Archbishop had all manner of Authority given them to new Model the State, they likewife chose fix to execute the office of Potestà or Mayor till one should be chosen. There were come into Florence to aid the people many from other parts, among which were divers from Siena with fix Ambaffadours, men much honoured in their Country. These mediated some agreement between the Duke and People. But the people refused all manner of accord, unless first they had delivered up into their hands Meffer William Scefi, and his Son, together with Meffer Cerettieri Bisdomini. To this the Duke would not confent; but at length threatned by the people befieged with him, he yielded. Certainly the spite appears greater, and the wounds are more ghaltly that are made by a people, recovering their Liberty, than by those defending it. Meffer William and his Son, were delivered as a prey to thousands of their enemies, his H

bel

r, w

niñ

tent

Pa-

ton lays

Ci

re-

IXe

the

the

rity hey

et en.

the

ong

m-

reit

-99

But

ID-

cir

to-

To

at

ed ite

me

1

1

is

his Son not yet eighteen years of age; yet The barbaould neither his youth, beauty, nor inno of the pear cence fave him from the fury of the mul- ple. fitude; they fell npon them both, and those who could not wound them living, wounded them dead; nor was their cruelty latified with hewing them in pieces with their fwords, but they tore them with their hands and teeth; and that all their fenfes might bear a part in their revenge, having first heard their groans, seen their wounds, touched their torn limbs; they would likewife have their tafte gratified, that their outward parts being before fatisfied, their stomachs might be fatiated likewise: but if this outragious madness made them exceed all bounds of cruelty to those two poor Gentlemen : It was kind to Meffer Ceretieri, for the multitude tyred with executing their bloody rage upon those two, quite forgot him, who no more ask'd for, flayed ftill in the Palace, and at night was by some of his Friends and Kinsmen conveyed into a place of fafety. The people having wreakt An accord their revenge in the blood of these two, made. came to this agreement, That the Duke with all his people and goods thould depart in fafety, he renouncing all manner of claim to Florence, and that as foon as he was got out of their Dominion, he should at Casentino fign the renuntiation. In this manner on the 6th, of August he departed from Florence, accompanied by many Citizens, and at Cafentino (though very unwillingly)

The Cha-Duke of Athens .

Several Towns of the Florentines rebel

willingly) he ratified the renuntiation, nor had he kept his word, had not Count Si mon threatned to carry him back to Flarence. This Duke was (as his Government rater of the testifies) covetous and cruel, difficult of accels, and proud in his answers, he defired the flavery, not the good will of men, and therefore chose rather to be feared than loved: Nor was indeed his presence les contemptible than his manners, for he was of stature but low, and swarthy of complexion, his beard long and thin; fo that every part of him deserved hatred : and in ten months time, his evil cuttoms had driven him from that Government, which the ill counfels of others had raifed him too. These accidents happening in the City, gave opportunity to the Towns subject to the Florentines to affume their Liberty, fo that Arrezzo, Castiglione, Pistoia, Volterra, Colle, and St. Gunigiano rebelled, and the Florentines by recovering their Liberty, taught their subjects to do the like, and with the driving out of the Duke fucceeded the los of their Territories: The fixteen Citizens and the Bishop thought it more convenient to please their subjects by peace, than to make themselves enemies by war, and show'd themselves as well satisfied with their Liberty as with their own: wherefore they fent Ambassadors to Arezzo, to renounce all command they had over that City, and to make a League with them, that fince they could not value themselves upon them

h

d

H

nor

Si

Flo

ent

ac-

the

and

han

les

Was

m-

hat

ri-

he

00,

ve

he

at

11-

ht

E

u

them as subjects, they might do it as friends, with the other Towns they agreed likewife in the best manner they could, striving to keep them their friends, that they being free, might help to maintain their Liberty. This management, as it was prudently devised, foit had happy fuccels: For Arrezzo ere many years past returned under the Florentine government, and the other Towns flood out but few, months: Thus many times we the fooner and with less charge and expence obtain things by feeming to flight them, than by profecuting them with violence and obstinacy. Things, quieted thus abroad, they applyed themselves The Flores to fettle affairs at home, and after some dif- time settle butes between the Nobles and people, it was bome. concluded that the Nobles should have one third part in the Signory, and in all other offices one ball; the City was, as we have faid before, divided into fix Parts or Wards; whereupon there were fix Lords, one of every Ward chosen, unless upon some accident they chose twelve or thirteen, but foon after they were again reduced to fix; yet it was thought fit to regulate the Government in this point, as well because the Wards were not evenly distributed, as because now giving a part to the Nobles, it was convenient to encrease the number of the Lords. Wherefore they divided the City into quarters. and out of each chose three Lords or Senators, they abolished the Goufaloniers of justice, and those of the Companies of the people, and in the place of the twelve good menl, they created Eight Counsellors, four of each degree. This Gg order

New Differ tion between Nobl bility and order of Government established the City might have been quiet, if the Nobles had been content to live with that modely requifite in civil conversation, but they acted clean contrary for when private men, they would have no Companions, and when Magistrates, they would be Tyrants, and every day produced some example of their pride and infolency; which mightily difgusted the people, who were grieved to fee that for one Tyrant deftroyed, thousand were sprung up. Thus insolency on the one fide, and regret on the other dayly increafing, the heads of the people represented to the Bilhop the haughty deportment of the Nobles, and their scornful carriage towards their fellows in office, and therefore perswaded him to mediate a way that the Nobles might be content with other offices, and leave the Magiffracy of the Signory to the people only. The Biftop was naturally just but good natured, caffe to be turned to one fide or the other, which made him first at the instance of some of that Princes friends favour the Dake of Athens, and afterwards by the infligation and advice of fome Citizens conspire against him : he had in the reformation of the State favoured the Nobles, and now thought fit to favour the people, moved by the reasons alleadged by those popular Citizens, and thinking to find in others the fame un! stedfastness himself was subject to, perswaded to bring the matter to agreement, and fummoning the fixteen whose Authority was not yet extinct, in the best manner he could he exhorted them to yield the administration of the Sig-

The Bishop for the Com mons.

nory

pory to the people, promising thereby the quiet

of the City, or otherwise its ruine and destructi-

ht

7-

i

10

d

h

te

and to de state of the h

2

d

d

ĝ

V

0

ti

on. This discourse strangely incensed the Nobles, and Meffer Ridophus de Bardt with bitter words reproved him, calling him a man of little faith, and reproaching his friendship to the Duke as fickle, and his conspiracy against him as traiterous, concluding that those bonors which they had with danger gained, they would, though with danger defend, and departing with the others enraged at the Bilhop, he gave account of what had paffed to his companions, and to all the Families of the Nobles, the Commons likewife told their minds to the others: and while the Nobles were forming forces to defend their Authority, the people thought not fit to flay till they were got in order, but run armed to the Palace, crying out that they would have the Nobles renounce the Magistracy, the tumult and noise was great, and the Lords chosen from among the Nobles faw themselves forsaken; for the Nobles feeing all the people in Arms durft not come out, but every one kept within their houses; so that the popular Lords having first used means to quiet the people, affirming their Colleagues to be good and modest men, not able

to prevail upon less terms, they fent them home

to their own houses, whither with much ado

they were brought with fafety: the Nobles thus

thrust out of the Palace, they took away the of-

fice likewise from the four noble Counsellors, and afterwards made twelve, all of the people;

and to the eight Lords that remained, they made a Goufaloniere of Justice, and fixeen Standard-

He is tharpy reproved by Ridolpho

Gg 2

bearers

2

H th

et as

th he

T

k

CE

bearers of the Companies of the people, and in fuch manner reformed the Councils that the whole power of Government remained in the arbitriment of the people. When these things happened there was a great scarcity in the City. fo that both the Nobles and the poorer fort of people were at once discontented, these for hunger, those for having loft their Authority; which accident encouraged Meffer Andrea Strozzi to Attempt of hope he might usurp over the Liberty of the Ch ty: he fold his corn at a much cheaper rate than

The foolith Strozzi.

others, whereupon multitudes flocked to he house, so that he took at last the boldness to mount one thorning on horseback, and with some of these behind him to call the people to Arms and in a little time got together above four thosfand men, with which he marched to the Palace of the Lords, and demanded entrance, but the Lords with threats and arms beat him off the place, and by Proclamation fo terrified the perple, that by little and little every one went home to his own house, leaving Messer Andrea alone, who very hardly by flight escaped out of the Magistrates hands. This accident though rash Tie Nobles and foolish in it felf, yet made the Nobles hope they might one day force the people, fince the Plebeian rabble were at discord with them, and that they might not lose this occasion they refolved to strengthen themselves with all affittances possible, to regain by reasonable force what by unjust force had been taken from them; and into fuch a confidence of victory they grew, that they publickly provided Arms, fortifyed their houses, and sent to their friends in Lombardy

TI.

d di

the

the

ings

ity,

t of

uns

nich

i to

C

han

his

s to

ome

ms

00-

lace

the

the

-000

ome

one,

the

rafh

ope

nd

ro-

an-

nis

w,

8 E S

ambardy for aid : The people likewife together and the th the Lords made their provisions, arming people also hemfelves, and demanding affiltance from Scient and Perugia: and now the friends of eier fide appeared : the whole City was in arms. the Nobles had on the largest fide of the City made head in three places, at the house of the Covisceiulli, near S. Johns, at the house of the Pazsiand Donati at great S. Peters, and at that of the Cavalcanti in the New Market. Those on the other fide Arno, had fortifyed themselves on the bridges, and in the streets where their houses flood; the Nerli defended the Bridge of Conraia, the Frescobaldi and Mannelli that of the Holy Trinity, the Roff and Bardi the old Bridge, and that of Rubicome: on the other fide the Commons were affembled under the Standard of Julice, and the Banners of the Companies of the people; and things being in this posture, the people thought not fit any longer to defer the scuffle, the first that moved were the Medici and Rondinelli, who affaulted the Caviaccinli at the entrance from S. Johns place to their houses, here the skirmish was hot, because from the Towers they were pelted with Stones, and from below wounded with Cross-bows. This Battle lafted three hours, and frill the people increased, to that at length the Caviacciuli sceing themelves oppressed by multitudes, and no succour coming grew faint and yielded themselves to the power of the people, who faved for them their Goods and Houses, only took away their arms, which they divided among fuch of their Friends and Kindred, among the Commons as were dif-Lide Fort armed

armed: having in the hift affault come of Victors, they next fell upon the Donari and Poswi, whom they eafily overcome, being much weaker than the former, there remained no on that fide the river the Cavalenni only, whe were very frong both in men and feituation notwithstanding seeing all the Standards march against them (when three of them only had conquered the other) without making any great defence they yielded: now were three parts of the City in the peoples hands, there remained only one in the hands of the Nobles, but the the hardest to come by, as well by reason of the ftrength of those that defended it, as for its feltuation, being fenced with the river Arms for that there was 'no way but forcing the Bridges which were fortified in the manner before described, yet the old Bridge was first stormed. which was gallantly defended, for the Towers were armed, the passages barr'd, and the Tunipikes guarded with flout and couragious men, to that the people with great loss were repulfed, feeing therefore here their labour lot they next affaulted the Bridge Rubiconte, but finding the same difficulty, leaving a Guard of four Colours to keep these two Posts, they alfaul d the Caraia, and though the Nerli man fully defend it, they could not fullain the hod of the people, this Bridge for want of Towers to defended it) being the weakest, and the Cappor and other Families of the Commons, affaulting them behind, so that oppressed on every side they forfook their Turnpikes, and gave way to the people, who after this overcame the Rolli and Frescobaldi

th

the saw the same of the same o

al-nun-och

pan ting

fide

y to

baldi

Piefesbaldi for now all the people on that fide am joined with the Conquerours, there then remained only the Burds, whom deither the rul ne of the reft, nor the uniting of the whole people, nor the fmall hopes they had of any fuccour could terrifie, but they chofe rather to die with their Arms in their hands, and fee their houses fack'd and burne, than submit themselves to the differention of their enemies; and fo obtiintely defended they themselves," that the people feveral times attempted in vain to beat them other from the old Bridge, or the Rabaconte but were fill with the Anughter, and wounding of many of their men repulled. There had fome time before been a ffreet made, which led from the Roman way by the houles of the Paris to the wall upon S. Georges hill, by this way the people fent fix Colours with orders to give the affault on the back-fide of the Bordes Houses his made their hearts fail them, and gave the people an intire victory, for when those who ad the guard of the Turnpikes heard their hous The people is were affaulted, they abandoned their Poffs. and ran to defend them; thus the Turnpike on the old Bridge was taken, and the Burk or to flight on all fides, who by the growing lanzamefi and Mozzi were received, buv the cople (especially the rabble) greedy of prey poiled and facked their houses, and pulled own, and burnt their Palaces with fo much disempered rage & madness, that the most despiteall enemy of the Florentine name, would have blush'd to have made such ruines. The Nobles thus overcome, the people reformed their State ; and

The people gain ablo-

and because there were three degrees of people the rich the middle fort and the Plebeis they ordained that the richest Rank of Citizen should have two chosen to fit in the Signor the middle fort three, and the poor the like, an the Gonfaloniere was fometimes of one, and fornetimes of the other, belides all the Laws gainst the Nobles were re-enacted, and to weaken them the more, many of them were ranked and mixed among the people. ruine of the Nobles was fo great and fo depref fed their party, that never afterwards durft the take Arms against the people, but lived ever a ter more humble and submittive; by which means Florence grew vile and abject, losing both its reputation in matter of Arms, and all Generolity of menners. The City after this blow lived in quiet till the year 1543, in the courled which time bappened that memorable Pestilence which John Beceafe has described with so much Eloquence and in which Florence loft nines fix thousand souls. The Florentines likewil made the first war with the Viscenti occasiona by the Ambition of the Arch-Bilhop th Prince of Milan; and though the Nobility w deftroyed yet Fortune failed not by new di fions, to create new troubles, has in her cole (especially the rabble) greedy of prey

allid and facked, ther houses, and pulled

end and burnt their faltees with fo much di-UAT toll rage & madnef that the melt despiteC

hereast of the Floresime name, would have

for

mou

econie, the people reformed dishes and

ATT OF

VIII



FLORENTINE HISTORY:

Written by
Nicholas Machiavel,
Girizen and Secretary of Florence,

The Third Book.



HE natural and implacable Enmities between the Nobles and Common people, occasioned by the desire those have to Command, and the regret these have

to Obey, are the only Fountains from which all the Miferies which befal a City fow. For, from this contradiction of Humours, all other diffurbances in a Common-

Aaa

wealth

ic o

wealth take their fource and ftream: This divided Rome, and this (if it may be permitted to compare great things with finell) has kept Florence in division; albeit in either of those Cities divers effects were produced. For the quarrels which first happened in Kame, between the Common people and the Nobles, were decided with Words, but those in Florence with Swords Those of Rome were determined by a Law, but those of Florence with the flaughter and banishment of many of the Citizens. The Romans still rife and advanced in Military virtuesbut the Florentines quite min'd it. The Romans from an Equality among their Citizens, reduced them to degrees of great Disequality; those of Florence from a great Difequality, to a firstige and monfirous Equality. Which diversity of effects must of necessity, have been produced from the different ends those people proposed to themselves: for the people of Rome only defired to enjoy the Supream honours to gether with the Nobles; The Plorentian on the contrary, fought to have the Government in their hands only , without admit ting the Nobles to any share. And becan the defires of the people of Rome were more reasonable, the offences of the Nobles became more supportable, and that Nobility, without coming to Extremities, complyed fo, that after any disagreement it was but making a Law to fatishe the People, and the Nobles Itill preferved their Dignity.

Dignity. On the other fide, the defires of e People of Florence were injurious and all which constrained the Nobility wish all their power, to fland upon their defence, whence proceeded fuch effution of blood, and binithment of the Chiters: and those Laws afterwards enacted, had no respect to Publick good, but were wholly made in favour of the Conquerour. Hence likewife it proceeded, that the people of Rome fill increased their Virtue with their Victories; for the people being equally admitted, with the Nobles, to all employ ments in the City, Camp and Government, frove likewife to arrive at the fame desice of virtue with them? whereby that City (increasing in Virtue) increased likewise in Power: But in Florence the People overcoming, the Nobles were deprived of all Rule, and to regain it, were constrained in their deportment, in their mind, and in their manner of living, not only to affirmelate themselves to , but be indeed like the Plabeinus; whence enfired the changing of Coats of Arms, and alterations of the Tities of Families, which the Nobles funditted to , to level themselves with the Poople; whetchy that valour in War , add gonerofity of mind, once in the Genery, was quite exclusionithed, and in the people who never had any, it was impossible to kindle it. So that Florence from there to time because fill more vile and abject and whereit Rome conversing He Virtile litto. Pille, hid brought

Pro-

peowith

rds.

aw.

hter

CIIS.

in'd

heir

reat

reat

E.

oul

the

to

mly

to

nes

はは一番はいる

co-

Machivel's Hiftery Book III.

brought it felf to those terms, that without having a Prince it could not longer support its own Greatness; Florence was fallen 6 low, that any prudent Lawgiver might model it into what form of Government he pleafed. Which things, by reading the former Book, may in part be clearly discerned; and having already shewn. The foundations of its Liberty, with the causes of its Divifions; and how the Factions of the Nobility and people, ended with the Tyranny of the Duke of Athens, and the ruine of the Gentry, there remains still to recount the Pickeerings between the Citizens and Plebeians, and what effects they produced. The power of the Nobility tamed, and the War with the Arch-Bilhop of Millan ended, one would have thought there had not been left in Florence any occasion of scandal or divition; but the ill fortune of our City, and its want of good Orders, permitted a difference to arise between the Families of the Albizi and Ricci, which divided Florence no less; than that first of the Ba ondelmonti and Uberti, and afterwards of the Donati and Cerebi had done it. The Popes, whose Seat was now in France, and the Emperours, whose constant residence was now in Germany, to maintain their Reputation in Italy, at divers times had of divers Nations, fent multitudes of Souldiers thither: Infomuch, that at this time there were English, Dutch, Britans, and many others. Thefe (the Wars ended) being left without

Enmity between the Albizi and the Ricci in Florence.

I

ner of Fortune, forced now one Prince, and then another, to come to Compolition with

them. And in the year 1353, comes one of these Companies into Juseany, commanded by Monfigneur Reale, a Provincial,

o-he d;

ut

nt 6

vioiof he

int nd ed. he

ed, not ın-

our nit-

niled

of The

and nce Ro-

di-

icrs cre

0

out

whole coming frightned all the Cities of that Province; and Florence did not only on the account of the Publick make provifion of Defence, but many private Citizens, and among them, the Albigiand Ricci took Arms for their particular fafety. Thele two had an implacable grudge in their hearts, and contrived all ways (the better to raife themselves to the Principality.) how to oppress each other; but yet they had not proceeded to blows, only they contended in the Magistracy, and in the Counsel. The City then being, upon this occasion, all in Arms, there happened a Fray in the Old Market, where multitudes of People (as is usual in like cases) were affembled, and the Noise increasing, word was carried to the A fight Ricei, that the Albizi would affault them; like to and to the Albizi, that the Ricci were com- a falle ing to fall upon them. Upon which the Rumour. whole City rife, and the Magistrates had much ado to restrain either of the Families, or hinder that fight, which by chance only, and neither Parties fault, was falfly rumoured. This accident (though a flight one) added fuel to the fire of their fecret anger and malice; making each Party with more diligence endeavour and feek to gain him-

Aaa 3

felf

felf Affociates and Friends. And because the Citizens, by the ruine of the Great me were reduced to fuch an equality, that the Magistrates were had in much greater Reverence than before; they resolved by the ordinary way, vvithout any particular vielence to oppress each other. We have declared before, that after the victory of Charles the first, the Magistracy was created vyholly out of the faction of the Guelfer, so great authority had they gained over the Gbibellines; but Time, various Accidents, and new Divilions, had so blotted out the memory of that Institution, that many descended from the Ghibellines, got to be of the prime Ministers of State. Whereupon Uguccio de Ricci laboured so get the Law against the Gbibellines renewed , the Albizi (according to the opinion of many) being descendants of that Faction; their Family having many years before, been Natives of Azezze, and from thence come to dwell at Florence. Upon which Uguesia thought, that by renewing that Law he should thrust the Albixi from the Magis stracy, concluding himself from that Clause That any one descended from a Gbibelline should be condemned, if he took upon him the office of a Magistrate. This design being discovered to Peter the Son of Philip of the Albizi, he determined to second it, least by fingly approving it, he should declare himself a Ghibelline. And this Law, thus

(by the others Ambition) revived, inflese

24

taking away, added seputation to Peter The Laws things; but was the cause of many mil- quiette hiefs that enficed. For no Law can be revived. more hurtful and dangerous to a Common-wealth, than that which looks into times pafi: Peter therefore by favouring the revival of this Law, made what his Enemies defiened a hindrance to be a ftep to his Greatness; for becoming Principal of this new Order, he ever after affumed more Authority , being the fole Favourite of this neve faction of Guelfes. And because no Magistrate was appointed to fearch out who were Obibellines, and fo this Law became of little flead, he took order that the Captains were appointed to make Inquitition after the Ghitellines, and having found them out, admonish them, that they should not take any Magistracy upon them; hence all these in Flurence, vvho were made incapable of bearing any Office, were called Ammoniti (or the Admonifhed.) The Captains in a what and hort time grown bold in their neve Charge, without any kind of respect, not only admonished those who deserved it, but whoever they thought fit; as their Avaries or Ambition led them. And, from the Year 1357, when this Order first began, to 1357. the Year 1366, above two hundred Citizens yvere admonished. Whereby, the Captains, and the Faction of the Guelfer, weere become so potent, that every one honoured them for fear of being admonished; and especially the Heads of them, which were Aaa4

の他の大きなのでは、ないは、ないでは、ないでは、ない。

Peter Albizi, Meffer Lapo de Caftiglionchi

a supplied

ABVIVO:

and Charles Strongi. And though this infolent kind of proceeding displeased many, yet none were more afflicted than the Rice, conscious to themselves of being the Authors of this diforder; by which they beheld the Commonwealth ruined, and their Enemies (the Albizi) contrary to their intent, grown more powerful. Wherefore Uguccio de Ricci coming to be one of the Lords, strove to put an end to those miferies, which he and his Affociates had given a beginning to: And by a new Law provided, that to the fix Captains of the Wards three should be added; of which, two to be chosen amongst the meanest Handicrasts enacting ... That all declared Ghibellines should by twenty four Citizens, Guelfes, deputed in manner of a Grand Jury, be confirmed by full Verdict; Whereby the Captains Authority was somewhat qualified, and the trick of Admonishing began to grow cold: however the Factions of the Albizi and Kirei stood each upon their Guard, and in all Laws, Enterprizes or Counfels, were out of a particular hate, to each other contradi-Ctory. Under these distempers they laboured from the Year 1366 to 1371, when the Faction of the Guelfes recovered in

power. There was of the Family of the Buondelmonti a Cavalier called Messer Berchi, who for his Valour in the War against the Pisair, was made one of the people, and consequently capable of being elected.

Deuccio de Ricci ftrives 10 m itigate

1371.

and

W

G

cei,

la. be-

icir

inone

the

ife-

vcn

WIirds

o to

afts.

tes .

pu-

TIMains

the old:

Kir.

all

it of

adi-

100

hen

15 the

Ben-

ainít ple,

ted.

and

nd litting among the Senators: but when expected to take his place in the Signory. Law was made, that no Noble-man, though made one of the people, should exercise that Office. This act mightily mgred Meffer Benchi, and joyning himeff with Peter Albizi, they determined with the admonition, to crulh the meaner people, and keep the whole Government to themselves. And by virtue of the favour Meffer Benchi had with the Ancient Nobility, and Peter Albizi with the powerful Commons, they revived the power of the Guelph Faction, and by a new Reformation of the Wards, ordered matters for that the Captains and twenty four Citizens were it their dispose: So, that now they grew bolder with their Admonitions than ever before, and the House of the Albixi, as heads of this Faction, fill grew greater. On the other fide . The Ricci, with their Colleagues, were not wanting to hinder their proceedings as much as in them lay; to that both lived in continual jealousie, each daily fearing their ruine : For these Causes; many of the Citizens, flirred up out of love to their Country, met together in the of the Church of St. Peter Scheraggio; and rea- Commons foning about these disorders among them-present flives, the Senate came thither, to whom, dilogden. one of the greatest Authority amongst them, fpoke in manner following. We were The Stand many of us doubtful, most Worthy Lords, of one of of affembling our selves together upon a them to Publick the Lords.

Publick occasion by private orders, thin ing we might be centured as too prefum tuous, or condemned as too Ambitious but confidering that many Citizens, with out any notice taken of them, not for am Publick benefit, but to Catistie their own private Ambition, do daily in Streets an Houses conferr together: We judged, The if they who affembled themselves to con fult the ruine of the Common-wealth are not afraid, they ought less to stand in fear whole meeting is deligned for Publick good and advantage; nor care we what others judge of us, fince they effeem not fat all our Cenfures of them. That love (most Worthy Lords) which we bear our *Country first affembled us here, and has now invited you hither, to reason of those Mischiefs already grown too great amon us, and which violently increase in this our Republick, and to offer you our allifrance to remedy them. In which, you may (though the undertaking be difficult) fucceed, if laying afide private Interest, you will with publick Power make use of your Authority. The common diftemper of all the Cities of Italy, has (Worthy Lords) infected, and does still infect our City: for fince this Province withdrew it felf from under the yoak of the Empire, the Cities in it (for want of a powerful bridle to curb them) have not ordered their Estates and Government as free, but like people divided into Sects and

11

Factions: Hence forme all those Mifand all those Disoplers which affice friendship among the Cirizens, unless mong those, sombined together in some private Malice, or wickedness against their country. And all fear of God, and refeet to Religion, being banifhed from among men, Oaths and Faith-plighted are come of no farther avail, than as they redound to Profit and Men make use of them, not to keep them, but that they may with more facility deceives and the more cane and fecure the sheat is, the more glory and praise is gained: Thus Wicked men are applauded as Industrious. and the Good reproached as Fools. And the truck is, that in whatever ; either of it felf is Infectious; or can infect others is crouded and amailed together. The Young men are Idle, and the Old Lafeivious; and every Sex, and every Age is corrupted with avil Manners : to which, good Laws (over-miled by bad Cuffomes) can afford no remedy, Hence arises that Avaries we behold in our Citizens; and that appenie. not of true Glory, but of reproachful Honours, which beget hate, enmity, diftord and faction; and thefe are the Parents of Death, banishinent, oppression of Good men , and exaltation of Bad. For the Good, relying upon their Innocency, feek not like the Wicked extraordinary means of Defence and Honour, and fo, undefended and

THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF

and unregarded, are ruined. From Exit 'ple of which springs the love of Partie and the fame creates their power; for the wicked out of Avarice and Ambition, and the good out of necessity follow them and what is most of all pernicious is , it fee the Authors and movers of thefe ditions cloak their ends and intention with a pious Name; for though they be 'all enemies of Liberty, they all oppress under colour of fetting up an Aristocracy or a Democracy. For the reward of Vi ctory which they aim at, is not, to have the glory of having freed the City, but the latisfaction of having o'recome others and usurged the Principality; whither having once reached, what Act is there to unjust, so cruel, or so Avaritious, which they will not attempt. Thus Laws and Ordinances are made for private, not for publick Interest. Hence War, and Peace and Alliances are contracted, not for general Glory, but particular fatisfaction and if other Cities are fullied with thele 'spots, outs is blotted all over; for the Laws, Statutes, and Civil Edicts, are not made or enacted in order to the people freedom, but according to the Ambition of that Party has got the upper hand; whence it follows, that one Party driven out, and one Faction extinct, another prefently starts up. For in that City that would maintain it felf by Parties rather than by Law, as foon as any Party comes to

tin

fo

an

ye Se

th

le

a

fin

0

600

9

10

信息

o remain in it without any opposition, it uft of necessity divide within it felf; for cannot defend it felf from those peculiar Acts, which for its own fafety it at first establifhed And this to be a Truth both the Ancient and Modern divisions of our City testihe. Every one thought (the Ghibellines once destroyed) the Guelphs might for a long time have lived in honour and happiness. Yet foon after they were divided into Bianchi and Neri. At last the Bianchi overcome, yet the City never was free from Factions. Sometimes we were fighting in favour of the Exiles; sometimes to decree the quarrel between the Nobles and People: and at 'length (giving others what we our felves could not, or would not possess in quiet) we submitted our Liberty first to King Robert, then to his Brother, then to his Son, and last of all to the Duke of Athens. Yet in no state or condition could we find repose, but were like people who could neither agree to live in Freedom, nor be content with Servitude. Nor were we ahamed (fo far are our very Constitutions diffosed to Divition) whilst yet we lived under the Kings Authority to postpone the Majelly of a Prince, to the government of a Vile man born in Agobbio. For the Honour of this City we should forbear any mention of the Duke of Athen, whole Cruel and Tyrannical carriage thould have made us Wife, and taught us how to live: Yet; no fooner was he driven hence, but

to

to Se sus Vi- ave burn and and are that her nes

our Arms were in our hands, and we, more Randent and Major than ever in that done before, fighting one and another, till the Anciene Nobility to quite suppressed and submitted to the Arpromited themselves, there would not more be any occasion of Scandal or Dis-tion in Florence; they being now bride whose Pride and insupportable Ambient was judged the cause of all. But we the day see by Experience, how fallacious the Thoughts of man are , and how falle is Lindgment of man are and now tall the the Nobles was not sooted out but track planted into the people, who now purfails swiftly the footheps of those Ambition men a feele to attain the highest degrees in the Corimonwealth; and having no dether way to climb within reach of their but Diffeord, divided the City afresh, at viving again the names of Guelph and 61. belline, which were quite forgot, al 's which it had been well for this Comme wealth if we never had known. Heart 's has ordain'd (to the end, nothing hatting has ordain'd (to the end, nothing hatting hatting thould boast either perpetuity of contain one fatel Families, born only it their ruine. With these, our Republic has more than any other abounded, sit into one, but many have been disturbed and afflicters of it; as first the Babust and Theretic, then the Donais and Gorchi.

t the

ond inn

forth

itios

cesin

年養養養養

是是是全意主

DOMEST IN 1 SESSIO

rebl, and now (Oh flameful and ridimious!) the Ricci and Albini diffurb and livide us. We have not put you in mind our Corrupt manners, and Ancient and continual Divisions, to terrific you; but to refresh your memories with the same and to let pour fee that we remember them as well as will be you; and withat to tell you, that former them as well as you despair of ut to refresh your memories with the ocjou: and withal to tell you, that former Examples should not make you despair of appreiring thefe. For those Ancient Families were fo mighty, and their Power with Princes fo great, that Civil ways and means were not fufficient to bridle them. But, now that the Empire is weak, and the Pope no longer to be dreaded but all Italy, and this City, brought in an Equahey, that they may of themselves Govern his our Republick may, (notwithflanding old Examples feem to contradict it) not only maintain it felf United, but reform in felf with good Manners and civil Cons Mitutions. Provided your Lordpipe difpole your felves to the Work; to which, we moved out of Charity to our Country, and not out of any private patten, exhort you: And though the Reformation of a State be in it felf a weighty rask, vet do but take away those differencers that afflick it, that rage which frets it, and that povfon that swells it; and impute the ancient Diforders, not to the Nature of the men, but to the Times, which beling changed

changed, you may now by applying beter Rules, hope for better Success; tor the Malignity may with prudence be overcome, by putting a bridle to the Ambition of Disturbers; abolishing those Laws which are the Nourishers of Sedition, and enching such as are congruous to true Civil-

ty and Liberty. And apply your felves 'as foon as you can, to do it by the gentle and favourable affiltance of Laws, leaft if you delay, men be, constrained to do it by force of Arms. The Lords touched to the quick with what they were before Conscious of, and moved with their Authority and Exhortations, gave Committion to 56 Citizens to provide for the fafety of the Commonwealth. It's most true that many heads are more proper to keep firm and stable good Constitutions, than to invent newvones. These Citizens consulted more hovy to quell the present Factions, than to remove opportunities or occasions of future Divitions, and at length attained nei-

Republick.

ther to one nor the other; for occasions of nevv Factions they took not away, and from these vehich they evatcht over, they raised up one more potent, and dangerous to the

of the Albizi, and three of the Ricci (of which Peter Albizi and Uguccio Ricci were two) they made incapable for three years, of bearing any Office in the Magistracy (excepting, that on the Party of the Guelphi.) They likewife prohibited all Citizens entring

However, three of the Family

The Lords moved with the Peoples seprefentation of Affairs; and appoint a Committee of Safay.

Palace, unless in fuch times as the Mairates Sat. They enacted that whoever is beaten, or had their Goods unlawfully etained, might, by Petition, accuse the Pares to the Councils, and having Convicted hem leave it to their Sentence. This Orer took away all power from the Faction the Ricci, and increased that of the Alsi; for although they were equally markd, yet the Ricei fuffered the most. For hough Peter were faut out of the Palace of the Lords, yet that of the Guelfer, where he had the greatest Authority , was open to him, and it he and his Followers were beore warm in giving out their Admonitions, they now grew throughly hot a and to this disposition new disgutis were added. Pope Gregory the Eleventh fat now in the Chair and reliding in Avignion, governed fas his fredecessours had done) Italy by his Legates, who being generally proud and Coverous, had afflicted many Ciries. One of hele being about this time at Bolomia took occasion from the Famine which was that war in Florence, and thought to make himall Lord of Tofcany, and not only forbore to supply the Florentines with Provition, at to put them out of hopes of any Harvest: no feoner did the Spring appear, but Pope's in invaded them with a great Army, hope- Legare inalf starved, eatily subdue them. And polbly he had fped in his Enterprize, had not 15 Army been Treacherous and Mercenary. ВЬЬ

mann) Trans Distant point A 18 W gainft the Church,

Aif

t by

the

on-

rity

that

tirm

m

lted

ons.

is of

nei-

s of

rom

ifed

the

nily

(0

ven s, of

ex-

55.)

ring

the

For the Eleventines feeing no other semice gave his Souldiers 130006 Flavins, and made them relinguish the Attempt. W may begin Wars when we please, but each not end them for This War begun by the Ambition of the Legate, was continued by the Revente of the Florentines, who entre into League with Meffer Bernaby, and all those Cities which were Enemies to the Church; and they created a Council of Light Citizens to manage this War, giving them power to act without Appeal, and frend without Account. This War against the Church, notwithstanding that Ugueri was dead, fornewhat raifed up the heads of the Faction of the Ricci, who had allways in opposition to the Albizi favoured Mc fer Bannaby, and disfavoured the Church; and the more, because the Council of the Eight were all Enemies to the Family of the Guelphe ; which made Peter Albini Meffer Lapo de Caftiglionchio, Charles Strong si, and many more, confult together how they might offend their Enemies And whill the Eight made War, they admonished. The War lasted three years, and determine not but with the Popes death; and we managed with fo much Valour and Un verfal fatisfaction, that the Magistracy vin every year prorogued to the Eight, and the were called Saints, though they flights es, and forced the Clergy, fo rhuch greater value fet those Citizens of that time upon their

tines make War againft the Church,

of

20

出在四龍地

Q

7

In Co

of

old City than their Souls, letting the church understand, that as its Friends they could defend it; so as its Enemies they could afflict it: for they made all sania; La Marca, and Perugia rebel: But whilft they made to fuccessful a War awind the Pope, they could not against the Captains of the Wards and their Faction detend themselves; for the Envy the Guelphs bore to the Council of Eight, gave an addition to their boldness, so that to omit what they did to other Noble Citizens, they could not abstain from injuring some of the Eight themselves. And to such Arrogance were the Captains of the Wards arrived, that they were more feared than the Senatours, and with less reverence were Addresses made to these than to them, and more was the Palace of that Faction in Efleem than theirs, infomuch that there came no Ambaffadours to Florence, but who had Commission to the Captains. Pope Gregoy then being dead, and the City having no note Wars abroad, yet lived withinin great Confusion; for on one side the Arrogancy of the Guelphs was insupportable, and on the other they could perceive no way to quell it; but they judged it a forced-put ocome to a tryal by dint of Sword, and e which of the two Parties could prevail. on the Guelphs fide were all the Ancient Nobles, with most of the ablest Citizens, mong whom as we faid Messer Lapo, Peter ind Charles were the principal: On the other B b b 2

heir

other were all the meaner fort of the People, of whom the Leaders were the Council of Eight, Commissioners of the War Meffer George Scali, Thomas Strozzi, 10 whom the Ricci, Alberti and Medici adhered The remainder of the Multitude, as is ufual in fuch cases, joyned themselves with the discontented Party. The Chiefs of the Faction of the Guelphs began to think their Enemies strength formidable, and their danger great, whenever a Signory chancing to be chosen out of their Enemies, should press down the Ballance: which thinking good to prevent they met together, when they diligently examined the state of the City, and their own Condition, and upon the whole, it appeared to them that the Admonished (being increased to such Numbers) had laid fuch a load of Infamy upon them, that the whole City was become their Enemies. To which they faw no o ther remedy, but as they had taken ther Honours from them, fo to drive them out of the City, possessing themselves by force of the Palace of the Lords, and feizing all the Government into their own hands; in Imitation of the Ancient Guelphs, who had never lived securely in the City, had the not chased thence all their Adversaries: Every one agreed to the thing, but they diagreed in the time. It was now the Year 1378, and the Month of April, and Mefer Lapo thought it not fit to delay time affirming nothing so prejudicial to Time

Garipho
plot
to feize
the Go-

1378.

Time

Q

P

D

21

CC

d

ir

ar,

cd.

ufu-

the Fa-

heir

heir

puld

cius

nere

the

pon

the

um-

pon

ome

o o

out

orce g all

5 10

had

they

ria:

dif

Ya

ime.

ne a

Time, especially to them, confidering that in the next Signory, Silvefter Medici might cally be made Gonfaloniere, whom they linew an Enemy to their Party & On the other fide Peter Albizi was for fome . time of respit; for he judged it necessary m have fome Forces in a readiness, and those could not be well gathered together without discovery, and a discovery must needs be very dangerous; he therefore propoled the deferring it till St. Johns day near at hand; at which time, that being the folemnest Festival the City kept, such Multitudes would be running thither, that they might hide whom and as many as they pleased; and to secure them from the sear of Sylvester he would admonish him, and least that should not do, he put into the Election one of the Fraternity of his quarter, fo that drawing out the Lots (the Purses being empty) the Lot might probably light on some other of his Companions. upon this then they determined though Messer Lapo was much against it, judging Delay dangerous, and alledging, that no time in the World was ever convenient in all points; fo that he that waits till every thing falls to his mind, must either never attempt any thing or if he does attempt, do it to his difad vantage. They therefore admonished the fraternity; but it would not do , nor could they hinder Silvester from being cholen; for the Council of Eight perceiving the Trick, prevented the Chaug from B b b 3

being drawn. Silvefer de Alemmano de Medici was thereupon allow'd for Gonfalaniere He being of one of the greatest Families among the people could not endure to fee the Commons oppressed by a few Rich men and having in himself determined to suppress this Infolency, seeing the Plabeisus favourable to him, and many of the Righest of the People inclinable, he communicated his defign to Bennet Alberti Thomas Strongi and Messer George Scali, who promised to bring him all the help they could. They therefore privately formed a Law which sel newed the Orders of Justice against the Grandees, setrenched the power of the Captains of the Wards, and made way for the Admonished to be recall'd to their Dignities: and that in the fame time ther might make tryal and obtain; having the the Colledge, and then the Councils to debate with, and Silvefter being Provole (which degree, for the time it latis, makes him as it were a Prince of the City) of the fame morning Summons the Colledge and Councils; and hirst to the Colledge, as part from the other , propoles the Law to be enacted; which, as a new thing a met with fo much diflike, that though the Num ber affembled were but few, he could not obmin it. Whereupon Silvefter feeing that Force was the readiest way to get it grant ted, he pretends to go out upon a necessary occasion, and ere any one was aware of him, hyes him to the Council, and mounting on

place where every one might for and bear n, tells them : That he shought he had een chofen Gonfaloniens, not to be Judge a smate Canses, for which ordinary Judge ne appointed; but to match for the Commingealth, to correct the Inselence of the Mighand temper shofe Laws, by the abuse of bich, the Rapublish was non consuming to mine: That he had with diligence and Care neighed thefe things, and as fan as in him tay. nade due provision; but the Makiguity of men opposing bis just Insancious, his preser of daining Good was taken away, and they might beat. out could no more debate it. Wherefore feeing se could no longer be helpful to the Commonmealth, be know not suby be should that that Magistracy, which either indeed be did not seferve, or at loaft, others thoughthe dad not; and therefore he mould ratine bonie, about the People might aboofe in bis place, one of great-Virtue, or bester Fertune than bimfetf. And concluding these words, the went out of the Council towards his House 5 Those who were in the Council, and privy to the matter, and others idelirous of Noveley presently raised a Rumour, to which the Lords and the Colledge ran; and fooing their Gonfaloniere going away, with ilitreaties and Authority they flopt him, and made him return into the Council, which was now in a Tumult. And many Prime Citizens were threatned with Injurious words, among whom Charles Strozzi was by an Artificer taken by the throat, and he would have Bbb 4

a for a pure the form of the f

01

ot min ya,

have killed him. had not the standers by with much ado rescued him: but he that most of all encouraged the Turnult, and drew the City to Arms was Bennet Alberti who from the Palace windows with loud voice cryed out to Arms, and prefently the whole place was full of Armed men: Whereupon the Colledge, who first of all upon Increaty would not yield, now threatned and terrified, confented. The Captains of the Wards at the fame time had affeinbled a great many Citizens in their Palace, in Confult, what they should do to defend themselves against the Orders of the Lords. But when they heard the Alarum, and understood what was determined in Council, every man fled to his House. However, let none raife an alteration in a City, upon a fond belief, that he can stop it when he pleases, and reftrain it as he lift. Twas Silwester's intention by creating this Law, to quiet the City, but it succeeded other wife; for the Humours once moved had in fucha manner incensed every one, that the Shops vvere not opened: but the Citizens fortified themselves in their Houses, and many hid their Goods in Churches and Monasteries. as if all feared an approaching danger. The Company of the Artizans Affembled, and each body chose them a Syndie; whereupon the Priors Summoned their Colledge and those the Syndies, and had a vyhole days Consultation how the City might, to every ones fatisfaction, be quieted; but being of different

4,

ty n:

all

t-

to do do do do do no fe

1

to

四世祖太治

the co

ys ys of

nt

ferent Judgments they could not agree. he day following the Artizans drew forth eir Banners, which the Lords hearing, ad doubting what might follow, Summoned the Council to confult a remedy: but force year it Affembled, and the Rumour foread abroad, but prefently the Enligns of the Trades, and Multitudes of Armed men following them, were in the place. Wherepon the Council, to give the Trades and People wherewith to content their hopes, give general power, which they call in Horence BALIA, to the Lords, the Colledges, and the Eight, the Captains of the Wards, and the Syndier of the Trades, to reform the State for the best advantage to the Publick: But whilli this was concluding, forme of the Companies of the Trades, to gether with the Rabble, (fet on by those who defired to revenge the late Injuries received from the Guelphs) separating themfelves from the rest, fackt, and burnt the Palace of Meffer Lapo de Cajtiglionebio; who, Line Casta to foon as he heard the Signory was attempt- shoulde's ing fomething against the Ordinances of the burn by Guelphs, and faw the People in Arms ; ha- the Peoing no other remedy, but either to conceal himself, or fly; first hid himself in the Moraftery of the Holy-Croft, and thence in a Fryers Habit Acd to Carentino, where he was often heard repent, that ever he had confented to Peter Albixi, and to rail at Peter, for having moved the forbearing to feize the Government till St. Jobn's Day.

Peter

Peter and Charles Strozzi, in the fire to ginning of the Tumults, hid themselve believing (they once over) they had Kind

red and Friends enough to fecure their f in Florence. Messer Lapo's House burn (for Mischiefs are hardly begun, but easi fer burnt, run on) many other Houles were, enter out of general Hatred, or private Malice fackt and burnt: And, that they might have Companions that with more skill in Villan might affift them in plundring other men Goods, they broke open the publick Prifor afterwards they fackt the Monastery of & Agnolo, and the Convent of the Holy Spirit where many Citizens had hid their Goods Nor had the publick Treasury scaped the hands of these Thieves, if by their respect and reverence to one of the Lords, it has not been defended, who on Horfe-back, with many men at Arms following him, in the best manner he could, opposed himself w the rage of the Multitude. At length, the popular Fury fornewhat mitigated, what by the Authority of the Lords, and what he the approach of Night; the day following the Balia extended their Favours to the Admonished, but on condition the should not for three years bear any Office in the Magistracy. They annulled Laws made by the Guelphs, in prejudice of the Citizens. They proclaimed Rebeb Lapo de Caftiglionchio and his Conforts with fome others generally hated. After which the New Lords were declared, to who

The Multitude appealed.

calication has the

10

£ S

th (per

wit

n she

n,th

atb

atil

野野中国

Gonfalouiere, Lewis Guiccardine, which re great hopes of putting a flop to all Tules, because every one bad an opinion were Peacable men, and lovers of the blick Repose: Yet the Shops were not m'd, nordid the Citizens lay down their ins, but kept frong Guards up and down City: wherefore the Lords received the Magistracy without the Palace, with usual Pomp, but within, and there too ithout the observation of any Ceremony. hele Senates judged nothing of more conmould be done in the beginning of their Louis lagistracy, than pacifying the City; where- to quies re they made them lay down their Arms, the City. men their Shops, and fent those Countryen the Citizens had called in to their Aliince home; they placed Guards in many sices of the City, So that, if the Admoshed could have been quiet; the City had The Adeen at Peace; but they were not content cause of oftay three years for their Honours, info- new Stire. much, that the Trades once more drew tother in their favour, and demanded of eSenate, that, for the good and quiet of e City, they would enach, that for the mate, the Golledge, or Eraternicies, the Captains of the Wards, or Confes of the frades should be Admonished as Ghibelline; nd that moreover new Parles should the ade of the Guelph Party, and the Old es burnt. These demands were not only the Lords of the Sonate, but by all the

Councils prefently accepted: So that now was generally thought these new raised Tunults would be stopt too; but because me can never be satisfied with recovering the

own, but are greedy likewife to feize form what of other mens in Revenge; the whose hopes and Stock lay in these dife ders, put it in the Peoples heads, Ti they could never be fafe unless many their Enemies were driven out and destroyed: which being represented to the Lord they furnmoned before them the Magittrates of the Trades, with their Syndies, to whom Lewis Guideardine, Gonfaloniere, Spoke in the manner: Had not thefe Lords, and I together with them known long time fince the Fortune of this City, that as foon as Wars an ceased abroad they must begin at home, m should have much wondred at these Tumuli that have bappened, and taken them more beart : but, because things we are accustomed to, bring less trouble along with them, w have born the past Kiots with patience; effe cially, fince they were without any fault ours begun, and boping they, according former Examples, would have an end, when we had complyed with you in so many great and weighty Demands; but, feeing that y are not Appealed, may rather that you would me acting fresh Injuries against the Citizens,

condemning them to Exile and Death; our dipleasure is increased with your Injustice; And

truly, had we believed that in the time of ow Magistracy, this our City, either by Opposing

The Gonfalonier's Speech to the People.

melan -

e Ad-

10

16

P

A

22

ſ

sk

me hole ilor

H

OF-

hog

th

the

For-

an

n: uli

B

you will not did

Complying with you , must have been ruld we bad either by Death or Banifiment ned our felves from thefe Honours. But deing we were to meet with men that had in um some Humanity, and love to their Country, ewillingly undertook the Magistracy, believing bet our Clemency would over-rule your Ambiin. But now we find by Experience, that the me bumbly we deport our felves to you, and the more we grant you, the prouder still you grow, and the more extravagant are your Demands. And if we tell you this, 'tis not to ffend you, but to make you take it into confideration; for we would have another tell you what pleases you, but we must tell you what is for your good. Tell me now upon your bonesty. tell us What is it you can Civily defire of we. which we have not granted? You would have the Captains of the Wards Authority taken may; Done it is. You would have the Purfes burnt , and reformed ones to be made; We have confented to it. You would have the Admonished restored to their Honours; The request is admitted. At your defire, we have pardoned those that burnt and fackt the Houfes, and have fent, into Banishment many Honourable and worthy Citizens, only for your fatisfaction. The power of the great is to please you, by new Laws restrained. What and will you put to your defires, or bow long will you abuse your Liberty? Are you not moved, to behold us with more patience bear the Defeat, than you the Victory? To what will these Divisions bring this City? Do not

you remember book, when you were once ded Cashinothio & mean Citizen of Luca over-awed you: Thus the Dake of Ath a private Londer, fubjetted you? but ab you were United, not an Arch-bifhop of Mil. lan, may not a Pope could do it; but ofter fome years Wars were forced to defit will shame. Why will you, with your Discords in time of Peace, enflave that City, which fo me my powerful Exemies in time of War left free What can you expect from your Divisions be Servisude? or, What hope from the Goods you bave stollen, or shall steal, but Poverty? For you have taken from those, who with their le dustry maintained our whole City; when poiling of their Goods, you foot the City of ber Nourishment? For those who have feizel them, being ill-got-Goods, will never know bow to keep them, whence of necessity must follow Hanger and Poverty in the City. I, and theft Lords, Command you, and if Honour will permit it, Intreat you, that you would once fettle your minds, and reft fatisfied with what we have enalled in your favour; or, if you would yet have any thing more, defire a Civilly, and make not your Demands with Arms and Tumult: for whilft you are just and reasonable, you shall alwaies be pleased. give not then opportunity to Wicked men, a your Coft and Charge, and under your Protection, to ruine this your Country. Thek words (because they were true) touched those Citizens to the Soul, and they kindly thanked the Gonfaloniere, for having acted

with them like a good Lord, and i de City like a good Citizen; offerin Obedience to whatever was commit-And to put them it a way perform their Promife, the Lords depadracies, who together with the Syndies d the Trades, were to Confult of what as necessary for establishing publick Peace, things were in Agitation, arose another Tu-mult, which more than any of the former than the first than the Common-wealth. Most of the former. tion of the People; and those who had the boldeft and forwardeft among them and in fear, that when the greater Differences were quieted and composed, they their villanies, and, as it alwaies hap-ones be left forfaken by those who had set with one to which was added, the Hatred which the Labouring people bore to the Wealthy Citizens, and Masters of Trades, not believing themselves so well satisfied for their labour as they justly deserved. For the time of Charles, the time of Charles the First, when the Cry was divided into Trades, every one had at Matter or Governour; and it was enacted. hele that in all Civil Caufes those Masters should be Judges between the Insertious people of the Trade. These Trades, as we have said More; were at first but XII; in process of time

1224

time they came to be XXI, and grew to fit power, that in fevy years they took up them the Government of the vyhole Cit And, because among them there were for Trades more Honourable, and some ka they were divided, and VII were called the Greater, and XIV the Less. From the Divition, and other Causes before recited forung the Arrogance of the Captains of the Companies; for those Citizens who had Anciently been Guelphs, and under whole Jurisdiction that Magistracy vvas alwain Sworn, alwaies favoured the people of the higher Degrees, and perfecuted those of the Meaner, with their Friends and Defenders and hence arose the many Tumults we have related amongst them; but because, ordinrily, many of those Handicrafts, to which the Meanest of the People applyed themselves, were annexed to the bodies of other Trades, without having particular Companies of their own Arts, but submitting themselves according to their various mysteries to other it often happened out that when either they were not fatisfied for their labour, or thought themselves any way oppressed by their Matfters, they had no other refuge, but to the Man giffrate of that Trade which governed them. whom they thought did not do them equal Justice: and of all the Companyes that had fuch people under them, the Wool-trade had the most, which was the richest, first, and most powerful of all, and which by their indultry

fed, and does feed the greatest part of the

meand

38

lithologit she Woolles Dr as of the others, being a thall full of fear for the Riots and os they had committed, met m ther by night, discouring th hadhappened and laying before one another the danger they were in swhere of the of the ideli, and of the greatest experience, do a minate the reft spoke thus ! Wert prison The a confult, whether me were to take Arms, she speech of in, and reb abe boules of the Greeners var to enconsalate abe Charebes, Ishould be one of this rage his hald judge it fit to be first considered and villany. pulled, admiss in as beaser, so he contens with with Course, then haver done Gain in this fines drues are taken up and many mischieft line, Isbink our business is to confine bow we fence our felves for mber spaft. I am of the wind, were there nothing elfo to beach we seffity it felf does is. Top fee all the Gity filled with Complaints, and Hatned against mis the Citizens confulting, and the Lords cartining with the Magistrates or believe me They are walling Halters, and fludying fuares, so en trap us. Two things we are therefore, in look hy Kirft, That we may not for what's done, be to morrow punished; and then. That we may beceafier live with more liberty and (atiothion shen formerly: To she first, Ticin my adjusted convenient; that to procure pardon nour former Foults, me Commit new, ad ding

thi

ted di

had

hole aies

che

the

ers

ave ina-nich

emhe

70

crs,

ghi

110 bad bad

ioi in

ding Mischief to Mischief d Ruiner, and endeavouring gage what Companions we can, for where offered; were are punified; and small Fon are carrollan, but great Crimes rewarded where many Suffer, few feek Revenge: Gen rat injuryes being born with more patien then particular ones. The multiplying of of our Mifebiefs, will be the meanes to get pardon and fet us in a path to arrive at the fweets of Liberty we define. And in my mind the purchase is certain, for those who should binder w from it are divided and Rieb; the Divisions will give in the Victory, and the Riches, (becoming ours) maintain it : N let that Antiquity of Blood, with which the upbraid us, affright you: All men basing had the same beginning, are equal in Blood; and all made after the same manner? Let's he all stript naked, and we shall appear the same. Put w in their Cloubs, and them in ours, an without doubt we shall look tike Mobiles, an they like Labourers for nothing but Peters and Riches makes a difference among men. It greives me to bear that many of you are tra bled in Confcience for what's already done and are loath to do any more; and certainly, if be true, you are not the men I took you for for neither Conscience nor Infamy should terrif you; those that overcome (let them overce bow they will) have no reason to be ashamed; A fig then for Conscience; shall we that aren daily fear of being starved or thrown into a Goal, be frightned with aftery of Hell? Ify

bus observed the course of the World, the perceive, that Al they which have used uld perceive that A they which have ust als to great Wealth or Power busings us with Brand or Force, and what shey have the urged by Decess or Violence to mark the visi-help of the Altion, they call by the title of met gain and those who for want of with or derness of Conscience, Esched these courses. walnower beggers and flaves; for the faithful Servant must alwater be a Servant, and Honest m always poor none free themselves from berofinde, but the faitbleff and the bold ; nor on Poverty, but the rapacion and fraudu-. For God and Nature bar fo difficuted Fortunes of men that more are inclined to capine than Industry, and more disposed to do chief than to de good. Hence proceeds it has men devour one another, and be alwayes mes by the worft, that dares the leaft. We aghe therefore to make use of that power Forputs in our hands, which could never be fred m in a better time, the Citizens being fill dwided, the Senators fearful, the Magistrates, thrifyed, so that it is an easy matter, before bey unite and gather Courage, to oppress them; Whereupon we shall remain absolute Lords of the City, or at least owners of fo much as will enale us not only to procure pardon for our past Ofences, but authorize us to threaten new. Confest the attempt is bold, and dangerous, but bere necessity pinches, Boldness injudged prunce; and men never weigh Danger in great atempts; for those enterprizes that are begun. with Dauger; and with Glory; and we ne-

Ccc 2

to a

th of one Rough, and he And fuce, when we haved Prisons, to and Death perparing we aught rath a their infliction on or, then think a source, for the paint we certain h be safrey daubeful. How aften have I hen n complain of the Coverousitess of your Superious, and the Injustice of your Magistrates? Now is the time, not only to free your fale from them, but to advance your felves to fuch a Superiority over them; that they shall ha more reason to complain, and fear, than w But the Opportunity which time has brown w is flying away, and in vain; when it is a past shall see strive to recall to? You fee the preparations of our Enemies Let us preve them in their very Iboughts; for the first w that gets to Arms, will doubtless be al Conquerour, to the ruine of his Enemy, as advancement of his own Pariyo whereby in ny of w shall get Honour, and all Safet These perswasions set their minds a boiling which were before hot enough for any Mischief; whereupon they determined to take Arms, as foon as they had drawn more Accomplices to their Party binding them felves by Oaths, to fuccour each other, when ever any of them should be oppressed by the Magistrate. Whilli they were thus prepar ring to defroy the Republic, their delign was discovered to the Lords; wherefor they got one Simon of the Piana into their hands, from whom they learnt the whole Conspiracy, and how the day following the Riot

MINI TO WITH Florence III

would begin Whereupon heart Ma ger, they funitioned the Collective of the Trades, were to conflut about this City. The Evening of one upon them before all were Ailembled ad the Lords were then by them advice end for the Confuls of the Trades, who with one confent Counfelled them. The drawn together, and that the Standard carers of the People should, in the Morn-in early, be with their Companies Armed in the place before the Palace. One Nichoof Sanfriano was putting in order the Clock of the Palace; whilft Simon was Tormenting, and the Citizens were Afferniting nd having understood what the matter was, returning to his House, he filled all the Neighbourhood with the Clamour . Inomuch that on a fuddain, in the place of the Hily Spirit, there were above a thouland men Affembled. This Rumour prefently Wead among the other Complitators, and Great St. Peters, and St. Lawrence, were in miniant filled with Armed men. Whillt the approach of day, which was the or of July, there appeared not above Eigh ty men at Arms in the Piazza to lide with the Senators, and not one of the Standardwas in Arms, were afraid to ftir out of their Houses. The first Band of the Plebeians that poffeffed the Piazza, were those Ccc 3 who

destruction of the second of t

who had Rendezvouz'd at Great St. Peins at whole Acrival the men at Arms move not: Prefently the rest appeared, and no meeting any Oppolition, with loud ar terrible Out-cries demanded the Priloner from the Signory, and to have them be Force, lince they were not furrendred the fell to burning the House of Lewis Guicean dine; whereupon the Lords, for fear worle, religned them up; and having g them, they took away the Standard of J flice from the Executor, and under it burn the Houles of many Citizens perfecuting all whom for private or publick Realon they hated; and many Citizens, to wrea their private Malice and Revenge, particula Injuries led them to the Houses of the Enemies; for there needed no more, that Crying-out amidft the Multitude, To fue a House, or such an House, and he that catryed the Standard turned towards it. He ving done a great deal of Mischief, to alla it with some worthy Act, they made Sil vefter de Medici, and fo many other Cit zens Knights , that the whole number; mounted to 64, among whom were Beam and Anthony Alberti, Thomas Strozzi, an fuch like of their Confidents, though man likewise they made by force; but that which in this Accident was very remarkable, was To see them burn many Houses, and make the Owners the very fame day Knights, (close did their Favours follow their Interies) whereof Lewis Gulccardine, Gonfale

HIER

Sale A

of Justice was one. The Lords in the dit of to much Turnult decing themselves landoned by the men at Arms, the Heads the Trades, and their own Standardcarers, were aftonished; for none pursuant the Orders given came to their talliflance. nd of fixteen Standards, only that of the Gilden Lion, and that of the Com and Calf. ith John Cambi appeared : And thefe lived but a short time in the Piana, for being no others follow them, they likewife marched off. The Citizens on the other Me beholding the Fury of this raging Mulitude, and the Palace forfaken, kept forne within their Houses, others followed the brined Croud, that they might the better, sting amongst them , defend their own and teir Friends Houles Thus their priver The Te new stronger, and that of the Lords de- stronger, grafed. This Tumult lasted all day, and the wester. Stephano, behind Saint Balase of wester. Church. Their Number was above tix thousand, and before dawn of Day; they Threats made the Trades fend in their Morning being come with the Sandard of Justice, and the Enfigue of the Trades, they came before the Podefta, or Mayors Palace, and the Podesta refuting to wethern pofferfion, they fought and overme him. The Lords willing to come to Composition with them, since they could not tell how to quell them by Force, ant for four of their Colledge, and imdistray. Ccc 4

Denne.

ads lo

· inless chie

からのであるいは

the care of the ca

ployed them to the Manna Palace to und fland other minds who found, than Heads of the Blebeinus, with the Syndie the Arts , and fome Citizens , had alrea determined what they would demand the Senates whereupon Accompanied wid four deputed by the Rabble , and thefe for lowing Demands they returned to the So nate: hat the Company of Wool-Men chants might not hereafter have a Forraige Judge I That three new Corporations of Trades should be erected; one for the Cardens and Dyers, the other for the Barbers Hofiers Toylors, and other fuch kind Merchants, and the third, for the poor Is bouring Prople ; and that for thefe the new Corporations, there should alwaies be chofen two Lords, and for the fourteen les fer Corporations Three of That the South should provide Halls for these New Corporations to meet in That none entred under thefe Bodies Corporate, fhould be forced pay any Debt under two Ducats for this two years. That the Bank should remi their Interest, and only the Principal be paid The those who were Confined and Con denned, should be pardoned. That all the Admonished should be restored to their Dignities: With many other Advantage which they asked for their Fayourers of Favorites and on the contrary, many of their Enemies to be Confined and Admonished. Which Demands though they were hameful and dishonourable to the Common wealth.

The high Demands of the Multitude.

Will Ber

400 miden

and sheet

XUM .

ith, yet for fear of worle were accep Senate, Gilledges and Council of People i but to give thent perfection it e requifite they should be confinted to by e day they could not affemble two Counils) they agreed to refer to the next; and he Artizans appeared content; and the Volir fatisfied, promiting, if they pave perfodion to that Law, all Turnules (would ceafe. The next Morning, whilft the Common Council was debating the Matter athel Mulhude voluble and impatient b mailched un- so asvirt their former Colours into the Pinzes at ad to ith loud thouts, and horrible Out-cries, frighting both the Council and the Lords. Upon which Guertiante Marigientol, moved hord out of Fear than any other private marding the lower Gate, and fled to his foules but he could not pals out for prirely but he was taken notice of by the Rabble and known: yet they did him no mitry , only the Multitude at fight of him Cryed out with one voice, That the Lords hould all leave the Palace for elfe they would kill their Children, and bum cheir Houses. Mean while the Lawwas determiand and the Lerds were returned intertheir Chamber, and the Council gone down, but wither daring to go out of the Lodge, hor pals the Court despairing of the lafety of the City, they made a fland w fich Villany was there in the Multitude; and fo much wretch-

with the Service of

y of

TIO-VETC

alth.

wretchedness or fear in those might have either bridled or fuppre them. The Lords were likewife, in Con fion, doubtful of the prefervation of t Country, feeing themselves forsaken by th own Guards, and not by any one Citing either with their Aid or Council Support Whilst they thus stood uncertain, either wh they might, or what they ought to Thomas Serozzi, and Bennet Alberti, move to it by their private Ambition, defirous to be Mafters of the Palace por because indeel they believed it the best way, perswaded them to yield to this popular Violence, and return as private men to their Houses. The Counfel given by them who had been Head of the Tumulity made Alamanus Acciains li, and Nicholus de Bene, two of the Lord (though the reft yielded) exclaim again them, and taking a little heart, told them That if the reft would go, they could in help it but they would not lay down the Authority till their time was expired, unles with it they kid down their Lives. Their Diffenting increased the bords Fear, and the Peoples Rage , fo that the Gonfalonier chooling rather to quit his Magilleacy with shame, than hold it with danger, recommended it to Thomas Stronger, who condus Cting him out of the Palace, conveyed him to his own House. The other Lords in like manner, one after another departed : Whereupon Alman and Nicholas, that they might pot be judged more Couragious than Wife, feeing

The Lords driven out of the Palace.

themselves left alone weent away also the Palace remained in the hands of the winns, and of the Eight Commissioners War, who had not yet laid down their ce. There was one Michael de Lando omber of Wool, who, when the Croud ed the Palace had the Standard of Julice his hand. This Fellow bare foot and fearce Michael de Rag to cover him, leaps up the Stairs, with Comber The Rabble following him , and getting of Wool, on the place where Lords used to give made Conadience, he makes a fland, and turning to and Lord, Multitude: You fee lays he that this by the lace is yours, and this City in your hands at is now your opinion bow they shall be That they would have him to be Gonfalo are, and Lord, and that he should govern em, and the City, as he thought ht: He an understanding witty Fellow more beholding to Nature than Formes and therefore accepting the Authoity, he determines prefently, to quiet the City, and put a ftop to the Tumults, and to sep the People employed, and gain time p put himself in order ; he commands Search to be made for one Ser Nato, whom Meffer Lapo de Caftiglionebio had defigned for Bargello, or Head Sergeant Upon which Commission, most that evere about him an. And, to begin that Government with luffice, he had got by Favour, he made Proclamation that none should dare to burn fleal any thing; and, for a Terrour, caused

is to december of the medical control of the

Machivel's Liber

canfed a Gibber to be credted in the Pins And to give a beginning to the Reform the Trades, and made New; deprived the Lords and Gelledges of the Magistracy, a burnt the Purses of Offices of Mean while Nute vvas by the Multitude brought in the Piassa, and hanged by one foot on the Gibbet, and every one flashing a piece from him, there was in an inflant nothing left bu his Footh The Council of Eight, during this, (believing themselves finde the Lord wire departed Chief Magistrates of the City) had already deligned New Lord which Michael understanding , fent to the them, that they should presently depart th Palace; for he would let every one know how, without their Counfel , he knew how to govern Florence. He after Affembled the Syndies of the Trades, and created a Signor of Four for the Labouring people, two for the Greater, and two for the Leffer Trades Befides this, he made a new Squittini, in Imborfation for Choice of Magistrates, and divided the State into Three parts; on whereof related to the New Arts, the other to the Leffer, and the third to the Greater He gave Meffer Silvefter Medici the Rent of the Shops upon the Old-Bridge, and to himfelf the Podestaria, or Bailywick of Empeli and to many other Citizens, and many of the Common People he gave beneficial Gifts; not fo much to reflore them part of what they had given him; but that they might

a dda S

SHIE

óù bu

the country of

200

on constant of the constant of

h

he be at all times ready to defend him Michael in Reforming the State, too comments the fided with the Wealthy Party, and with Michael State Wealthy Party, and with Michael State Stat they had not fo great a thare in the ternment as was htting, ar rather linelary for them, to maintain and defend melves in it : Whereupon i fpurid on their habitual Boldness, they again took lums, and in a Tumultuous manner gabring to their Colours, come into the Pis and Require the Lords to come down the Ringhieria (or place of Audience) to Debate of New Matters Michael, Iceing the Artogance, not to Enrage them more, have, blamed their manner of coming to any thing : Exherted them to lay down hem, what the Signory could not Honou-Multitude enraged against the Palace, went (St. Maria Novilla where they Conflictured mong themselves Eight Chiefs with Minis, and other Orders, which paid them everence and Respect: So that there was two Sects in the City; and it was untr two different Governments. The Chiefs of the Plebeians determined among themflyes, that alwaies Eight chosen from the

Companies of Trades, should dwell with the Lords in the Palace, and that, whatever vas debated by the Signory, thould be by them confirmed of They took away from

4. take Arms.

habite and impfi tons the es igosq nollista. .9293i

Silvetter

MUD

contented with Memail lives

Silveter Medicilan and Michael L all that in their former Concessions had bellowed on them, they affigned o to many of their own Offices, and other plyes, that they might the better main ale, rake their port and dignity y having conclud thefe things, they fent them to the Lor requiring they might be confirmed by the Councils with an affurance they would have them done by Force, if by fare the they could not obtain them. Those w brought them performed their Committe to the Lords with great boldness, and great er Prefumption, reproaching the Gonfaloni with the Dignity they had conferred on him and how ungrateful he had been in man ging those Honours they had bestowed him, with fo little respect towards the And from these injurious words, proceed to threats. Michael could no longer endin fuch Arrogance; but remembring more Degree he then held, then his low and me Condition, resolved to punish in an extraor dinary manner such extraordinary Insolence and drawing his Sword, He had by his fide he first grievously wounded him that spok and then caused them all to be bound imprisoned. These things were no foor known, but the multitude were enflan with anger; and believing they might fo that to be done with Arms in their hand which Disarmed they could not obtain, with Tumult, rage, and fury they Armed them

felves, and made ready to affail the Lord

the other fide, Michael forefeeing what ald happen, determined to prevent it, d judging it more for his Flonour to affault hers, then they for his Enemy within the ace Walls, and be forced like his Predeallors, with dishonour to the place, and ame to himself to fly, He gathers together agreat number of Citizens, who were alreaor come flocking thither, fentible now of their former errours, and mounting on Horse-back followed by many menat armes, pes to St. Maria Novella to hight his Enemy. The Rabble who (as we faid before) had nade the fame refolves at the fame time that Michael parted from the Palace, were adrancing towards it, and it happened fo, that aling feveral waies they met not one the other:whereuponMichael rurning back, found the Piazza possessed, and that they were enwith them, after a hot skirmish he routs them, drives fome of them out of the Ciy, and the rest forces to throw down their Arms, and run and hide themselves. This Victory obtained, the Tumules were appeafed by the fole valour of the Gonfaloniere; who for Courage, Prudence and Honesty, exceeded all the Citizens of his rime, and Lando's deferves to be Chronicled among those few that were serviceable and Beneficial to their Country: For had he had either a dishonest or Ambitious mind, the Common-wealth had utterly loft it's Liberty, and fallen under a much worse Tyranny, than that of the Duke

Duke of Athens. But his goodness would not permit a thought in his Breft contradic dence he governed things to that most of his Party had confidence in him, and the reft he by force could quell: which put the Plebeians in fear, and made the better fort of Tradefmen bethink themselves and confiden how great their Ignorance had been that they who had tamed the Pride of the Nobles were become supporters of the scum of the people. When Michael gained this victory over the Rabble, the new Lords were already drawn; whereof two were of fuch vile and abject quality, that it begot a delire in all men to free themselves from this Infamy. And on the first day of September, when the new Lords were to enter upon the Magistracy, the place being full of Anned men, as foon as the Old Lards were come out of the Palace. a Cry was raifed among the Armed men, in a tumultuous manner, that they would not have any of the Plebeians Lords, Whereupon the Signory, to fatisfy them, deprived those two of the Magistracy; of which, one was called Tyra; and the other Baraccio, in whose places, Meffer George Schall, and Francis Michael were chosen; They annulled likewife the Corporations of the meaner fort of people, and from those under them (ex-cept Michael di Landa, and Lewis Pucchia, and and some others of better Quality) took all nem manner of Offices, The Honours they divided into two parts; Whereof, one to the

Greater,

6c

ria.

ho

s P

e ti

Greater, and the other to the Leffer Trades, was configued: Only of the Lords, they would always have nive of the meaner Artiners, and four of the greater Trades; and the Confaloniere, fometimes of one and fomefeled, put the City in a present posture of Quiet. And though the Government was uken out of the hands of the Rabble, yet did the Mechanicks of meaner Quality remin Superior in power to the Citizens of higher degree; to which, these were conlained to submit to take away from the loofe Multitude the favour of the Handicrafts, by becontenting them; which was likewise fawared by those who defired, that they hould be afflicted, who under the Name of he Guelph Faction had fo much tormented the City: And, because among the Favours of this fort of Government, Meffer George Scali, Meffer Bennet Alberti, Meffer Silvefter Medici, and Meffer Thomas Strozzi, were the Chief; they seemed, in a manner, Princes of the City. These things thus maged and Governed; the Division beween the Prime Citizens, and Merchants meaner Trades (begun by the Ambition the Ricei and Albizi) was confirmed, which produced, in several times afterands, fad effects; of which, because we hall have occasion hereafter often to make ention , we will call one the Popular Fa- The Popular on, and the other the Plebeian (as, for lar and most part, hitherto, we have observed Factions.

Ddd

形式のはののはん

ry ile in

ly. he

4

On

CC,

m

not

101

red

one

in

and

lled

fort

cxbia

dle z livi-

ater,

to do.) This Government lasted three years. and was much perplexed with Deaths and Banishment; for those that Governed. because of the many Male-contents within and without, lived in very great Jealoufic The Male-contents within, were still attempting, or at least, the Government believed they were attempting, some Novel-Those without, having nothing to restrain them, sometimes by means of that Prince, and sometimes of this Commonwealth, dispersed and sowed Sedition sometimes in one Party, and fometimes in ano-There was at this time in Bolonia Gianazzo of Salerno, Commander of the Forces under Charles of Durazzo of the Blood Royal of Naples; who designing an expedition against Queen Joane, this his General, was by the favour of Pope Urban, (an Enemy to the Queen) admitted into There were then at Bolonia many that had fled out of Florence, who kept a strict Correspondence both with him and Charles: Upon which account, those who Governed Florence lived in the greater laloulie, and with eafe, believed any Calumnies, raised of the Citizens they suspected Whillt the minds of men were in this Fen, and Suspension, was discovered to the Magiltracy, how Gianazzo de Salerno was de figned to present himself before Florence, with those that were fled out, and that me ny within were to take Arms in their be half, and furrender to them the City. Upon

A Conspiracy revealed. 750

血血

nd d,

fica at-be-

d-

T

hat

ion-me-

mo-

nia

the

the

g an

his

ban

into

1113

kept

and

who

lca-

lum-

act.

F car

Ma

s de

remet.

ir be

Upor thi

his Accordation, many were accurled; for the finespal of which were nominated Perer Albizi, and Charles Strokes, and next serial them Caprians Mangion, Messex Jacopo Sac-Nobles detti, Messer Donato Barbadori, Phitip and prime Strozzi, and John Aufetrain: All which Acquied ken; and the Lords, to the end none thould take Arms, in their favour deputed Meller Thomas Strozzi, and Meffer Benner Alberti. with a fufficient number of Souldiers, to have the Guard of the City. These Citires thus taken, though upon any Tellinomy or Circumflances, they could not be found Guilty, informach that the Captain would by no means Condemn them; Yet condemtheir Enemies in fuch manner flirred up the ned and People, and moved them to fo much Rage and Madness against them, that they sorced entence of Death to be passed upon them. Nor did the greatness of his Fainity any ning avail Peter Albizi; Nor that Antient eputation of his which had once made him fated and Honoured, above any other Citians of Florence; And had once perswaded certain Citizen, vyhole Gueff he was at a reat Invitation, either, As his Friend, to blige him to a more kind, bumble deportment in luch a height of Greatness or As Enemy, to threaten him with the voludiry of Fortune, to fend him a tilver Cupall of Confects, under which, he had hid a great Iron Spike, which, being discovered, and feen by the rest of the Guests, was in-

and pritt.

Condeste red and Excessed

terpreted as an Admonition to him, to flop and his the Wheel; for Fortune having brought him to the very top of it, it was impossible, it it continued its Circle and Career, but he must fall to the very bottom: which Interpretation, first by his Ruine, and afterwards by his Death, was fully verified. After this Execution, the City remained full of Confusion, for both the Conquerours and Conquered flood in doubt : but, the most malignant Effects were produced from the Fears of those that Governed; for every flight Accident made them affid with new Injuries the suspected Party, either Condemning, or Admonishing, or sending their Citizens into Banishment; to which may be added, the making New Laws in fupport and strengthning of their Govern rment: All which things were profecuted over the Injustice and Injury to those, the Faction had any Jealoutie of; to which end, they created a Council of XLVI, who the State of suspected Persons. These had han the State of Inspected Persons. These adminished XXXIX Citizens, and many Perple they made Noble, and many Noble who they degraded. And, to enable them to withistand any Forraign Power, they took into their pay Sir John Hambrood, a cycre English man, of great Reputation in Arms and, who had formerly made War in had under the Pope, and other Princes. The Reason of their Fears from abroad, and from the Intelligence they had, that sever into Com-Com

Sir John Hawknood hired by the Florengines. op ing was and and

ned.

ned ue-but,

for

ther

s for

Companies of Men at Arms, drawn together by Charles of Durazzo, in order to his Expedition against Naples, were in a readiness, and that great numbers of Banished Florentines were joyned with them: To oppose which Dangers, betides the Forces they had levied, they provided themselves with mony : And Charles, at his coming to Azezzo, received from the Flotentines 40000 Ducats, upon promise not molest them. After which, he pursued his Expedition, and happily possessed himself of the Kingdom of Naples Lending Queen Toan prisoner into Hungary. Which success of s, bred new Jealouties in those who mahich miged the State of Florence; for they could not believe, their Mony could have such ven- power over the King, as to stiffe that Ancuted sent Friendinip his Family had alwaies ther forn to the Guelph Party, whom they had which with so many injuries oppressed. And who dis Jealoutie increasing, injuries increased pure with it, which did not extinguish but en-character it, so that most part of the City lived Per under great anxiety and Tribulation: To iobs which, the Infolencies of George Scali, an I to lbomes Strozzi contributed, who with too their Authority over-awed the Magnitracy, a very one standing in sear, least by the Planary favour they might be by them opposed to present for their Government, nor ally to The Good men, but even to the Seditious, ap-ard pared violent and Tyrannical. But that the fever infolency of George inight one day one to

Com

an end, It happened that John de Cambie accused a Fellow Citizen, of having held Intelligence against the State; but the Party being found Innocent by the Captain, the Judge would have inflicted the fame punishment upon the Accuser, which the Accufed had been liable to, had he been found Guilty; and when Meffer George could neither by his power nor prayers prevail for his pardon, he with Messer Thomas Strozes, vvent with a great multitude of Armed Men, and by force delivered him, facking the Palace of the Captain, and constraining him (to fave his life) to Hy and hide him-Which Action begot such a Hatred in the vyhole City against him, that his Enemies thought they might eafily crush him. and not only deliver the City out of his hands, but out of the hands of the Plebes ans, who, for three years past, had subjected it to their Arrogance. To which, the Captain gave a fair opportunity, who going to the Lords, as foon as the Tumult was over, told them: That be bad willingly undertaken that Office, to which their Lordships had Ele-Eied him, because be thought he was to ferm Just men, who would take up Arms in De-fence, and not in Opposition of Justice: but now, baving had experience of the Government of the City, and its manner of living That Dignity he had readily embraced, out of bopes to gain Honour, Safety, and Advasage, be as readily laid down, to avoid Shame, Danger, and Damage. The Captain vva cncou

of

bec

DU

Ne

for

and it or and man med E in his ated ap-

g to vci,

aken Eleeron Debut

ern-

ing

ut of

couraged by the Lords to continue in his charge, who heartned him with Promiles Recompence for past Losses, and Secuney for the future , and withdrawing a art of them, they privately confulted with ome others of the Citizens; whom they lnew lovers of their Country, and vvho ly not under the least Suspicions of State; with whom they Concluded, That a good Opportunity was offered to free the City out of the hands of Meffer George, and the Plebeians; the Generality being by this Infolence utterly alienated from him. Wherefore they thought it best to make use of it, before the Angry minds of the People were fetled; for they knew the Favour of the Multitude was won and loft by every little Accident : Judging it withal necessay, for the Management of the Affair, to draw Meffer Benedetto Alberti to their Parw. without whose consent they thought the Enterprize too Hazardous. Meffer Benwe was very Rich, Just, Kind, and a lover of the Liberty of his Country, and a Difeffector of all Tyrannical waies: So, that It was no difficult matter to gain him to condescend to the ruine of Messer George, because the Reasons which had made him an Enemy to the Prime of the People, and to the Faction of the Guelphs, were only their Infolencies and Tyrannical Demeasour. And now, hinding the Chiefs of the Hebeians were grown like them, he had for fometime discontinued Acting with Ddd 4 them,

Meller George Scali Bebeaded. them, and the Injuries which had been done to many Citizens, were utterly without his Confent and Advice. Meffer Bennet, and the Masters of the Trades, thus drawn to their Party, they provided themfelves of Arms, and Meffer George was token, but Meffer Thomas fled : And the next day George vvas Beheaded, with fo much Terrour to his Party, that not a man durft ftir to rescue him; rather every one run to gaze at his fall: Whereupon, he seeing himself brought to Die before that People who but a while before adored him, he complained of his ill Fortune, and accused the Frowardness of the Citizens, vuhich had forced him to comply with, and honour a Multitude, who never vvere capable of Gratitude. And seeing Messer Benner Alberti among the Armed men, he faid to him: And can you, Mr. Bennet, confent that this Injury be done to me, which I would never bave permitted to be done to you? But I pronounce this end of my Mifery, to be the beginning of yours. And with these Repinings he dyed, in the midft of his Armed Enemies, who rejoyced at his fall. Some of his neerest Friends were soon after put to Death, and foine torn in pieces by the People. The fall of this Citizen disquieted the whole City; for many ar his Execution had taken up Arms in favour of the Signory and Captain of the People; and many others out of Ambition, or private Jesloulie. And, because the City was full of differing

Divisions in the City, taking occasion from his Execution.

T

tir

OLI

tit

ao

mi

re:

h

for

n

6

ns

n

3-

xt

ch

rft

to 明化

he fed

ich

10-

ble

net to

hat

ever pro-

be-

cpi-

med

ome

put

the.

ietod ition

Sig-

ma-

leaullof

ering

iffering Factions, they all had different and each defired before they laid down Arms, to accomplish them. The Aprient Nobility, called Grandees, (and fo we shall ereafter call them in distinction from the New Nobles of the people) could not support or endure their being deprived of all Honours and therefore by all possible yvajes pplyed themselves to the recovery of them. They therefore Armed themselves, to refore the Authority to the Captains of the Wards or Divitions: the Nobles of the People, and the Prime Trades were difbished to share the Government with the meaner Tradesmen, and Rabble of Plebeiant. On the other side, The Inferiour Trades, fought rather to add to, than fuffer their power to diminith, and the Rabble feared to lose their new Corporations from which Differences there arole many Tumples in Florence in a years space ssometimes the Grandees took Arms, fornetimes the Popular Nobles , sometimes the Inferiour Trades, and with them the loofe Multitude; and many times, in divers parts of the Town, all of them were in Arms at once: whereupon, happened feveral Skirmithes between them and the Guards of the Palace; for the Senate sometimes yielding, and fometimes highting, throve all the waies they could to remedy fo many Inconreniencies: Infomuch, that after two Par- + a pus liments and more * Balia's created to Reform the City. After many Loffes, La- dumprity. bours,

bours, and grievous Dangers, they establish ed a Government, by which, all those which had been confined, lince Silvester Media was Gonfaloniere, were reflored; they tool away all Priviledges and preheminencies which had been granted by the Balia in 1977. Restored the Guelph faction to all Dignities, and honours; Took away from the New trades their Corporations, and government; distributing them among the Companies they were formerly placed under They removed from the Inferiour Trade the choice of the Gonfaloniere of Justice, at from one half reduced them to a third Share of Dignities, and those of the highest que lity they made them altogether incapable of Whereby, the Faction of the popular Nobles of the Guelphs reaffumed the Authority and the Plebeians, who had been the chief Managers of the state, from the year 1378, to the year 1381, when this Novelty happe ned , loft it. Nor was this Government less impious to the Citizens, nor less hurtful in its foundations than that of the Plebeiani had been. For many popular Nobles who had flirred in the defence of that, and many of the heads of the Plebeians were confined among whom was Michael di Lando, who, all the benefit his Authority had been Author of, when the unbridled Multitude Licentiously ruined the City, could not preferve him from the rage of this Faction, fo ungrateful was his Country to him for all his good Offices: Into which Errour, because Princes

1381.

At the lea

đo

out

pur Cò.

deli

las Ne

Wh

of

rinces and Commonwealths, many times fall. pecalions that men terrifyed with fuch kind Examples no fooner begin to grow fenfide of their princes ingratitude, but they find bow to offend them. Thefe Banishments and executions, as they alwayes displeased, so now they afflicted the Spirit of Meffer Bennet Alberti, who publickly, and privately, condemned them: Whereupon the Prime men concerned in the Government, feared him for they esteemed him one of the Princi-Friends of the Plebeigns, and believed had consented to the death of Messer George Scali, not out of any diflike to his manners, but that he might remain without Competitor in the Government; both his words and Works added afterwards fuel to this Jealoutie; So that all the Faction in nower turned their eyes towards him, to watch an opportunity of oppreffing him-Whilft they Itood upon thefe Terms within Affaires abroad were not very difficult; by that which follows the people were more fared than hurt's for about this time Levis Levis of of Anjou came into Italy to referre the King-Anjou par-dom of Naples to Queen Joan, and drive fire to Naout Charles of Durazzo: His palling by righte the put the Florentines in great fear, for Florentines. charles, as is usual among old friends delired their Affiliance; and Lewis defired (as it is Cultomary with those who seek New Alliances,) they would stand Neuter. Whereupon, the Ptorentines, to make a thew

of fatisfying Lewis, and helping Charles,

Ing . Van'l

والماليقيان

大の活用のとなる。

12-06

0

tys niel 78 pe

cfu

ANI

who

any nedi

no, Au-

Li

pre-

un

his

auk

inces

dismissed Sr. John Hawkwood from their Service, and fent him to Pope Urban, who was Charles his friend: which Cheat was eafily discovered by Lewis, who highly resented this injury of the Florentines. And whilst the War between Lewis and Charles was maintained in Apulia, there came fresh fuccours to Lewis out of France, who arriving in Tofcany, were by the Banished Aretines brought into Arezzo; which fided with those who governed for Charles. they were deligning to Change the Government of Florence, as they had done that of Arezzo, happened the death of Lowis; and Affaires in Apulia and Toscany changed conutenance; for Charles secured himself of the Kingdom, he had almost lost, and the Florentines, who were almost doubtful of being able to defend Florence, got Arezzo buying it of those people which held it for Lewis, Charles having thus fetled Apulia goes for Hungary, fallen to him by Hereditary Succeffion, leaving his wife in Apulia, with Ladiflaw and Foan, his Children; of whom, more in due Season. Charles gained Hungary, but was foon after Slain; there were folemn Fealts kept in Florence for this Success, fo that never City rejoyced more at their own Victory es: Here as well the private as publick Magnificence appeared for many Families in their Feattings throve to vye with the publick: But they which in pomp and Magnincence exceeded all others, were the family of the Alberti; For the Fealts and Tournzments

They get

co

mi

tro Mo

in qu

utt

mu

Ma

Mc the ü 10

33

t-

nd

03.

ch

ng

es

ith

35

of

nd

nithe

ening

ing

vis,

for

uc.

rith

om.

HH-

rere

els her

e 25 Fa-

the

lag

ni Y ma-

ents

Alsong! pille

ents made by them, feem'd rather becoming a mighty Prince, than a private Famiwhich joyning Envy to the Jealouly the hate before had of Meffer Bennet, was the male of his ruin: For thole who were in power could not be fatisfyed with him, imagining every minute fome opportunity might appen, to make him with the favour of the actions, regain his Reputation, and drive them out of the City. And whilst they were in these doubts, it happened, that he being Gonfaloniere of the Companyes, there was drawn for Genfaloniere of Justice, Messer Philip Magolotti his son in law which redoubled the fear of the Heads of the state, judging it added too much Power to Meffer Beaart, and exposed the State to too much dan-And defirous to remedy it without Tumult, they encouraged Befe Magolotti, his Confort and Enemy, to lignify to the Lords, that Messer Philip not being yet arrived at the Age required, to exercise that degree, The matter was exacould not obtain it. mined before the Lords, and part out of Hatred, and the rest not to give Offence, voted Messer Philip incapable of that Dignity ; and in his stead was chosen Bardo Mancini, a man quite averse to the Plebeian Faction, and an utter Enemy to Messer Benedetto: Infomuch, that as foon as he was fetled in his Magistracy he called a Balia, who, in super- Messe viling and reforming the state, Banished beriba-Messer Benedetto Alberti, and Admonished all nished. the rest of the family, except Messer Autho-

Book III.

Mis speech to his conforts before his de parture.

Meffer Brither before his departure, called together all his Conforts and Friends and feeling them fad and full of tears told them Too fee (my good Lords, and Fathers) bom Portune ba oppreffed me, aus threatens you; neither am I ftartled at it, nor ough you to wonder, for it ever happens thus to men tobo among a great many Wicked, Itrive to be Good, or would support what many feet to destroy. Love of my Country made me joyn with Sylvefler Medici; and fall off from George Scali; and the very same thing made me bate the Cultomes of those that now Kule. who being above chalisement, bave scorned Reproof. And I am content with my Banille ment, to free them from the fear they had un of me only, but of all that they know are fenfible of their Wicked and Tyrannical Govern-I am not motested nor vexed at it for those Honours my Country, when free gave me, the fervant eannot take away, and I had always find more Delight in the memory of my past life, then the infelicity of my Exile can bring of diffleafure. It grievs me indeed that my Country should become a prey to a few, and be forced to submit to their Lyranny, and Avaries: And I am grieved for you, because I fear that thole Evils which this day end in me, will begin in you, and that they will perfecute you with greater Tyranny then they have perfecuted me. Resolve with your setves therefore, w bear a mind stedfast against all Misfortunes, and carry your selves so, that if any advertity befall you (in much certainly will) the World may

to to the conde

le.

ed

But for the all my be ice at be well

es.

nay

ny know you Innecess, and that by any fault yours, you bove not deferved it. After s leave taken, to gain as much Reputaon of Goodness abroad as he had done at ome, he went to vilit the Holy Sepulabre, He dies at in his return thence dyed at Rhades. zoolo. During these Distempers, the Family of the Alberti was not alone affronted and injuted. but many other Citizens were Admonifhed and Banished; among whom were Postis de Bene, John Benet, Andrew Adimari. and with these a great number of Mechaicks. Those that were Admonished twee the Cononi, Benini, Rimicol, Formitenty Gor bizi, Monelli and Alderosti, It vvas Custos mary to create the Balia for an affixed time; but those Citizens having done what they vyere deputed for, thought it decent, though the time vvera not expired toile These men therefore, having, as they thought fatisfied the State, would account ing to Custome, have religited: which, the Multitude under Randing, ran Armed to the Palace, defiring, that before they retigned many others might be Banished, and Admonished; which highly displeased the Lords, who entertained them with fair Promifes till they had gatheted frength fufficient, and then made them, for Fear, lay down those Arms, which fury had made them take up: yet, to fatistic a little this raging Humour, and to moderate the Power of the Plebeians, they enacted, That whereas they

they had a third part of the Honours, they thould only have a Fourth: And that there might alwaies be in the Signmy Two men stediast to the State, they gave Authority

to the Gonfaloniere of Justice, and to Four other Citizens to make Purses of Cholen pickt men, whereof two to be drawn for every Signory. The Government thus ferled, fix years after it was first Ordained. vyhich was in the year 1381, the City lived in great quietness within it felf, till the year 1393; during which time, John Gateago Visconti, called the Count of Virtue having flain Meffer Barnaby his Uncle, and by that means become Prince of all Lombardy, thought he might by Force become King of all Italy, as he had, by Treachery, made himself Dake of Milan. And in the year 1390, waged a brisk war with the Fla rentines; which in the Management was fo variable, that oftentimes was the Duke himfelf in Danger, and oftentimes upon the point of destroying the Florentines, who had certainly, had he lived, been loft, though they made a flout defence, and to

be admired at for a Common-wealth. And the end proved as advantagious as the War had been Dreadful: For when the Duke had taken Bolonia, Pifa, Perugia, and Siena, and had made ready a Crown to Crown himself King of Italy, in Florence, he Dyed: Death not suffering him to enjoy his past Victoryes; nor the Florentines to feel their present losses. Whilst this War was

ilit whereas

War with

ue dies ag.

condition of the

ST)

28

ma. Put

iou

ther

t

1,

TI.

l, yill

r, id

ne The la fo

n-he ho ft;

nd

121

ike

W

外加

feel

was

on

on foot with the Duke, Meffer Majo Albizi, whom the Death of Peter had made an Enemy to the House of Alberti, was drawn for Gonfaloniere of Justice: And the humours of the Factions being still kept awake, Majo (though Bennet was dead in Exile) deremined, before he laid down the Magistracy, to revenge himself on the rest of that family; and took the opportunity from one, who, being examined about Intelligence held with the Enemy; named Albert; and Andrew Alberti. These were presently taken, at which all the City grew Angry; whereupon the Senate Arming called Parliament of the People, and Constituted Balia, whereby many Citizens were Banished, and new Imborfation for Choice of Officers made. Amongst the Banished were almost all the Alberti: there were likewise many of the Mechanicks admonished, and put to Death; whereupon, incenfed by for The Rabmany Injuries, the Multitude took Arms, Arms that they might no longer behold their Hou murs and Lives thus taken away. "Part of them came into the Piazza, and another part flockt to the House of Messer Veri de Medici , who, after the death of Silvefter remained Head of that Family to those which came into the Piazza, the Lords, to bill them afleep, gave them for their Heads with the Entiens of the Guelphr, and the People in their hands Meffer Rinaldo Gianfeliazzo and Meffer Donato Acciaivoli, men dove any other of the popular Party Fec grate-

steful to the Plebeians. Those who were to the House of Veri de Medici , beg'd, He would be pleafed to accept the Government and free them from the Tyramy of those Cichtens, who west Destrovers of all Good men, and perverters of the Commonweal. All that have made any Record of thefe Times agree, that had Meffer Veri been as Ambitious as he was Good . he might in this Conjuncture, without any himdrance, have made himfelf Prince of the City: For the heavy loads, that were right or wrong, laid upon the Inferious Meeharicks, and their Friends, had so ensamed their Souls to Revenge, that they wanted nothing to satisfie their desires, but a Head to Lead them: Nor wanted there some to put Messer Vori in mind what he might do; so the Antonio de Medici, who had long before had some particular Animosities against him, advised him to accept of the Dominion of the City, to which Messer Ver, made Answer, As thy Threatnings, when My Enemy, made me not afraid; neither had the thy Counsels, as my Friend, abuse me. And turning towards the Multitude, he exhor 9 ted them to be of good-heart, for he would be their Defender, if they would be adviced by him : And going in the midst of them into the Pianza, and from thence, up the see Palace to the Lords, he spoke to them in this manner: That he had no reason so be troubled, that he had lived in fach a manne that the People of Florence loved him; he Η.

biod

ent of

Veti

him

the ight

cha-

their

100d to e to

grieved him; that they had at apinion of im which his past life had not described: being Factions or Ambation , be knew not non whence it proceeded, shat they should sagine bins a fumenter of Sedition like an Uniquiet man on on Vourper of Government sone Ambitions. He therefore prayed their Lord hips That the Ignorance of the Multitude bould not be imputed at a Crime to bim ! for that be bad as far as possible be could branche them under their Paver: Remembring them withat, That they fronted use their Fortnite moderately, and rather choose a small Victory with the fafety of the City, that an intice me with its Ruine. Melle Veri was prayed by the Lords, and exhorted to make them do: by down their Arms, and that afterwards they would not fail to do what He and owhich, returning to the Piazze, and his Ven, leigade being joyned with those led by when Messer Rinaldo, and Messer Donata, the told them all: That be had found in the Lords And execulent disposition to do them goods that marould by reason of the fortness of the sime; and villed the absence of the Magistrates could not yes p the them to lay down their Arms, and Obey the min Lords: giving them his word, that Gentleness to be rather than Pride, and Prayers rather than and theats mould move them, and that they hald not want either Havour or Safety, if they Ece 2

abey would be rul d by bim. Informach, that upon his word they all returned to their Houses. Arms thus by them laid down the Signory first Armed the Piazza, and then lifted Two thousand Citizens faithful to the State, and divided them equally under Banners; giving Command, that they fhould be in a readiness, whenever they were called to their Affiftance, and forbidding all that were not Lifted to Arm themselves. These Preparations made, they Confined, Banished, and put to Death many of the Mechanicks, of those who had shewed themselves forwardest in the last Tumult. And because the Gonfaloniere of Justice fhould have more Majeffy and Reputation, they ordered. That none under 45 years of Age should exercise that Office. To fortine the State, they likewise made other provitions, insupportable to those against whom they were enacted, and by all honest Citizens, even of their own Party, abhorred; for they judged no State fafe or fecure, that was to be defended with fo much Violence. And, not only those of the Alberti, who remained in the City, but the Medici, who lookt upon themselves as Deceivers of the People; and many others, were extreamly afflicted at it. And, the first that sought to oppose it was Messer Donato di Jacopo Acciaivoli. This Gentleman, though he were very Great in the City, and rather Superiour than Companion to Meffer Majo Albizi; who for the things

things done in the time of his being Gonfaloniere, was lookt upon as it were. Head of the Republick, could not live well fatisfied among fo many Male-contents, nor make (as many do) a private Benefit of the publick Damage; he therefore determined to make tryal if he could reffore the Exiles to their Country, or at leaft, the Admonthed to their Degrees. And he went about whifpering in the Ears of feveral Citizens this his Opinion; demonstrating how there was no other way to quiet the Feople and purge the humours of the Factions of thor flayed he for any thing, but to be drawn for one of the Lords to put this his deliberation in practice: And, because in all our Ctions Delay feems tedious, and Habe is dans gerous he grew inclinable to avoid tod oufness to hazard the danger. There were of the Lords, Michael Acciaivoli his Confort, and Nicholas Ricoveri his Friend : Whereupon Meffer Donato thought, that having such an Opportunity he ought not to lose it. but defired them to propose a Law to the Councils containing the Reflitution of the Citizens; they perswaded by him spoke to their Companions, by vvhom they were Answered, That they were not to propose new things wherein the Success was dubious, and the Danger certain, Whicreupon Meffer Donato having first in vain to yed all other yvaies, told them in Anger, That fince they would not accept the offer made, to Reform the City quietly, it should be Ece 3

at

n.

cy

Te

ng

es.

he

ed

ilte

ice

on,

ars

To

her

inst

10-

ab-

or

fo

the

but

25

TS,

the

Her

tle

the pathe

ngs

done by Arms. These Words so much difpleafed them that Communicating them to the Heads of the Government, Messer Donato was Cited, and appearing, was by those, by whom he had delivered the Embaffy, Convicted, and thereupon Confined to Barretta, Alaman, and Anthony Medici, with all of that Family descended from Meffer Alaman, were likewise Banished, together with many ignoble Mechanicks, but of Credit among the People: which things happened two years after the Government had been Controuled by Messer Mafor The City being in this posture, with many Male-contents within, and many Banified men abroad, there happened to be among the Exiles at Bolonia, Picchio Cuvicciali. Thomas de Ricci , Antonio de Medici, Bennet Spini, Anthony Girolami, Chris Stopher Carlone, with two other of mean Condition, all Young men, Couragious, and ready to Attempt any thing to return into their own Country: to them secret Intelligence was given by Piggiello, and Baronio Cavicciulli, who lived Admonished in Florence. That if they would come into the City, they would privily receive them into their Honfes, from whence, making a Sally, they might will Majo de Albizi, and call the People to Arms; vvho being discontented, would be ready to take the Alarum especially, since they knew they should be seconded by the Ricei, Adnicari, Medici, Mannelli, and many n

7

á

d

i,

à

V

0

b

9

ń

or other Familyes. Herened with this hepes, on the fourth of August, 1997, they the Ban came into Planence, and being privily on Plerence, tred, as they were appointed, They fore a- "197. bout to observe Messer Majo resolving with his death to begin the Tuenult's Meffer Majo comes out of his House, and flops at an Apothecanies, neer great St. Paters: Confo, who had the Charge of wasthing him informes the Conspirators, who presently taking Arms, came to the place, but he was gone. However, not daunted for having failed in this first delign, they turned to wards the old Market, and killed one of the Adverse party, and thereupon giving the Alarm, Cryed out to the people to Armes, Liberty, Liberty; and let the Tyrants die. Thence turning towards the new Market, at the end of the firent Calimana, they flew another; And following with the fame Cryes their way, and none taking Arms, they retreated to the Hall Nighistofa's whose getting on a high place, and having a great multitude about them, who came rather to fee them than to affilt them, they cryed our to the People with loud voices to Arin, and free themselves from that Servitude which was fo hateful to them, affirming that abe oppression and grief of the Male-contents of the City, rather than any particular Injury done so themselves, bad moved them to attempt their Delivery. And that baving beard, that many of them prayed to God to give them an opportunity of revenging themselves, which they E ec 4

they would be ready to do whenever they had a Head to lead them, they much wondred that baving now Heads to lead and defend them, They stood like men amazed, waiting till those that came to give them Freedom were put to Death, and their flavery redoubled: That it was frange, that they, who upon the fmallest Injury, were wont to fly to their Arms, could now luffer fo many of their Citizens to be Banished, and so many Admonished, and not at all be moved when it was in their Power and Arbitriment, to restore the Exiles to their Country, and the Admonished to their Dignities. All which words, though true, did not one jot move the Multitude; either because they were Fearful, or because the Death of those two had made the Murtheters odious; So that the Deligners of this Tumult, feeing neither their Words, nor Deeds would move any one of the Multitude, too late perceiving how dangerous it is to stir up a people to Liberty, who are determined to Serve, despairing of any success in their Enterprize, they retreated into the Church of St. Reparata, where they that themselves up, not to fave their Lives, but delay their Death. The Lords troubled at the first Rumour had Armed, and lock'd up the Palace; but when they heard the buliness, and understood who they were that moved this Disturbance, and where they were shut up, they were again well affured, and fent the Captains with many Armed men to take them: So, that without much trouble

61

M

od

Ai

Ca

rouble the Church-doors were broke open, nd part of them, defending themselves; him, and part taken; who being examined, here was none other found guilty it but Barmio, and Pigiello, Canicciulli, who together with them were put to Death. After his accident felt out one of greater importance. The City had in these Times, as we fild before, Wars with the Duke of Milan, Confina who perceiving open Force did not fuffice to er. oppress it, had recourse to policy, and by means of some banished Florentines (of which all Lombardy was full) contrived a plot, to which many within were privy; in which it was agreed, That on a certain day, from the places most adjacent to Florence, a wat Number of the Bandiri, Skil'd in Arms. hould by the River Azno enter the City, and running first (accompanied with their friends within) to the houses of the Chief Ministers of State, kill them, and Reform the State as they pleafed : Among the Conpirators within was one of the Riccit calld Summiare, and as it generally happens in Confpiracies, That a few will not do, and a great many discover it, whilst Sammiato Strove to pick up Companions, he found an Answer; he revealed the matter to Silvefter Caviciuli, whom he thought the Injuries of Friends would have made faithful; but present Fear wrought more upon him then future Hopes, fo that he went and discovered the whole plot to the Lorde; who cauing Saminiato to be taken, forced him by torments

á

è

3 s

×

i

is

6

ie

it

út

at

ip li-

at

cy d,

ed

ch

ole

Conflicu-

torments to declare the whole particulars of the delign; but of the Conspirators; no one was taken but Ibomas Davist, who coming from Bolonia, not knowing what had happened in Florence, was as foon as he Arrived, laid hold on : All the roft a upon the apprehending of Saminiato, affrighted fled. Saminiato and Thomas punished according to their deferts. The Balia of fove ral Citizens was constituted with Authority, to make Inquilition after Delinquents, and fecure the ftate: They made Rebels for of the Family of Ricei, fix of the Albert two of the Medici, three of the Scali, two of the Strozzi, Bindi Altoviti, Berna Admiari and many Trades-men. The Admonished likewife all the families of A berti, Ricci, and Medici, for ten years excepting some fevy of them: and among those of the Alberti, Messer Antonio we not Admonished, being looked upon a a Peacable man. It happened that the fear and jealousie of this Plot not being to quite blown over, there was a Monk taken who had been observed, whilst the Conspirators were contriving their Buliness to go often to and again from Bolonia o Florence: He Confessed that he had brough Geveral Letters to Messer Antonio; where upon he was presently taken, and thous King of Iol from first to last he denyed it, he was Com victed by the Monk, fined in a Sum of Money, and Banished to three hundred missing Nor di distance from the City. And, because the nd R Alberta

Napl the li

to th

which emiti

Mersi daily put the State to grouble, they offhed all of that Fartily labove fifteen ers of Age This Accident happened in year 1400 and two years afterwards 1400. red John Galeanne Duke of Milar, suhole both (as we faid before) put an end to it War which had lasted emplye years: h which time, the Government having got are Authority, being now wirbout Engines road or at home, made that elections Atsame upon Pifa, which they bravely went nd remained quice within themselves will the year 1433: Only, in the year 1412 the 1412. New Ralia was fet up against them in who with new Laws, and Provisiones, stangethwith the Swander Adout that neither tiles wie, heggin to Was with Andinistic King of Ladding Wing of the life of that King; and the King having the life of that King; and the King having the life in that War the worst of it, yeilded to the Florentines the City of Cortona, of which he was Lord; but all like after, remiting his Forces, he renewed the War, which proved more dangerous than the which proved more dangerous than the inf; and had it not ended with his death, a did that with the Duke of Milan, the king had brought Florence in no less danger of losing her Liberty, than did the Duke. Nordid this War with the King end with the good Fortune than the other; for, the had took Rome, Siena, all la Marca, the lie had took Rome, Siena, all la Marca, Ben and Romagnia, and wanted nothing but Florence

the ball of the ba

ONE WAS

Florence to open a way for his Forces he march into Lombardy. And thus , Deall was to the Florentines a better Friend than any other they had, and more fortunate in faving them than all their Valour. After the death of this King, the City was quie within and without, for Eight years. At the end of which time , together with a War against Philip Duke of Milan, the Fa-Ctions sprung up anew, and were never appeafed till the ruine of that State, which from the year 1361, to the year 1434, had reigned, and with fo much Glory waged so many important Wars; adding to their Dominions, Arezzo, Pifa, Cortona, Livorne, and Montepulciano. And greater things had they done if the City had kept themelves United, and had not again fritred up the Ancient Humours, as in the next Book full be more particularly related. omved gild till lad gen Endstag gild bli have en

The End of the Third Book.

* W. T. W. T. 10

19. To see in the left of Dulid. I to be the did the Dulid.

Sale Files

and gottler heimer has , singer

to the same and a loop bed T H

man

PETC

Read was they Spring topological the Modes The H Ent serious pits

the thing renormal the the Chief of

Michivel armivers . Bed

FLORENTINE

ISTO

Written by

Nicholas Machiavel

districts have more amoigned BOOK IV.



ITIES, and especially those which are well ordered (and whose Administration is, by way of Republick) often alter their State and Government, not by distinction of Liberty and Servitude (as

Orders been ever been and mil none but rife our onw sight a their States around a condous to Tyre

many think,) but of Servitude and Licentionsness; for Liberty is only a Name, reerenced indeed by all but Dicentionfuefs is thé

Aaaa

Ш

than te in After

quiet

the thing effected by the Chief of the People, and their Servitude fought for he the Nobles: They all being infected with a an Ambition, which would not willingly be fubicated either to the Laws of God or in Man. True it is, that when there happens on (which is very rare) by the good Fortune Sa of a City, that a good, wife, and powerful M Citizen attains to the Command, who will ordain fuch Laws as may either quiet (or. at least, restrain from doing Mischief) these Humours in Nobles and People; then fuch a City may be truly called Free, and that Government firm and lafting: For being founded on good Laws, and found Ordinances, there is not fo much necessity after- the wards of any mans particular Virtue to maintain them. With fuch Laws and Ordinances have many Ancient Common Th wealths (whose Governments were long-liv'd) been endowed. And such Laws and Orders have ever been, and still are, wanting in those who are ever and anon varying their States from Licentious to Tyrannical.

For in such, by reason of the powers and can be no stedfastness; one being unally fant to Good men, and the other to the wife; one may easily do lik, and the other can very hardly do Well; in the case lent men have too much Authority, and in the other, Fools; and it is not only required. fite, but necessary , that, both the one and wai the other be maintained by the Virtue or per Fortune |

by

T

TE

de

eit

the Att une

vil or.

rdi-

ter-

to

Or-

the foreme of one man; by whole Death it by my dither dwindle to nothing, or by his ith continual Advertity prove unprofitable. I gly by therefore, that the Government, which or in the Year 1381, had beginning fin Ploens mor) from the Death of Meffer George Sudi, proceeded first from the Villour of ful Meffer Mafo de gli Albizi, and afterwards by that of Niebolin Uzano was maintained. The City fived from the year 1414, to the nefe year 1422, very quietly; for King Ladies uch les dead, and the State of Lombardy divihat ded into feveral parts, there was nothing, ing either within or without, of which they food in fear. Next to Nicholas de Uzano, the chief Citizens of Authority were, Bartholomow Valore, Nero Nigi, Meffer Reinald Athizi , Neri di Gino, and Lapo Niebelini. on The Factions raised by the Discords being- ween the Albizi and the Ricci, were afterand wirds with fo much Scandal revived by Meffer Silvefter de Medici, that nothing ving | could suppress or quiet them : And though cal. that which was universally favoured, Ruled mly three years, and in the year 19 of the mly three years, and in the year 138 t was la City being infected with that Humour, it the would never quite be extinguished. Tis me, That the frequent Parliaments, and d in A from the year 1381 to 1400, reduced it dmost to nothing. The Chief Parmiles and which, as Leaders of the chief Parmiles and which, as Leaders of that Faction were en perfectively were the Alberti, Killer, and Me lici. Aaaa 2

tune

Medici who were more than once spoiled both of their Goods and Men; and if any remained in the City, all Honours were taken from them; which stroaks not only humbled that Party, but in a manner confumed them. Yet there still remained in the minds of men, a memory of the Injuries received, and a defire of Revenges which (because they had not power suitable to their wills) they kept lockt up in their breafts. Those popular Nobles, who peacably Governed the City, committed two Errours which were the ruine of their Government: First, That by a continuance of Rule they grew Proud and Infolent; and the Second, That by reason of the Envy they bore one another, and, for having had too long possession of the State, they begon to grow Negligent, and not have the watchful Care over those who might offend them, as they ought: they therefore, by their Corrupt Manners, daily reviving the Hate of the People, and not watching after new Seditions because they did not fear them, or fomenting them by the Envy they bore each other, the Family of the Media came to regain Authority. The first a mong whom, that began to rife again, was Fobn di Ricci. This man having possesso himself of great Riches, and being Naturally Courteous and Liberal, by Concellion of those which Governed, was advanced to the Supream Magistracy; which was by the Publick received with fo much joy.

of C

re.

ly n-

in

104

cir

WO

0

of nd

ry rad

har by

the

fter

fe

attl

hou

1 00

b

che

e Multitude thinking they had now got a elender, that the wifelt and mell prydent nere (not without cause) jealous of it, he arte they saw the Ancient Humours again egin to take life: Nor was Nicholas Unane ranting to advertise of it the other Citiensi, representing to them how dengerous was to cherish one of so universal a Rapuadon; and that it was calle to crush Diforders in the Egg, but hard remedying them when they were full hatcht and lown. That be knew John had many parts and endowments Superious to Silver the that Niebalas was not at all littled to by is Equals, who envyed his Reputation defired rather some Allistance to demelshim. These Humours thus let a worker in Florence , and secretly gardening to a ad Philip Visconti , second Sou of Jahn shilly vis-Galeagen, being by his Brothers death be- on Dake ome Lord of all Lambardy, and imagining leeks imfelf able enough for the Attempt, he and a mighty define to make himself Lord Genous, which now under the Dukeome of Messer Thomas de Campo Fregoso, med free; but he was formewhat diffrustof bringing that or any other Enterrise to perfection, if he first concluded not a new League with the Florentines, the Reputation of which only he thought would e fufficient to procure his fatisfaction. He therefore fends his Ambassadours to Flan muse to demand it Many Citizens were Advice not to grant it (who yet wished Aqaa 3 Flore single

He 12/23 Bush bed

of Milan with the Floresti

Pint.

a continuance of that Peace which had for many years been maintained betwixt them for they knew the Advantage and reputation would accrue to him by it, whilft the City reaped little or no benefit; others were of opinion to grant a new League, and in it impose such Conditions upon him, that If he passed them, his evil intentions might be discovered, and they (if he should break the Peace) more justly make War against him; but however things were argued, 'a Peace was concluded, whereby Philip promiled not to concern himself in any thing on this fide Pannare or the river Magra. This accord made, Philip takes Brefchia, and foon alter Geneva, contrary to their opinion who in Florence had advised the Peace : for a men thought Brefchia would be defended the Venetians, and that Genova would de fend it felf. And because in the Agreemen made by Philip with the Duke of Genova, h had referved Serazama and fome other Towns on this fide the Magra, with Con nant, That whenever he would alienathem, he should be obliged to sell them the Genovese: Philip by this means violated the Peace, and he had belides o tred into League with the Legat of Bolon which matters very much angred our Co zens: And made them (doubtful of Ne Mischiels) prepare New Remedies. Whi disturbances coming to Philips Knowled he fends Ambaffadors to Florence, either

justify himself, or to make an essay of t

He takes Brefchia

And violates his Peace with Florence.

Florentine

th

n t

of

brentinesdefignior elfe, to full them in Secus expretending to be surprized at the Jealouthey had of him, and offering to renounce thing done by him, that might beget e least suspicion. Which Ambassadours, d nothing else but divide the City for one divided art (and those the men of most Reputatiin the State), judged it convenient to rm, and be in a readiness, to counter any ignes of the Enemy, for when these preparations were made, if Philip remained wet, War was not begun but Peace provifor: but others, out of envy to those that governed, or fearful of the War, were opinion they ought not to suspect a riend too lightly nor had he done any thing ferving to much Jealoufy! But they w very well that the creating the ten, and hiring Souldiers, was bidding deliance to great a Prince to the ruin of the City, thout any hopes of advantages it being possible for us, whilst Romania lay been to become Lords of any thing we ald conquer, and, we not being in a ndition to attempt any thing on Romania, wife of the Neighbour-Hood of the urch. However their Authority who one for preparation of War, prevailed o- They pretheirs who were for a fullen peace, and was. hich edg, er to ayed new Taxes. Which because they te laid heavier on the Inferiour People the wealthier Citizens, tilled the City of heart-burnings, and every one conpolitical k Aaaa 4 demned

her ve-tatt n to

Cit

tim

Book IV. demned the power and Ambition of the great ones, accusing them that to fatisf their own appetites, and to oppress and De mineer over the People, They had raifed unneceffary War. They were not yet come to an open breach with the Duke, but affaire flood in a very ticklish posture, for the Date at the request of the Legat of Bolowia (who stood in fear of Meffer Antonio Bentivort who being driven out of the City held Caffle of Bolonia) had fent fome of his forces thither, which bordering on the Domnions of Florence, made that flate jealous of the intent, but that which startled ever one, and became the greatest occasion of the War, was the Dukes expedition to Fin li. George Ordelaff was Lord of Find who dying left Theobald His Son under Guardianship of Philip: And (though t Mother jealous of fuch a Guardian) h fent him to Lewis Alidoffo, Lord of In her Father; yet the was forced by the ple of Impla, to perform the Will of Dead, and to relign him again into the hi of the Duke; whereupon, Philip, to give less suspition, and better conceal his tentions, commanded the Marques Ferrara to fend Guida Torello a competency of forces to take (as his De puty) possession of the Government of Fali; and thus fell that Town into Phil power; which Wars when (together the fending forces to Bolonia) it came to

known at Florence, facilitated the Determine

tions of War, through full they found great polition, and John de Medici publickly diff ded them: urging that though they were artain of the Dukes ill intentions, ver ere it better to flay till he gave the affault, en fielt to attempt him; for in that cafe War would, in the judgment of the Dakes part as ours a Nor could they fo reaably demand those Affistances, which owife they might, if his ambition were if discovered and that, with other Hearrs, adother Forces thould they defend their own then other mens. The other Party nemy in their own Houses, but bravery to meet him; that Fortune is kinder to the Affailer than the Defender ; and that the damge would be less (though the charge aght be greater) to make their Enemies Country the Seat of War, than their own. Whereupon this opinion prevailed, and it ses determined, That the Council of Ten City of Furli out of the Dokes hands Philip seeing that the Florentines would tch from him those things he had undernien to defend , laying alide all Respects, ant Agnolo of Pergola with the body of an homy to Imola, to the end, that that Lord being builed in his own Defence, might and agualo coming near Inola, whill the livestime Forces were yet at Medigliana, the Seafon

For iter

Season being so Marp, that the Ditches of the City were frozen, he one night took the Town, and fent Lewis prisoner to Milan. The Florentines feeing Imola loft, and the War broke out, fent their Army to Furli, who laid Siege to the City, and ftreightned it on all fides. And because the Dukes Forces should not unite to relieve it they had taken into Pay Count Alberight who, from the Town of Zoganara, overrun the whole Country as far as Imila Aguelo of Pergola, feeing he could not fecurely relieve Frinli, our Forces had fo strongly begirt it, resolves to attach Zoganara; judging. That the Florentines would not let him take that Town, and if the would relieve it, they must raise their Siege before Furli, and with some disadvanta come to a Battle. He therefore constrained Duke Alberigho's men to come to Condi tions, That if they were not in fifteen dain relieved by the Florentines, they would for render. This News foon arrived both to the Florentine Camp, and City; and every one being defirous the Enemy should not carry away fuch a Victory, became the Occation of their gaining a much greater : For the Camp raised from before Furli to re lieve Zoganara, almost as soon as they came to engage with the Dukes Forces, were routed, not so much by the Valour of the ther; for ours having marched for fever hours in very deep dirt, and through vio

The Flat restmes totally routed. i

ST.

6

.

of

ook

Mi. and

and

the

T.

bo, ter-ola.

10

16

No.

ould they iegg tage inco

lates fur-

m

00-

For

nt-ami

vere hei

lent Rains, came wet and weary to encounter a fresh Enemy, that easily overcame them. Yet in so great a Discomsture, famous throughout all Italy, died no more but Signior Ludovico Albizi, and two more of his people, who falling off their Horses were ftrangled in the Mud. The whole City of Florence was infinitely, afflicted at the News of this Defeat, but principally those Great men who had advised the War, who now beheld their Enemies ftrong, and themselves disarmed, destirute of Friends, and the People averse to them, and in all places with bitter and reproachful words reviling them, complaining of their heavy Taxes laid on them to make a War without cause, and uttering such Taunts as these: What did they only create the Ten to fright The ? the Enemy? How bravely they have relie- plo m ved Furli, and rescued it out of the Dukes hands? Its apparent now what their Arms and Determinations were; not to defend our Liberty, which is indeed their Enemy, but to increase their own Power, which God has justly diminished. Nor is this the only Enterprize for which they have burthened the City, for (belides many others) that against King Ladislaw was just like it. Whither will they now fly ter help? to Pope Martin, harraffed by them for Braccio's fake? to Queen Joan, whom by abandoning they have forced to cast her self into the arms of the King of Arragon? With many other scoffing Expressions, usual with

101100

them.

ATHER SHE

THE THEFT

The Lord an Angry people : Wherefore the Lords thought convenient to affemble many of the Citizens, who by good words might quier thefe Commotions of the Multitude: to whom Messer Rinaldo de Albier (the elder Son of Meffer Majo, who by his own virtue, and the memory of his Father, afpired to the Chief Degrees in the City) spoke at large : Remonstrating, That is was not predence to judge of things by the Effetts. for milely times things well advised meet with croß Events, and things ill advised succeed; but if ill Counfel were praised for its Success. it would be an encouragement to Errour and prove very bureful to 1b; Commonwealth, because Evil Counsels are setdome bappy. So fikewise should we blame a prudent Onderraking, because it had not a joyful Event, we should discountenance Citizens, and make then he explained to them the necessity of undertaking the War, and that if it had not been carryed into Romania, it would have been brought into Tofcary: but fince it was the will of God their Army was defeated, the loss would be the heavier, the more that they forfook it. But if they would turn their faces tof ortune, and apply thole Remedies they might, they would neither be very lentible of the Lofs, nor the Duke of the Victory. And that they should not be cast down at the future Charge and Taxes; for that the former being rationally to grow lefs, the Burthen of the latter

1

at

ed

th

t

\$

n

8

١,

£ d

ß

latter would be much eafed a for that fewer reparations may ferve for Defence than offence. In the end, He exhorted them to mitate their Fathers, whole minds no Adversity being able to daunt, they had ever defended themselves against what Prince soever. Upon which, the Citizens perswaded by his Authority , entertained Count Odo, Son of the Son of Braceio, into their pay, giving Braces. him for Superintendent or Governour, Ni- entertaincholas Piccinnio a Fosterer of Braccio's, and Plopation of the greatest Reputation of any man that ever fought under his Colours, to whom they joyned many other Leaders, and mounted again many of their own men that had loft their Horfes. They appointed likewife Twenty Citizens to levy a new Tax, who taking heart upon perceiving how much the Great men were chit down for the last Defeat; laid it on them without any manner of respect. This Oppression griewoully offended the Principal Citizens, who at first were so Civil as to bear their load without much Repining; but when the inmilice of it began to be generally complained of, they began to confult how to cafe then felves ; which coming to the knowledge of many, the Councils not louly obanticled it, whereupon they , iso make the bitterness and hardinip of it be more effe-Qually felt, and to render it more odious, milered the Exactors of it, with all Sensticy, to collect it, giving authority to kill any one that should oppose the Bublick

Sergeants. From whence happened many difinal Accidents ; as , the flaying and wounding feveral Citizens: So that many feared things would have come to Blood and every prudent man dreaded some future Evil; the great men (used to be Respected) not able to endure, being thus trampled on and others defirous that every one should be equally Charged. Wherefore many of the Chief Citizens consulted together, and concluded it necessary to resume the Government, for that their want of Diligence and Care had given men Courage to reprove publick Acts, and encreased the boldpels of those who used to be Heads of th P lebeians. And, after several times difcourfing these things among themselves, they resolved upon a sudden meeting all to gether, and affembled in the Church of St. Stephen more than Seventy Citizens, by the leave of Meffer Ridolfi di Fidi, and Francis Gianfigliazzi, who then fat as Lords John de Medici met not with them, either because he was not Summoned (they being jealous of him) or, because he would no (differing from them in Judgment) men Meffer Rinaldo de Albizi Spoke to the all, and fet forth the flate of the City, a how by their Negligence it was returned into the power of the Plebeians, from whom it had, in the year 1381 been delive red by their Fathers. He put them in min of the wickedness of that Government, which Ruled from 1377 to 80, and th

Speech of Rinaldo de Albizi. t

n

el

th

C

W

th

m

W

d)

9年7日5日9年9

to district the rest that the

by it, there were none there present but had either a Father or a Grandfather flain; how they were falling into the like Dangers, and the City relapling into the like Diforders; for the Multitude had already laid a Tax at their own pleasure, and would ere long (if not by Force, or Law restrained) create Magistrates at their own Arbitriment, whereby one Party would live licentiously, and the other in danger, or under the Tyranny of some one whom they should make Prince. Thereupon affirming, that every one who loved his Country, or his Honour, ought to refent it, and call to mind the Valour of Bardi Maneini, who redeemed, with the ruine of the Alberti, the City out of those dangers that then encompassed it: and fince, the occasion of this boldness affumed by the People, proceeded from the numerous Squittini, or Imborfations, by the Negligence of those that ordered the Purses, whereby the Palace became filled with new and Rascally Fellows, he concluded there was no other way to remedy it, but by restoring the Government to the Grandees, and taking away the Authority of the Inferiour Arts, reducing the Fourteen Companies to Seven, whereby the Plebeians would have less power in the Councils, as well because their Numbers would be diminished, as because the Authorities of the Grandees would be aug-

mented, who out of their ancient Malice would still hate them? Affirming it an act

of Prudence to know how to make use of Men, according to different Occasions; for if their Pathers had made use of the Plebeing to root out the Infolence of the Grandees, now the Grandees were grown Humble, and the Plebeians Infolent, it were just to bridle their Insolence with the help of those. And that this business might be managed either by Policy or Power, to either of which they might have easie recourse; for some of them being of the Magistrates of the Ten, might, without much difficulty; bring Forces privily into the City. Meffer Rinaldo was praised, and his Counsel approved by every Body, And Nicholas Urana among others faid, That all that had been Spoken by Messer Ringldo was true, and the Remedies good and certain, provided they might be applyed without manifest Division of the City, which would follow of it felf if they would draw John de Medici to their Party; for he concurring with them, the powers of the Multitude being without a Head, could do no great Injury; but without his concurrence there was no effecting it but by Arms, which he thought hazardous, both because they might not overcome, or if they did, might not enjoy their Victory modestly refreshing their memories with their own past Records, and how they would not, when they might with eafe have done it, remedy these Inconveniences; whereas now, there was no way left of doing it (without hazard of greater danger) but

8

R

11

F

Ŷ,

ai

th

go fo

F

16

72

du

But by gaining him. Committen was therefore given to Meller Rinaldo to confer with John, and endeavour to prevail with him to joyn with them: The Gentleman performed his Committion, and in the most obliging terms he could invent, exhorted him to be Athitant to them in this Enterprize, and not by favouring a Multitude increase their boldness, to the ruine of the Government and of the City. To which fobri John de Answered , That he believed it the Office Medic's of a wife and good Citizen, not to after the quality accustomed and usual Orders of the City, there being nothing exposes then more than the Change of them; for thole variations must offend many, and where numbers are discontented, ill Accidents may well be daily feared. That in bis Opinion this defign of sheirs was in two things very pernicious First By the glving Honours to those who beving never bud them will effect them tell, and not baving them have tell reason to complain; And the other, By taking them from those who being acceptomed to enjoy them, will never be at rest rell they get them restored. And thus, the injury done to one Party will feem much greater than the benefit done to the other : to that the Authors of it will gain but few Friends and Many Enemies , and the latter will be much more ready to infure them, than the others to defend them. Men being naturally more prone to revenge Injuries than requite Kindneffes, because this brings Damage with it and the other Pleasure and Profit. Then

Aniwer to

ei

2

n

y

10

H

00 r)

ut

Boo

m

Dif

felf

diti

inte

the

of I

ing

this

An

bein

him

favo

ness

vvl

En

gain

VVC

and like

TVO

or

foly

kno

Div

ten

cret

Mr

of ?

An

not

ent

thir

favi

2 13

Then particularly addressing himself to Meffer Rinaldo; And you (faid he) bad you well weighed the Events of things, and under what vizards of Deceit men walk in this City, would not be fo bot in this determination; for whoever Counsels you to it, when with your Power they have taken away the Authority from the People , will with their affiftance, whom you must by such an injury make your Enemies, take away yours from you. And it will bappen to you as it did to Meffer Bennet Alberti, who confented by per-Swafion of those, who had no kindness for him to the raine of George Scali, and Thomas Strozzi, and soon after was by those very people that bad perswaded bim to it, fent into Banishment. He therefore exhorted him to a more mature deliberation of the Matter, and that he would imitate his Father, who having gained an universal Reputation with the People, flighted the malignant tempers of the few. He therefore advised, That whoever had less than half a Florins Tax to pay, should be left to his own Choice to pay or no: And, that on the daies the Council affembled, every man should be secure from his Creditors; Concluding, that for his part he would leave their City in the Order he found it. These things being reported abroad, gained John Reputation, and contracted a general Hate upon the other Citizens, from vvhose Conversation he utterly vvithdrew himself, least he should give them encouragement under his Countenance

0

16

.

.

y

.

1

S

0

r,

0

h

CS

ı()

X

0

ıØ

0

T.

C

d

T

d

lomes I

to miable

wolaw

anticas

-15005

. 200.12

enance to contrive Novelties; and in his Discourses he every where explained himfelf as a man deligning not to foment Sedition, but extirpate it; and had no other intent but to promote, as far as in him lay, the Union of the City. At which, many of his Followers vvere discontented, vvishing that he voculd rather in matters of this nature appear more brisk and lively: Among vvhom vvas Aleman Medices, vvho being naturally fierce, continually incenfed him to the perfecution of his Enemies, and favouring his Friends, condemning his coldness and deliberate vvay of proceeding, which he urged as the Reason, made his Enemies vvithout any respect Conspire aminft him, which Contrivances of them would one day come to be the ruine of him and his Friends. His Son Cofmo urged him likewise to the same things ; but John would not be moved by any Discoveries or Prognostications, from his settled Refolves: however the Faction vvas already known every where, and the City in open Division. There were in the Palace, attending the Lords, two Cancellieres, or Secretaries, one called Mr. Martin, the other Mr. Pagolo. The last favoured the Faction of Uzana, and the first that of Medices: And Messer Rinaldo (seeing John vvould not agree with them) thought it convenient to get Martin removed from his Office, thinking thereby to have the Court more avourable; but the Adversaries getting Intelligence

telligence of it, Martin was not only de-

fended, but Pagolo turned out, to the great regret and displeasure of his Party; which had foon produced dire effects, had it not been for the War that hung over the City. then extreamly terrified at the Defeat of 2 gonara: for whilft these things were bandied within, Agnolo of Pergola had taken all the Towns poffeffed by the Florentines in Remagnia, (except Castracazo and Modiglia) fome of the places being but weak, and o thers ill Guarded. In the taking of which places happened two things, by which may be known how much Valour is effeemed even in an Enemy, and baseness and Cowardize despised. Braggio del Milano wa Governour of the Rock of Monte Perrofi who, when the Enemy had fet fire round about him, and that he faw no way to fave the Fortress, he threw down Beds and Houshold-stuff from that part above, which had not yet taken fire, and upon them cal down his little Children, crying out to hi Enemies: Here, take those goods which For tune bas given me, and which you may beres me of ; but the Goods of my Mind, who glory and bonour refide, I will neither gin you, nor can you force them from me. The Enemy upon this presently ran to fave the Children, and brought him Ropes and Lad ders to fave himself, but he would not accept them, choosing rather to die in the midft of the flames, than live by the favour of the Enemies of his Country. An Exam-

Bramples of the cfleem of Valour, and consempt of Cowatdize.

- ple

n

m

Z

hi

tle

W

2000

hin

afti

thi

and

tur

Cou

got

duc

tint

the

to F

SY

of the visit of the second of

de worthy of often praifed Antiquity, and much the more wonderful because now more rare. His very Enemies reflored to his Children all that could be faved, and with great Care fent them to their Kindred; nor was the Commonwealth less kind to them, for while they lived, they were maintained at publick Charge. The contrary to this happened in Galeana, where Zanobi del Pino was Podefid, or Mayor, who without any Defence furrendred the Fortress to the Enemy, and to compleat his Villany, advised Agnolo to leave the Alps of Romania, and come among the litthe Hills of Tofeary, where he might make War with lefs hazard, and more gain. Agwho would not endure the baferiefs and treachery of this mans Soul, delivered him up as a Prey to his vilett Servants, who, after many Scoffs and taunts, gave him nothing to eat but Paper painted with Snakes and Serpents; telling him, That by that diet they would make him, from Guelph turn Ghibelline; fo that, pining and languithing in few dayes he dyed. Mean while Count Oldo, and Nichola Piccinino were got into the Vale of Lambna, to try to reduce the Lord of Faenza to the Florentimer tide, or at least hinder Agnolo of Persome from making farther Inroads in Romiguin: But that Valley being frong, and the Inhabitants all bred Souldiers, they flew od flain, Ode; and carryed Niebolin Piccining prisoner and Picto Pariza. But Fortune pleafed that the forest 24 1

Bbbb

Florentines should gain that, by being overcome, which polibly had they been Conquerours, they had not obtained for Nicholas vyrought fo with the Lord of Faenza, that he made them become friends to Florence; by which Agreement Nicholas was fet free, but could not himself follow that Counsel he had given to others; for contracting with those Citizens about his Entertainment, whether the Conditions feemed to him too low, or that he thought he could do better elsewhere he went from Arezza (where he was in Garrison) into Lombardy and took pay of the Duke. The Florentines terrified at this Accident, and daunted with fo great Losses and Expences, judging themselves no longer able to maintain this War alone fent Ambassadors to the Venetians, to detire them (whilft yet with ease they might) to oppose themselves to the growing greatnels of a Man, whom, if they permitted to proceed, would in the end be no less pernicious to them than to the Florentines; and Francis Carmignuola, a Man in the times held to be most expert in War, and who had formerly ferved in Armes under the Duke, but was fince rebelled against him, exhorted them to the fame. The Venetians were at first doubtful, not knowing how far they might trust Carmignuols, whose peike with the Duke they feared might be reconciled; but whilst matters stood thus in suspence, it happened that the

The Florentines crave Aid of the Venetians.

Dake.

m

in

fr

re

hi

TE

C

tl

21

n

b

cen

d a

ord

be-A-

uld

gi-Ci-

her

O

ere,

s in

of

réat

ves

one.

decat-

rted

per-

ees ;

hefe

and

nder

ainft

Ve

ving

ola.

ared

ters

the

ake,

EDGIN M

Duke, by meanes of a fervant of Carmimols, caused him to be poisoned; the byfon was not ftrong enough to kill him. ut reduced him almost to extremity, the coasion of which being discovered; took way all suspicion from the Venetian rand the Florentines continuing to folicite them, made League with them, Every one to make War at their own Charge, and the Acquilitions made in Lombardy to be the Venetians, and those in Komania and Tofeany the Florentines; and Carmignuols was made Captain General of the League. By this meanes the War was brought into Lomber- ala Geney, where it was Vigorously prolecuted by ral of the Carmignuola, who in few months took mamy Towns from the Duke, together with the City of Brefeia; which Conquests were in those Times, and as War was then made, thought wonderful. This War had lafted from 1422 to 27, and the Citizens of Florence were weary of the Taxes as they were hitherto laid, which made them refolve to renew them in another manner : And because they should be proportioned according they ordered them to be laid upon Stock, and that whoever had a hundred Florines Effate, should pay one half Tax: and the Law and not Men being to distribute it, many Wealthy Citizens were forely grieved: And before it could be determined, it was by them opposed; Only John Medicer openly commended it, and obtained it, and because in distributing it, they Taxed every Bbbb 2

The Catefo: a Tax upon every mans Stock mans flock (which the Florentines call Accaffere) they named this Sax Cataffe, This Law in fome measure regulated the Tyranny of the Great men, because they could not now best the Inferior People, and make them with threats hold their tongues in Councils as formerly. The Tax was therefore universally accepted by them, but by the great men with infinite displeasure submitted to But as it happens, That men are never fatisfied, but having got one thing defire another, fo the people not content with the equality of the Tax imposed by Law, they demanded a fearch into times paft; and Inquiry to be made what the rich men had paid less than the Catafto, and that they should be made to pay so much more to equal them, who to pay what they ought not, had fold their Inheritances. This demand fartled men more than the Catalto had done, and they defended themselves by condemning it as the most unjust thing in the world, being placed upon moveables. poffessed to day, and gone to morrow; and that belides, that there were many who had Monies hid, which the Catatto could not find out s to which they added, that those who Governed the Common-wealth, leaving their own business undone, ought to be the less charged by it; and, that it was not just that the City should have their Labour, Industry, and Mony too; and only the others, Mony. But others who were pleased with the Catafto Answered, That if Moveables

Cor

who

Mo

Adv

veri

coni

exp bid

car

And

neit

hi

Tex.

rin.

is Id

ce in

ben ignt by

es h

at

re

ht e-

es.

in

es,

nd

ad

ot

4-

be

10

ır,

0-

[ed

100

les

ales varyed, the Taxes might likewife vary by varying them often that income ency be remedied. And for those who ad Monies hid, there was no account be made; for what they imployed not to benefit, there was no reason should pay nd when once they imployed it, it would be discovered: And if they thought much to employ their times and pains for the Commonwealth, they flould give over; for mough loving Citizens were to be found, who voculd willingly affift it with their Mony, and Counsel too. And belides, the vernment were fo great, that they ought to content themselves with them, without apecting to be freed from the burthers hid on others. But they guest not where he Shooe pincht; for it grieved them molt hat they could not wage a War without earing a share with others in the Charge. And if this course had been taken before. either the War with King Lad Mats, nor that with Duke Philip had ever been begun, which were only made to enrich the Citias, and not out of Necessity. But their firing Humours were quieted by Jobia Medices, who alleadged, That it was not intenient to make a review into past the to, Moder enat to provide well for the fittiere; and of the deavours lines had bitherto been unjust, they outhe to to prevent darn thanks to God for finding out down a into past by to adjust them, and with it might be rd- Taxis. ber a means to rennite than divide the City;

ofonos antic sitius

Bbbb 3 which

Peace concluded with Mi-

which must needs be if they made an Inquifition into past Imposts, to make them equal with the present: that be that is content with a moderate Victory, chooses the better part; for they who would over-do things, often lofe With these, and such like Words, he quieted these Humours, and put a stop to all further Disputes about the Equality. In the mean time, a Peace was with the Duke concluded at Ferrara, by means of the Popes Legate; the Articles of which vvere not at all observed by the Duke: whereupon they of the League again renewed the War, and fighting with the Duke at Maclovio, defeated him. . After which discomfiture the Duke made new Proposals of Agreement, to which both the Venetians and Florentines consented: These, because they grew jealous of the Venetians, thinking they fpent too much to make others Great; Those, because they perceived Carmignuols; after the Dukes defeat, proceed very flowly, so that they could not well tell how they might longer trust him. Peace was therefore concluded in the year 1428, by which the Florentines were restored to all the Towns they had loft in Romania, and Brefeia remained in the Venetians hands; and the Duke moreover gave them Bergamo, and the adjoyning Territory. The Florentimes spent in this War 3500000 Ducats, by which the Venetians gained Power and Greatness; and they, Poverty and Differtion. Peace being no fooner Concluded abroad,

t

S

t

V

fc

A

21

Ci

to

te

b

fi

2

£B

fa

off

qui-

mal

rrt ; lofe

he p' to

In

uke

opes

t at hey

and

de-

the

ent,

ren-

rew hey

eat ; ols;

wly,

hey

ere-

hich the

Bref-

the

and ines

by

and len-

dod

oad.

abroad, but the War was revived at home : New Divi-For the principal Citizens not able to fuffer Florence, the Catasto, nor knowing any vvay how to case themselves of its intollerable burthen, they contrived how to raise up more Enemics against it, that they might have the more force to oppose and suppress it : Declaring to the Officers of the Impolition, that by Law they vvere commanded likewife to make Enquiry into the Towns abroad, fubject to them, and to find out, if there were there any Florentines Goods; vyhereupon the Subjects were all on appointed daies ordered to bring in Schedules of Upon which the Volterans their Estates. discontented, sent their Complaints to the Senate, which so incensed the Officers of the Impolitions, that they clapt eighteen of them in prison; which Action enraged the Volterans, yet out of respect to their Prifoners they for the present rebelled not. About this time John de Medices fell fick, and perceiving his distemper to be mortal, called Cosmo and Laurence his Sons, and told them: I believe the time of Life allot- The Speech of ted me at my Birth, by God and Nature, is John Menow almost expired; and I shall die content, dies at his because I leave you Rich, Healthy, and in fuch a Condition, that you may (if you follow my foot-freps) live bonourably in Florence. and effeemed by all men. Nor is there any thing contributes more to my present fatisfadion than the Conscience of never having offended, but rather (to the utmost of my Bbbb 4 power)

power) pleasured all men: And let me perfinade you to do the like, and (if you would live secure and quiet) to assume no more of the Government, than by the Laws and by Men is given to you, which will never be atsended either with Envy or Danger; for it's what men feize by Violence, and not what's freely given them, that creates a Hatred of them. And many there are who out of a Covetous defire of other mens , have lost their own Possessions, or enjoyed them with Care and Trouble. By observing this Golden Rule bave I, (among fo many Factions and contrarieties of Opinions) not only maintained , but increased my reputation in this City; and you, following the same Courses, will find the same effects; but doing otherwise, you cannot exped your ends to be bappier than theirs, whe in your memory, bave undone themselves, and ruined their Families. Soon after he dyed, univerfally lamented by the City, as his excellent Qualities deserved. This John vvas fo remarkably Charitable, that he not only gave Alms when it was asked, but many times prevented the Petitions of the Poor. He loved all men, prailing the Good, and pitying the Bad. He never fought after Offices, yet had all conferred on him: He never went to the Palace uncalled for; was a lover of Peace, and a detefter of War; a reliever of men in Advertity, and a supporter of them in Prosperity; a stranger to publick Rapine, and a fartherer of Common Good: Courteous he was in his Magistracics.

of

Co

re

tiz

rit

tu

fer

for

çu

up

ter

th

ar

be

pl

6

Q

a

I

1

i

t- ld of by ti-

.

of

27

nd TV

ies 11-

M.

ba, nd

d,

be

ot ut

he

d,

tet

Je.

25

a cr

on

cs,

cies, and though of no great Elequence, et of fingular Wildom. He feemed to be of a Melancholy Complexion, but was in Conversation obliging and merry. He died very rich in Treasure, but richer in his Citizens Love and good Report; whose Inheritances, as well of goods of Mind as Fortune, were by his Son Cosmo not only preferved, but enlarged. The Voluerrans were foon weary of Imprisonment, and to procure their Liberty, promised to comply with whatever was commanded: Whereupon, being fet free, at their return to Volterra, they found the time come wherein they were to make Election of new Priors; among whom was drawn one Julius a Plebeian, but of great Credit among the People, and one of those who had been imprifoned in Florence. He incenfed both for the publick and private Injury received from voltered the Florentines, (and more particularly rebels. perswaded by one John, a Gentleman that fat with him in the Magistracy; who encouraged him, by the favour of the People. and the power of the Priors, to take the City from the Florentines, and make himfelf Prince of it) ransacked the Town, seized the Florentine Governour, and, with confent of the people, made himself Lord of it. This Novelty happening in Volterra much disturbed the Florentines, yet having made so late an Agreement with the Duke, they hoped they had time to recover it: And not to let dip the opportunity, fent imme-

immediately Rinaldo Albizi, and Pala Strozzi, as their Commiffaries thither Justus having reason to suppose the Florentines would affault him craved Aid of Siena and Lucca, Siena denied him, alleadging, they were in League with Flarence; and Paul Guinigi, then Lord of Lucea, to regain the favour of the Floreneine, which he doubted to have loft during the War with Millan, not only refused 74. flus any Affiltance, but fent his Envoy prifoner to Florence. The Commissaries mean while, that they might find the Volterrang the more unprovided, speedily drew together their Men at Arms, and in the Neather Vale of Arno, and Province of Pila levyed fufficient Infantry, and marched directly to Volterra. Nor was Justus either upon the refusal of Aid from his Neighbours, or upon the approach of the Flor rentines to affault him, any whit difinayed, but trufting to the strength of the scituation, and largness of the Town, prepared for his defence. There was in Volterra one Messer Arcolano, Brother of that John who had perswaded Justus to seize the Principality, who being of great Credit among the Nobility, gathered together fundry of his Friends and Gonfidents, and declared to them, How God, by this Accident, had lent his helping hand to the Necessities of the City; for if they would now affent to take Arms, and thrusting Justus from his Lordship, restore the City to the Florentines.

CL.

of

al-

10-

of

h

og w-

ri-

an

116

e- a-

d,

1.

d

ie

0

1

f

tines, they would both themselves become the Heads of that Town, and preserve all its Ancient Priviledges. Whereupon, agreeing upon the matter, they presently went to the Palace where Justus refided, and the greater part of them staying below, Meffer Arcolano, with three more, went into the Hall where he was, and finding him with some Citizens, drew him apart into another Room, as if they would communicate to him some matter of importance, and there all falling upon him flew him: Yet were they not so nimble, but that Juflus had time to lay hands on his Sword, and before they could dispatch him, desperately wounded two of them; but not able to deal long with fo many, he was in the end flain, and his Carkass thrown out of the Palace: And those of Arcolano's Party taking Arms, furrendred the City to the Florentine Commissaries that lay ready at hand with their Forces, who without any farther Capitulations entred the Town, whereby the Volterrans made their Condition much worse than it was before; for, among other things, they were difmembred of most part of their Territories, which was reduced under a Lieutenancy. Thus was Volterra loft and gained in an in-reduce flant, and no occasion of War had remained, if some particular mens Ambition had not given a being to it. There had for a long time served the Florentines, in their Wars against the Duke, one Niebelas Forte-

braccio.

bruccio, Sifters Son to Brucchio of Perugia. Peace being Concluded, he was difinified by the Florenshier; and when the Revolution at Volterra happened, was quartered at Fuceebio; whereupon the Commisfaries thought fit to employ him and his Forces. And it was supposed, that whilst that Affair was in agitation, Rinaldo had perswaded him, under some pretended quarrel, to affail the Lucchefi, hoping to manage things to that the Florentines should own the Attempt, and make him General of the War. Volterra thus furprized, and Fortebraccio returned to his Quarters at Fucechio, either upon Rinaldo's perfwasions, or having defigned it himself, in November 1429, with three hundred Horse, and three hundred foot, feizes upon Kuoti and Compito, two Caftles of the Luchefi, and so marching forward plundred the whole Country. The News of which was no Tooner published in Florence, but the streets were filled with Committees of all forts, and most wished an Attempt to be made upon Lucea. The Chief Citizens favouring it, were the Mediei, and with them joyned Rinaldo, induced to it; either out of hopes it would prove advantagious to his Country; or, Ambition, prefuming upon the honour of the Victory. Those which disapproved it were Nicholas de Uzano, and his Party. 'Tis almost incredible there should be such variety of Opinions in one and the fame City, and that in fo material a point, as

ri

th

he

ap

fta

te

CO

ad

po

dr

W

A

th

th

ha

be he

33

making a War for those Citizens, and that very People, who, after Ten years Peace, had blamed a War against Dulle Philip, for defence of their Liberty. Now, after flich vall Expense, and reducing the City under fuch loads of Oppression and Necessity, eagerly preffed an Expedition against Lucca, and the invading the Liberties of others and on the other hand, those who had urged that, opposed this: So strangly variable are the Minds of men, and fo much more ready are the Multitude to feize anothers Right, than defend their own; for hopes of Winning prevails above fear of Loofing; this being never dreaded till it approach, but the other alwaies at a distance hoped for. And the People of Plarence were not only fwell'd with the flattering hopes of the Victories which Fortebraccio had, and might obitain, but encouraged by Letters from the Governours adjacent to Lucca: for the Deputies of Rescia and Vice wrote for leave, to take poffession of the Cattles offered to be furrendred to them, affiring that almost the whole Territory of Luces would fubrit Belides, when the Lord of Linea feur His Ambaffadour to Plarence, to complain of the Spoils made by Nicholas, and to intreat the Senate, not to commence a War against their Neighbours, and against a City that had always been their Friend Phis Ambaffadour was called James Vivian , who had formerly been kept Priliner by Paul Guinigi,

Sebares about a Was with Guinigi, Lord of Luces, for Conspiring gainst him, and though he were found guilty, had his life spared; and imagining Vivian had forgiven him the Injury, as he had pardoned him his life, he now trusted and employed him; but the memory of the danger he had paffed, prevailed with Meffer Vivian above the benefit received; for that being now come to Florence, he privily encouraged the Citizens to the War; and his encouragements being fortified with the hopes they had before conceived, made the Senate affemble a Council, wherein appeared 498 Citizens, before whom by the Chief of the City the Matter was debated Among the first that furthered the Enterprize (as has been faid before) was Meffer Rinalda, who fet forth the Advantages atcruing by the Victory, and the prefent fitness of the opportunity; the Duke and Venetians having deferted them; and the Pope (busied in the Affairs of the Kingdom) not able to succour them. To which he joyned the facility of winning that City, flave to a Citizen of its own, and thereby having loft its Native vigour, and ancient Care to defend its Liberty: So that by means of the People, studying how to drive out the Tyrant, or the Tyrants fear of them, Success was not to be doubted. He likewise laid before them the Injuries that Lord had done their Common-wealth, and how dangerous it were if the Pope or Duke should renew the War: Concluding

Debares about a War with Lucca, ty (

mít

by

w

10

nia ow

to.

eve

had

THE

Wa

agg

gai

rea

fac

W

ma

no tag

ter

th

A

lia

L.

d

g

d

10

f-

6

i

1

th le

ne

d

rail

er

-5

t-

0

pe

n)

he

y ,

by

nt

by

ve

of

He

at

h

pe

m-

ng

luding, that never any undertaking of the Florentine people was either more Eafy, more Advantagious, or more just. In opolition to which Opinion, Niebolas Da Vezano flood forth and faids That the City of Florence never undertook a more unjust nor a more hazardous Enterprize; for in the first place they wounded themselves by wounding a City of the Guetob faction. which had alwayes been most affectionate to Florence, and which with danger to itfelf, had received into its Sanchuary the banished Guelfes, that durst not abide their own Country: Nor was there any Record to be produced, That Lucca whill free had ever offended Florence; but if those which had enflaved her had done it, as first Castal ruccio, and now the present Lord, the blame was to be laid on the Tyrant and not the City. If therefore they would make War against the Tyrant, without waging it a gainst the Citizens, it would be much more reasonable; but since that could not be, he would never confent to the fpolling and licking of a City that had ever been their Friends however, fince Right and Wrong are things which now a daies were made no account of , he would urge them? no farther, and only confult of the Advantages our City might possibly gain by this attempt. Whereupon his opinion was, That those things only could be properly called? Advantagious, which were not probably? liable to loss and damage, and therefore he could

could not understand how my would reaso nably term that Enterprise advantagious, where the Lofs was certain, and the Profit doubtful : that certain loss would be the vall Charges attending fuch an Enterprize, which feemed to great that they were enough to terrifie any peaceable City, much more ours tired and harraffed with tedious War The Advantages proposed, would be the adding Luces to our Dominion, which he confessed would be great, but the doubts of fuccess were so Numerous, that the acquifition to him feemed impossible; Nor could it enter into his belief that either Duke Philip, or the Venetians, would be pleased with it; for the last appeared only to confent that they might not appear ingratefull, having lately with the Florentines Mony won to great a Dominion, and the other would rejoyce to fee us by a new War expeled to the Expense of more Treasure; So that dreined at once of our Men and Mony, we might be, by him, the caffer inteffed: Nor would he at any time, even in the height of the Enterprize; and in our highest hopes of Victory; want meanes to fend relief to the Lucobefic either covertly with Mony or by pretended diffiniting his Troopes, and fending them like Souldiers of fortune to their affiftance. He exhorted them therefore to wave the Enterprize; and Study fuch a manner of living with the Tyrant as they might be able to suppress their Enemies by themselves; for there was no readier

m

fei

VC

ens

E)

gric

ulu

gai

pea

leni

1 C

Ho

70. 1

poi

Nici

mer

Pro

Gen

he

t

2

)

ė

e

é

5

S

r

10

e

ρđ

ic

rei

d

er

en

ur

to

1y

119

of

ed

be

y

eir

no

ier

readier way to subdue them, than letting them fill live under the Tyrant, to be by him oppressed and weakned; and by prudent management it might be effected. That the Tyrane no longer able to maintain his power, nor they knowing how to Govern of themselves, must of necessity fall under our Protection. But the opposite humours having got the predominancy, he perceived his Advise not at all litted to, yet he would take upon him the freedom of Prognofficating, That they would ruth upon a War of certain and great expence, attended with many dangers within, and inflead of poffelling themselves of Lucca, free it from the Tyrants yoak, and from a weak and enflaved City, not only fet them at Liberty, but engage their Enmity, and create to themelves in time, an obstacle to the growing greatness of the Republique. Thus was this delign controverted, till at laft, as is ulual in fuch cases, they sought privately to War with gain Voices, fo that in the up-frot there ap- folved on. peared of the whole Number only 98 Diffenters; whereupon War was determined, a Councel of Ten Created to manage it, and Horse and Foot ordered to be levied. After-19 Gianni, and Rinaldo Albini were appointed Generals, and it was agreed, That Nicholas Fortebrace-should have the government of the places he had taken, he fill, profecuting the War under our pay. The Generals with their Army being arrived in the Territories of Lucea, divided their For-

Cccc

ces: Afterre marched down into the Plain towards Camagiore; and Pietrafanta; and Rinaldo with his Party went up into the Mountains, judging that the whole Country vvafted, the City would be eafily fubdued. This action proved unfortunate, not but that they furprized many Tovvns, but because there were great defects in the Management of both Generals. And moli certain it is Aftorre Gianni contributed much to his own dishonour. There is neer Pietra. Santa'a Vale called Seravezza, rich and full of inhabitants, vvho hearing the General was coming towards them, went to meet him, and submitting themselves, defired to be received as faithful Subjects of the Florentine people: Afterre made shew of accepting their submission, but afterwards with his Souldiers seizing all the Passes and Fortreffes of the Valley, he caused all the men to affemble in their principal Church, where he took them all Prisoners, and then facked and spoiled the whole Country, not fparing the Confecrate places; but in cruel and avaritious manner, robbing the Churches, and vvithout respect, abusing both Virgins and married Women. Thefe barbarous proceedings were no fooner related in Florence, but the whole City, as well as the Magistracy were offended at them; for some of the Serravezi who had escaped out of the Generals hands, fled to Florence, and in every Street, and in every Market place, filled the Ears of the People

The ill management of the Floren time Genesale,

u,

m nd

he

TY

ut

œ-14-

oli

ich

73-Full

ral

eet

to 10-

20rds

rch.

hen

not

n a

the

fing. hefe

TC-

1, 25

1 at had

fied

a e-

the ople

People with the relations of their Mileries infornuch, that encouraged by many Citirens, who were defirous to have the General punished, either because they indeed thought him a wicked Man, or because he was contrary to their faction withey event before the Council of Ten, and demanded Audience; to which, being admitted, one of them fpake in this manner : "We are The Com very well affured (most Mighty Lords) plaint of the Sone that your Lordships would afford both www. "belief and Compation to what we have now to utter, did you know in what " manner your General has used our Coun-"try, and how cruelly we have been treated by him. Our Vale (as may be found at large in your Records) was alwaies "Guelph, and has been a faithful Sanctuary of your Citizens, when perfecuted by the "Ghibellines they fled thither for fhelter: And our Ancestours have ever had in adoration the Name of this Noble Commonwealth, as the Heads of that Sect. Whilst the Lucebest were Guelphis li we willingly fubmitted to their Rule; but fince a Tyrant nurped over them wand they deferting their Old Friends, inclined to the Ghibelline Party, we have rather by force than good-will paid them Obedience. God knows how often we have prayed for an opportunity to tellific our zeal to the Ancient Cause and Party. But how blind are men in their defires? what we coveted for our Safety, is become our Cccc 2 Ruine :

"Rune! For no fooner heard we that your "Enfigus were marching towards us, but " we went forth to meet them, not as E finemies to oppose, but las our Ancestours Swere wont) to fubmic our Vale our Selves pur Lives and our Fortunes ; into the hands of your General; relying on "his faith, and believing to find him, if not "of the noble Florentine temper, yet at 30 wild " leaft not utterly void of Humanity: your "Lordships must pardon us, if the insup-"pertableness of our Sufferings constrain " us to foeak things undecent: That Gene-"neral of yours has nothing of a Man but the Prefence, nor of a Florentine but " the Name. He is the most deadly plague, "the most ravenous Tiger, and most exe-"grable Monfter Nature ever produced; for Affembling us in our Church, under "presence of speaking with us, he made is Captives burning and ruining all our "Valley! robbing facking and plundering "the Goods of the Inhabitants; beating "and flaying their Persons, defiling their "Wives, and ravishing their Virgins's may " forcing them from their tender Mother " arms, to make them a prey to the beaftly "Luct of his Souldiers." Had we by an "Injury deserved this from the Florente "People, or had we opposed his Arms "and been taken, we should have had less " cause to complain, nay rather we should " have accused our selves, and blamed those "Injuries, and that Arrogance of ours

the dies.

Misc F.

1000 July

which

4

..

46

u

4

4

Co

0:1 W. ..

which had brought those Mileries upon "us, but when difarmed we fubmitted "our felves, then to rob and fpoll us, and "treat us with for much defpite and reno-" miny, is a. Grief our hearts would burit "if we did not disclose it. And though we might have filled all Lombardy with "our Complaints, and to the scandal of this City, have spread abroad the fame "of our barbarous Injuries throughout all "Italy, we have forborn to do it, unwilling "to blemith to Noble, to Just, and to Com-" paffionate a Commonwealth, with the "villany and cruelty of one diffionest Citi-"zen, whose covetous temper, had we be-"fore our ruine been made sensible of, "hould have strained our setves to latisfie "his greedy mind (though it be infatiate, " and bottomless as the Sea) by giving up "part of our Substance to ranform the remainder: But fince that Remedy is too " late, we are forced now to have recourse " to your Lordinips, humbly befreehing you "to grant some relief to the Misfortunes of "your poor afflicted Subjects, that Men be not "by our Examples affrighted from fubmitting themselves to your Government: or, "if our infinite Miferies cannot move you, "yet let the fear of Gods Anger perswade you, who has beheld his Churches fackt, "and burnt, and our People betrayed in the "very bosoms of them. And herewith Concluding, they call themselves profitrate on the ground, befeeching that their Goods Cccc3

13

ur

οt

al

ur

an

10-

ut

ut 1e,

œ-

ł,

er

us

ng ng ng enr

lly ny ns

es

115

and Country might be reflored to them, and (though the Womens loft Honours could not be retreived) yet, that the Wives might be returned to their Husbands, and the Children to the Paren's. The barbarousness of this Fact being before reported, and now by the tongues and tears of thefe afflicted Men confirmed, so moved the Magiftracy, that without any delay they recalled Afterre, who was afterwards condemned and admonished. Inquisition was likewife made after the Goods of the Seravezefi, and all that could be found reftored, and the remainder were in process of time, by the City, satisfied. On the other side, Meffer Rinaldo de Albizi lay under the scandal of having perswaded the War, not for publick Advantage, but private Gains and, that fince his being made General, his eager defire of subduing Luces was vanished, and he was satisfied with robbing and spoiling the Country, stocking his own Farms with Cattle, and his Houses with plunder: Nor yet content with his own share of the prey, he bought the private Souldiers Purchase, and so from a General was become a Merchant. These Calumnies coming to his Ears, touched to the quick his high and haughty Soul, more than became a Man of his rank and gravity, infornuch, that fretted at the Magistrates and Citizens, without expecting or asking leave he returns to Florence, and presenting himfelf before the Ten, faid : That be very well knew

Rinaldo do Albizi acculed, leaves the Army,

-

7

1

b

t

Û

t

ŧ

1

TL,

153

es nd

3-

d,

a-

-

n-

as

d,

e,

e,

ot

r; is

20

g

h

n

te

3

k

2

10

d

-

knew bow great difficulty and danger there was in serving a loose People, and a droided City; for the one are credulous of corryidle Rumour, and the other punishes bad Success. never rewards the good, and blames the doubtful; fo that none praife bim that is Victorious, all condemn bim that Errs, and flander him that is Unsuccessful ; bis very Friends persecuting bim out of Envy, and bis Enemies out of Hatred: Yet be bad never stood so much in swe of Evil tongues; as to forbear, for fear of them, any Action that might redound to the advantage of bis City. 'In true, the prefent abuses and flanders had over-wrought bis patience; and made bim change bis Nature; He therefore besonght the Magistrates for the future, to be more ready to defend the Fame of their Citizens, if they expected their readiness to all for the good of their Country; and, fince Florence permitted. them not to Triumph, they would at least rescue them from the reproach of Evil tongues; remembring themselves to be Citizens of the Same Town, and might, Sometime or other, have those Charges imposed on them, might make them feel how bitter Calumny is to an bonest mind. The Ten temporizing strove to appeale him, and committed the Charge of the War to Neri di Gino, and Alamanno Salviati, who leaving off spoiling the Country, made their approaches to the Town; but because the Season was yet very Cold, they fat down at Cappannole, where, though the Generals thought they loft time, and Cccc 4 were

were defirous to lay a closer Siege; yet the Souldiers because of the bitterness of the Weather would not consent, though the Ten solicited them to Decamp, and would at admit no excuse at all. There was arthis time in Florence an excellent Architect, called Philip Brunbleschi, who with many

excellent Buildings had replenished our City, fo that he deserved after his death to have his Statue let up in Marble in the principal Church of Florence, with an Inscription on the Pedestal, testifying his Excellencies of that kind. This Man declared how Lucca, confidering the scituation of the City, and the Course of the River Serchio, might eafily be drowned, and was so politive in it, that the Ten gave him leave to try the Experiment, but his project produced only diforder in our Camp, and fafety to the Enemy for the Lucchefi with a high and strong Bank opposed the Course of the Water, on that fide whither they had turned the River, and then in the Night cut the banks of that Channel by which they conducted the Stream; so that the Banks towards Lucca being raised, and the Ditch, by which the Water was brought

broken, the Stream reverted into the Plain.

whereby the Camp was forced to draw far-

ther off, and could no more approach the

Town. This Delign proving thus unfuc-

cessful, the Ten that were newly Elected

fent Meffer John Guiccardine to be General

He with all speed possible begitt the Town,

Attempt made to drown Lucca.

and

C

tl

V

te

h

Ca

fa

ir

G

E

h

b

G

T

ne

10

d

at' 4,

to

hic

ilis

e-

12-J.

nd

m

0-

P,

rk

CV

he

ch

the

ıt, in,

ar-

the

ucted

ral.

NIL, and and the Lord of it finding himfelf now fireightned, by Advice of Anthony Roffe, (relident there from the State of Siena) fent Silvester Trems, and Lodovick Bontoff to Milan ! They on the behalf of their Lord, defired that Dukes Aid ; but finding him cold, they privately requested him to supply them with Forces, promising on the part of the People to deliver up their Lord Prisoner, and surrender to him the posfethon of the City: Affuring him, That if he accepted not this offer, the Lord would deliver up the Town to the Florentinen, who by large Promifes folicited him to it: which Suggestion put the Duke in such tear, that, laying alide all Respects, he gave order, that the Earl Francis Sforza, his principal Captain, should rublickly ask his Licence to go into the Kingdom of Naples; which having eatily obtained, he comes with his Forces to Lucci: though the Florengines mistrutiful of the Contrivance, and doubtful of the Iffue, had fent to Count Beccacino Alamanni to prevent him. Earl Sforze being thus got into Lite- sforze ca, the Florentine Camp retreated to Libra- comes to fatta; and the Earl presently marches and a. invests Pefcia, where Pagolo Diacetto was Governour, who taking Counsel rather of Fear than Honour, flies to Piftaia. And had not the Town of Pescia been defended by John Makivelti, who Commanded the Guards there, it had been dertainly loft. The Earl therefore failing to take it at the first

hefoghs.

first Assault, goes to the Borough of Bugiano, and takes it, and burns Stilians a Caffle adjacent. The Florentines growing sensible of these Incroachments, had recourse to a Remedy which had often fleaded them, knowing well that where Force failed to counterpoise a Mercenary Enemy, Corruption would turn the Scale; wherefore they made the Earl a proffer of Mony, to oblige him not only to depart, but to deliver them the Town. The Earl perceiving there was no more Mony to be had from the Lucchefi, resolved to accept it from those who could give it, and therefore struck a Bargain with the Florentines for 50000 Ducats, not to deliver up Lucea, which in Honour he could not do, but to leave it to its thifts as foon as the Mony should be paid; and that the People of Lucca might excuse him to the Duke for making this Agreement, he practiced with them the turning out their Lord. There was in Lucea (as hath been faid before) one Messer Antonio Rosso, Ambassadour from Siena: He, by Authority from the Earl, contrived, with the Citizens, the ruine of Pagolo, or Paul: The Chief of the Conspirators were Peter Cennami, and John Chivizano. The Earl lay encamped without the Town by the River Sercbio, and with him Lanzilaus, Son of Paul Guinigi, Lord of Lucea: fo the Conspirators, to the number of Forty well Armed, went by Night to Paul, who startling at their sudden

The Lord of Lucco depoied, 1

(

t

G

-

L

p

2

d

47

den intrusion, demanded the cause of their coming; to which Peter Cennami seplyed, That they had so long been Governed by him till they were begirt with Enemies, and in a fair way to perifh, either by Sword or Famine, wherefore they were refolved to Govern themselves for the future, and came now to demand the Keys and Treasure of the City. 'To which Paul made Answer, That the Treasure was spent, but both the Keys and himself were at their devotion; only Requesting; That fince his Government had begun and continued without Blood, so without Blood, by their favour, it might end. Paul and his Son were, by Earl Sforza, carried to the Duke, where they afterwards died in Prison. The Earls Departure delivered the Lucchefes from the Tyrant, and the Florentines from the fear of his Forces: fo those made preparations of Defence and these returned to offend having Commissionated the Earl of Urbin their General, who fo straitly befieged the City, that the Lucchefi were again necessitated to have recourse to the Duke for Ashstance, and he under the fame pretences he had before fent Sforza, now fends Nicholas Piccinino to relieve them: Who endeavouring to enter Luces, was by our Men encountred on a pass of the River Serchia, where our People were routed, the General, and some few more faving themselves at Pifa. This Defeat afflicted the whole City; and because the expedition was made by General conferr thepeople

n

n

to

or

th

re

né

m

ot

bn-

b-

nd

gi,

he

by

id-

len

ple not knowing well where to lay the blame. charged all the fault upon those that had the Management of the War, fince they could not charge those who had been the devisers of it, and the former Acculations against Rinolds were revived. But most of all they loaded John Guiccardine, charging him. that he might, if he had pleated, have ended the War after Sforze's departure, but that he was corrupted with Mony, of which agreat fum he had fent home, offering to produce who had brought it, and who received it. These Rumours and Accusations grew fo high, that the Captain of the People moved by the Publick cry, and the Clamour of the contrary faction, Cited him; Messer John, full of indignation, appeared, but his Friends for their own Honour fake, laboured fo earnestly in the matter, that the Captain did not proceed. The Lucebefiafter this Victory, not only regained all their own Towns, but surprized all those belonging to the Territory of Pifa, except Bientina, Calcinais, Legborn, and Librafatta, and had not the Plot in Pifa been difcovered, that City had likewise been loth. The Florentines recruting their Army made Michaletto, who had been trained upundet Sforfa, General. On the other fide the Duke closely pursued the advantage, and the more fenfibly to afflict the Florentines united the Genovese, those of Siens and the Lord of Piombino, in a league for the defence of Luces, miking them entertain Nicholas Pie-

cinino

ad m

Richit

at

ma

at

and

inf

ons

tha

on

einino for General of the league; by which meanes all the whole intregue was difcovered and the Florentines and Venetians re- The von newing their antient Alliance, open War nam and was made in Lombardy and Tofcary, and in joyned. each Province fundry fights enfued with Various fuccess: Till all Parties wearied out, in May 1433 a General Peace was coneluded; by which the Florentines, those of Lucea and Siena; who during this War had feized feveral Caffles one of the others, made reciprocal Relitution: And each contented themselves with their own possessions. Whilst this War was on foot, the Malignane humours of the Factions in the City got head, and Cofmo de Medici after the death of John his Father, managed the Concerns of the Common-wealth with more address and care of the publick, and with more freedom and liberality towards his Friends, than his father had done before him; informacly that those which rejoyced at the death of John, now leeing the management of Cosmo, were forry: Cosmo was a man of Excellent Prudence; of a grave and gracious Afpect; extreamly liberal, and infinitely Courteous; and who never attempted any thing against any of the Eactions, or against the State; but strove to oblige all the World, and by his Liberality gain the good-swill of the Citizens. that his Virtues feem'd to caff a thadow upon those that governed; and himself beleived he might by this meanes live in Florence

t

0

d

5

-

è,

ıt

Ú,

11

æ

ot 1

C

il.

lè

1

53

re d

d

of

6

110

50

in fufficient power and Security; or if the Malice of his Adversaries thould in any extraordinary manner oppose him, he might by the Number and Strength of his Friends oppress them. The main instruments to form his Greatness were Averardo de Mediei, and Puccio Pucci: Averardo with his Courage, and Puecio with his Counsel supporting and enlarging his Reputation and Renown, And in such Esteem was Puccio's Wisdom and Counsel, and so well Known That the Faction was not called by Cofmo's Name, but Puccio's. By a City thus divided was the expedition of Lucea made, and by it the Contentions were rather enflamed than quenched; And although Cosmo's Party were the chief Counsellors of it, yet more of the contrary Party had Command of the Army, as being of greater Reputation in the state : which since Everard de Medici and the rest could not remedy, they strove, all they could, to calumniate them ; and if any loss happened (as many did) they imputed it not either to the good Fortune, Courage, or Conduct of the Enemy; but to the want of Discretion and Prudence in their own Officers. Thus the lapfes of Aftorre Gianni became aggravated: Thus was Rinaldo de Albizi's Patience overborn, and he in a Passion made return, laying down his Commission without leave; and Thus was the delivery of John Guiceardine demanded from the Captain of the people; and thus all the blame Charged either upon the

k

n

77

fir

he

m

60

th

th

for

the

bo.

Dec

the

Fk

fire

ie

n

ds

to

ŀ

1t-

ė.

n,

s

in

d d

et id

2-

4

C)

12 1)

1y i

CE

of

us n,

ng nd

ne

C; on

he

the Magistrates, or Ministers of War, had its original; for where the Accusation was true, it spread of its self, and where it was invented, art was added; and whether true or false, it was by the people who hated them, believed. These new and extraordinary waies of proceeding were very well known to Nicholas de Vzano and the Cheff of his Party, and many times had they confulted a Remedy, but could conclude on none; for to give way to it they perceived was dangerous, and to put any violent Stop to it, more difficult, but Nicholas de Uzano was the first who expressed his displeasure against these strange proceedings. And in the heat of War abroad, and their Diforders at home, Nicholas Barbadori endeavou- The mine ring to dispose Nicholas de Uzano to the ruin of como of Cofmo, went one day to his House, where person finding him alone, and in a profound fludy, he endeavoured by all the weighty Arguments he could invent, to perfwade him to sonfent with Rinaldo to drive Cofmo out of the City, to whom Nicholas Vzano made this Reply : In my Judgment, it were bester for thee, thy Family, and all that joyn with thee in this Opinion , that they had Beards of Silver than of Gold, as thou art faid to bave; for then their Advice, proceeding from boary and experienced Heads, would be more judicious and profitable. I am of the mind that those who defire to banish Cosmo out of Florence, should first of all weigh and meafure their Power with bis. The Party fiding with

with m you have named the Party of the Na-bles, and that appoint it the Fallion of the Plebeians: mere the Truth correspondent to the Name, yet would the Success be in 4 points deubtful, and we have more Reasons to fear than hope, taught by the Example of the Ancient Nobility, whom the Plebeians have quite rooted out; but me have much more cause to fear, our Party being divided and theirs entire. In the first place, Neri di Gino, and Nerone di Nigi, two prime Citizens , have never yet declared themselves fo that we can well determine whether they are mone our Friends, or theirs : There are many Families, and many Houses divided; for mamy out of Envy to their very Breshren and Kelations disfavour w and fide with them. Let me only put you in mind of some of the Chief, and the reft gueff at your Self; of the Sons of Meffer Mafo de Albizi, Luke, of enty is Rinaldo, has joyned bimfelf to their Farty. In the Family of the Guiccardines, and an mong the Children of Lewis, Peter is an enemy to John, and fapours our Adversaries. Thomas and Nicholas Soderini, for the Hate they bare their Uncle Francis, do openly oppose us : So, that if it be well confidered , what they, and what we are, I fee not any reason why our Party hould be fliled Noble more than theirs, unleff, because they are univerfally followed by the Plebeians, which makes the worse for w, and the better for them; we upon any occasion of disputing it by Arms being too weak to refift them. And if we stand upon

for he build farm for best

ha

bra

Mx

Kni

the bia Fri

La

4

y of

6

d, di

4

re

7

4

er es f

14

7

44

10-

es

ufe of

ou.

OTA

erd ken

non

thin our Dignity, that, from the Ancient Re-putation of the State had its original, and entimestion for these fifty years, but when remos to the proof, and our weakness is disco-pered, we shall four tose all: Or, if you shink that the just occasion prompting as to it will gain w Gredie, and them Difrepute; I Am er. That justice of our Cause must then be understood by others as well as our felves. which bappens quite contrary; for the Ocean moving us is founded on a Sufficien, leaft be footd make bimfelf Prince of this City; but though me suffect it, others will not, nay which is marfe they accuse us of what we accuse bim. The things which abiefly render Colmo Superied, are, because he employs his Mony to forme all meus Occasions, not only publick Persons, but private; not only Florentines, but Forreigners: because be favours this, and that other Civinen, who stand for the Magibracy; and because, by bis credit with the Multitude, he advances this and that other Friend to greater degrees of Honour. Tell me therefore the Reasons why you would have him Banished; is it because he is Charitable Friendly, Liberal, and beloved? Pray, what Law prohibits, blames, er condemus men far Charity, Liberality and Leve? And though all men affiring to Principality, usually tread thefe paths, yet they are not thought to do fo; nor Mu me force it into mans belief : for our promedings have dehanched our Credit, and this City fatered in Divisions, and the Citizens and to live in Parties, and Pallion, are grown Dddd

fo Corrapt shey will never give fairb to fuch Accufatione. But Suppose we should arrain our defires of Expelling him (which baving a Senate for the purpose, may easily be effected) yet how can you devife to oppose bis return whilit be but to many Friends remaining who will be zealous for it? Twould be impossible by Friends being numerous, and he fo universally beloved; and the more of bis Friends you labour to Banift, the more Enemies you contrall to your selves; so that Return in a short time be will, and all the gain will be this, That you banished a Good man, and bave an evit one returned you; for his Nature will be corrupted by those who labour his Revocation, whom be cannot contradici : And, if you defign bit death; by order of the Magistracy you will never procure it; for his Mony, and our own corrupt Natures, would certainly fave bim: But fup pose him Dead, or Banished, so that he can no more Return; I cannot perceive the advantage would thereby accrue to our Commonwealth; for by being freed from Colino it will be enflaved to Rinaldo, and for my part, though I could wish no Citizen Superiour to another in Power and Authority: Tet, if one of thefe must prevail, there is some fecret Reason per finades me to love Rinaldo better than Col mo. I fay no more, but God defend that any Citizen (bould ninry a Principality over W yet if our fint have deferred fuch a Plague, louf of all men living I would not obey him. I do not therefore perfroade an Attempt any ma bazardous, nor believe that the Combination AY. O b b b G

2

C

B

gi be

th

ha

Re

Fu

ing

ceff

Cit

to

for

Ma

and

redi

ings

by t

ever

OW

a

日本の日本の日本

10

onreill ugb

bele per-

(all)

gue, 1 de of a few can withfland the will of many : for the Multitude, partly through Ignorance. and partly through Malice | are all ready to fell the Commonwealth; and Farture is fo kind to them they have already found a Chapman. Let my Counfel therefore prevail, live modestly and you will foon observe as to the Liberty of the City Some of our Barty ought to be suspected as well as the others and if any Troubles arife, living in an eafie Neutrality you will be grateful to all, and formay be belpful to your felf, and not hurtful to your Country. These Words somewhat appealed Barbadoro's mind, and the City continued quiet during the Lucchefe War. But Peace being concluded, and with it happening the death of Nicholas Uzzano, the City having flipt off the bridle of War, had no Reins to Govern it, but run madly on to Fury and Diforder: For Rinaldo remaining now the fole Head of his Faction, incessantly intreated and perswaded all those Citizens of Quality, whom he thought likely to be made Gonfalonieni, to Arm themselves for the Defence of their Country against a Man, who by reason of the Malice of some, and Ignorance of others, must of necessity teduce them into flavery. These proceedings of Rinaldo's, and the oppositions made by the adverse Party, raised fears and Jealoufies in the City: at the Creating of every Magistracy they publickly discoursed how many of one Party, and how mamy of the other fat; and at the Election of Dddd 2 Sena-10000

Senators the whole City was in Uproar; every Cause of the Highest moment, that

came before the Magistrares to be decided. begot a Tarnut ; Cabinet Counfels were divolged; Good and bad men favoured. and disfavoured; and both fores county tormented and molefted. Whilft Planete Confusion was in this Confusion, and Rinaldo verlous to Suppress the Greatness of Colons. he knowing that Bernardo Guadagno ons likely to be Elected Confalmiers, pays his Debrs, leaf the Mony he owed the Publick should be an obstacle to his arrival at that Dignity. And it came to pass at the drawing the Lots, that (Fortune favouring our Diforders) Bernardo was beletted Gonfide niere into officiate during the Months of Seprember and October : Whom, Meffer Rinaldo presently went to wait upon, Reprefenting to him, "How many, on the Pury "of the Nobles, and even all that defined "to live well, rejoyced at his advancement shi "to that Dignity; and therefore it was Bor "his part to take care they should not re-"joyce in vain : laying before him the "dangers attended on Discord, and how "there was no other way to unite the

" City but by expelling Cofino ; Who, with "the general Love his excellive Riches had

"gained him, kept others weak, and was

"S grown to that height, that if hidden pro-"vision were not made, he would apple

"to the Principality. Twas therefore he duty, like a good Citizen, to apply

Florence,

" fpeedy

46 4 4

4 2 4.0

4 *

"h

4 6

%h

47

4 7

"th

4 6

As

Mag

the

pear that the deliver of the state of the

10-

はのはははないとは

speedy Remedy by calling the people into "the Piaces, refluning the Government, "and refloring the City to her Liberty; Remembring him, " How Silveter Medici did without Julice, bridle the power of "the Guelphe, to whom a Right of Gosemment (for the Blood of their Anceflors, thed in defence of its) belonged; and what he unjustly did against so many, why should he now fear to all justly "against one? Exhorting him not to be afraid, for their Friends with their Arms. " would be ready to affift him: Nor was any account to be made of the Multi-"tude that adored him, whose Favour "would prove as defective to him as it "had done to George Soali; nor thould "he be awed by his Riches, which, were The once in the Senates power, would be "Theirs: Concluding, that this Action "would both quiet the State, and make him famous. To all which perfushions Bernardo briefly Answered ; " That he "thought what he proposed necessary, and "because the time vvas not to be spent in "Words but Actions, he would prefently "prepare his Forces to be ready, fo foon as "his Companions were perswaded to it. As foon as Bernardo was entred into the Magistracy, his Friends all disposed and a- come de greed with Rinaldo's, he Cited Cofmo, who dedici and (though by many otherwise advised) ap- Commitpears, relying more on his own Innocency, ted. than the Favour or Mercy of the Senate.

Dddd 3

As foon as Cofmo was entred the Palace, Arrefted, Rinaldo, with many Armed men fallies out of his House, and joyning with the reft of the Faction, comes into the Plazza, vyhither the Senate fummoned the People, and created a Balia of Two bundred men to reform the Government of the City; this Balia as expeditionaly as they could, began to Treat of the Reformation of the State, and of the Life and Death of Cosmo. Many vould have him Banished; some vyould have him put to Death, and others faid nothing, either out of Compassion to him or fear of themfelves: fo this divertity of Opinions produced no refult. In the Tower of the Palace is a close ffrong Room, called the Albergbettino; There Cosmo was kept Prisoner under the Guard of Frederick Malavoln from which place Cosmo hearing their Talk and the noise of Armed Men in the Piazza and the often founding to the Balia, flood in fear of his Life; but vvas most of a jealous, least his Enemies should, by some extraordinary vvay, deprive him of its which made him abftain from all Meats so that in four daies he had tasted nothing but a little Breads which Frederick taking notice of, faid to him : " Cofmo , I fee you are afraid of being poisoned; but you wrong my Honour by imagining I would "have a hand in such a wickednes. I

" and

P

Par S

fi b

F

6

2

[&]quot;cannot believe your Life in any danger, having so many Friends in the Palace,

ndsabroad : But, if they have a defign at you shall die, be affured they must make choice of other Ministers to execute it for I will not imbrue my hands in the Blood of any man, much lefs yours who never injured me; be therefore of good Chear, and fall to your Meat, and oreferve your life to the comfort of your Friends and Country: And to give you more confidence to do it . I will my felt first eat of whatever is set before you. Thefe words extreamly comforted Cofmo. and, with tears in his Eyes, he kist and embraced Frederick and with kind and obliging words returned him thanks for fo compassionate and friendly an Office, promiling to give refrimonies of his Gratitude, whenever Fortune should give him an opportunity. Cofmo thus put in heart, whilft the Citizens were debating his disposure, it happened that Frederick, to make him somewhat the pleafanter, brought along to Supper with him a familiar Friend of the Confaloniers, called Fargannacio, a man made for Wit and divertisement. Supper being almost ended, Cosmo having conceived that this man might do him fome fervice (for he was well acquainted with him) beckned to Frederick to withdraw, who understanding the sign, pretending to fetch fomething wanting at Supper, went out and left them alone : Cosmo after some kind and obliging vvords to Fargannacia, gave him a Token, and injoyned him to Dddda go

with the med work of the med with the med work of the med with the med

go to the Holpital of Sanda Maria Maria for Eleven hundred Ducuts, a hundred of which he thould keep for his own use, and the thousand deliver to the Gonfalmion withal deliring him to make force phastill pretence to come and fresh with him He accepts the Commission the Monies was paid, and Bernardo mollified, fo that Coffin was only confined to Padons, contrary to the intentions of Renaldo, who fought his Life, Everard, and many others of the House of Medici, with John, and Process Pucci were likewife Banished; and to cerrife those that were distatisfied with Cofmu's Banishment, they gave the Balia to Eight of the Guard, and to the Captain of the People. After which Determinations. on the third of October 1433, Cofine was brought before the Lords, where the Sentence of his Confinement was pronounced, and he counselled to submit to it, least they fronted be forced to proceed with greater feverity against both his Person and Goods Cofmo with a chearful Countenance received his Sentence, afforing them that whither foever their Lordships thought fit to fend him he should be willing to go ; but befought them fince they had faved his life they would pleafe likewife to defend it; because he understood many of his enemies did, in the Piazza, lie in wait for his blood ! affuring them, that wherever he was. He and his Substance should ever be at the Command of the City, the People, and their Loid-

Cofmo de Medici Confined to Padona, 西田田田田

1

il

Lord thips i Flordspon the Geofabilities com-ferred him, and hope him in the Palace till algie, and then conducting him to his Honfe, after Supper, gave him a firming Ouard to accompany him to the Confines. Coffee, wherever he puffed, was honourably represented and publickly vificed by the Pourus not like a banished Man, but like one in Supream Authority. Florence thus rob'd of to worthy a Citizen, fo Univerfally beloand, every one was difinayed, and as well the Victors, as the Conquered, leerned terthied. Infomuch that Rinaldo, doubtful his future Misfortune, that he might not be wantien to himself and his Faction, having affembled many Citizens, his Pricide, told them : That be now bebeld their Rwin approaching; for baving Suffered themselves, by their enemies Prayers, Tears Mony to be Vanquified, not confidering the themfolves hould ere long be forced to enwent and weep, whilft none beard their Prayme, nor bad compassion of their Tears, and that the many given must be repaid with Exile, sormonie and death, intend of Ufury: For it had been better fur ibem to bave been dend, than to Jeans Cosmo alive, or fuffer a Friend of bid in Florence; For great Persons hould never be touche, or if they be, put paft Revenge. "There was now therefore no remerdy loft but to fortifie themfelves in the Ci-19) that if the refenements of their Enemies fould break foreb (as foon they would) they might oppress them by Arms, Suce by Lam

i.

and is a new to the service of the s

and order shelf could not Comb or reftrain them and that the Remedy was the same name which had long since been remembred to wie, to regain the great men, by reflering them to all Honours in the City, and frengthning them-felves with that Party, fines their Enomics bad Fortified themfelves with the Plebeians; that by this meanes their Party would be enconraged, baving fuch an addition of Force Virtue, Valour, and Credit affirming, if the Negletied this only true and ultimate remedy, he could discover no way bose to secure the State amidt fo many Enemier , but beheld the approaching ruin of their Party, and the mbole City To which Mariotte Boldavinet ti, one of the Company, opposed himself Declaring, That the Pride and baughty no ture of the Grandees was insupportable, and that it mas maduefs to bave recourfe to accetain Tyranny to escape a doubtful danger from the Plebeians. So that Melfer Rinelds feeing his Counfels flighted, lamented his and his Friends Misfortune, attributing this averfences rather to Providence that would have it for than to the ignorance and blindnels of Men whill things food in this posture, and no necessary provision made, a Letter was found written by Meffer Agnilo Acciaivolo to Cosmo, adviling him of the Cities good inclinations towards him, and encouraging him to move a Wat, and make Neri Gini his Friend : For he judged the City wanted Mony, which not knowing how to supply otherways, his memory, and the

the ardent defire of his return would be revived among the Citizens: and if Neri were drawn off from Rinaldo, his Party would be too weak to defend themselves. This letter coming to the Magistrates hands was the occasion that Messer Agnolo was taken, fequefired, and banished : yet this example curbed not at all the Favourers of Cofmo. The year had now almost gone its round fince Cofmo's Banishment, when, about August 1434, Nicholas de Cocco was chofen Gonfaloniere for the two enfuing months, and with him eight Senators, all of Cofmo's Party, fo that fuch a Signory might well affright Rinaldo and his whole Party: And because it is Customary, that the Lords elected, before they enter upon the Magistracy, are three daies private, Rinaldo furnmons again the heads of his Party, and declares to them the approaching danger, and that there was no remedy but taking Armes, and cauling Donato Velluti, who yet fat as Gonfaloniere, to affemble the people in the Piazza, establish a Ballia to remove the new Lords from their Magistracy, and create other fit for their own purpole; and burning the Old Purses make new Imborfations, filled with the Names of their This devife was by many thought both requifite and fafe, others judged it much too violent and dangerous, and among those that opposed it was Mr. Palla Strozzi. who was a quiet Man, Civil, Courteous, and apter for fludy than to encounter Faction, or

the

to of the state of

quell civil Diffords who therefore Augued , That all autenque, mbether gui-ded by Rolidy or Valous, , form in their beginnings cufic, but in the process That he believed the fear of an approaching War from abreed (the Duke of Romania be ing with an Army on our confines) would make the Lords mind their Dofence, nother then intelling Difforde: yer if they would change Affairs frebich could not be done but they must know it) it would then be time to take Arms, and execute what was though necessary for the publich safety. Which when they were forced to , mould cross tofs wonder in the People, and lefe reprouch to themfolver. It was therefore concluded that the new Lords thould enter, and their proceedings be diligently watched; and if they attempted any thing contrary to the faction , every one should take Arms and Affemble at St. Pulinare (a place nigh the Palace) whence they might proceed to act what should be judged necessary, Concluding upon this every man teturned home, and the New Senators carred upon the Magistracy, and the Gonfaloniore, to gain himself Reputation, and terrine the adverse Party, committed to prison Donasa Velleri his predecessor, for having misemployed the publick Treasure ? and then founded the minds of his Companions about Colino's repura, whom finding disposed, he consults was the cheifes of the Medici's Party, and encouraged by them,

Cites

Ches Meller Rivaldo, Ridolfo Porranza and Nicholas Burbadori Principals of the oppofire Faction. Upon which Citation, Roudthe thought it no longer fit to protract time, takes but fallying from his house with a great gainst the Number of Armed followers was prefently senate. joyned, by Ridolfo Personni and Nicholm Barbadori, with whom were many Citizens, and many Souldiers, which happened at that time to be in Florence, and out of pay; all which reforted according to the former agreement to the place of St. Pulinare: Meffer Palla Strozzei, though he had affenbled a great force, staid within his house, and the like did Messer John Guiceardine, whereupon Renaldo fent to urge them and reprove heir delay. John made answer, That he waged as he thought fufficient War against the enemy, if by flaying at home he hindred his brother Peters fallying forth to refeue the Palace. Palla after many meffages came to St. Pollinare on horfe-back, unarmed, and attended only by two foot-men; whom Riwilde going to meet, fiercely reproved for his negligence; telling him, " That his not effembling with the rest proceeded from bis want of Faith, or Courage, both blameworthy in any one who would be thought a Person of Monour, and if be vainty believed that for not doing bis Duty, the Enemy would upon Victory pardon bim either life or Benishment, be was deceived. As for his part, If any Sinister accident bapued, be should bove this fasterfattion, That as be bad not been mouting

manting in Council before the danger, fa be did not want Courage in the midft of it; but as for him and the reft their Discontents would be aggravated with the Consciousness of baving thrice betrayed their Country : first when they faved Cosmo's life; then, when they flighted his Counsels; and lastly, now refusing to afift bim with their Arms. To all which, Palls replyed not a word that was heard by the standers by, but murmuring turned his Horse and returned home. The Senate hearing Messer Rinaldo and his Party had taken Arms, and feeing themfelves forfaken, thut the Palace Gates, and void of Counsel knew not what course to take. But Meffer Rinaldo delaying his going into the Piazza, expecting those Forces that came not, lost his opportunity of Victory, and gave heart to the Senators to make provition for their fafety, and to many Citizens to go in to them to Advise how matters flood and how things might be appeafed. Then some Friends of the Senates. whom Rinaldo had least in suspicion, went to him, and told him, That the Senate knew not the Reason of these Commotions, nor could imagine how they bad offended bim, or if it were for Cosmo's Sake, there was no intention of recalling bim; but if that were their fealoufie, they might be affured of the contrary and if they would freely come to the Palace they should be welcome, and have all their Demands fatisfied. These words could not change Rinaldo's Resolution; who Replied, That

R

ú

R

The he would fecure bimfelf, by making the Science private Men ; and then reform the State to every enercontents a But it alwaics happens of That where Authority is equal, Opinions are various, and feldom any thing well refolved. Ridolfo Peruzzi, moved with the words of those Citizens, faid, That, for bis part, be defired nothing but that Colmo bould no more Return, and the grant of that, be thought Victory Sufficient war defired be. out of bopes of gaining more, to fill the City with Blood, but would obey the Senate; and thereupon, with his people, went to the Palace where he was joyfully received. Thus Rinaldo's flaying at St. Pulinare, the Cowardize of Palla, and the departure of Ridolpho, had deprived their Party of the Victory; and the hearts of the Citizens following Rinaldo, began to grow cold and faint, to which the Authority of the Pope contributed. Pope Engenius, who had been expelled by the people of Rome, was now in Florence; The Top and hearing of these Tumules; thought it his your to duty to endeavour to appeale them; to appeale which end he fends the Patriarch, John Vi- malis. selleschi, an intimate Friend of Rinaldo's, to defire him to come to him, not doubting but he had Credit and Authority sufficient with the Senate, to content and secure him without Blood, or Damage to his Citizens. Rinaldo perswaded by his Friend, with all his Armed followers goes to St. Maria Novella, where the Pope refided. Engenim declares to him the power the Senate had com-

t

Ê

0

committed to him to determine all Committee would be down Arms flibuld be done to his full fatis faction, Rimeldo having made proof of the coldness of Palicand the inconfuncy of Ris dolfo Permani despairing of better Tours weilded himself into the Popes hands, not doubting but his Authority would fecure him's whereupon the Pope prefently fignified to Niebelas Barbadori, and the reft who flayed for him without, that they should lay down their Arines ; for Meffet Rineldo relied upon the Pope to make in Agreement with the Senates and at first word they all obeyed, and disbanded; the Senators fee ing their Advertires diferent, applyed themselves to an agreement; by the Bones intermition, but privily fent away to the rock of Piffeld for fome Companies of foot which with all their men at Arms they by night brought into Florence, and feiring all the firong places of the City, fummoned the people into the Pianne, and created a new Balis, who as foon as they Affembled siles reflored Cofree to his Country, with all those that were donlined, and on the adverte Party banished Kinaldo de Albize, Ridalfo Perrunzi , Nicholes Barbadero , and Pale Streeze, with many other Citizens, in fuch vafi numbers, that there wete few Towns in Buly to which fome were not confined, and many places out of Italy were filled with them. By which accident Florence was not only much dis-peopled but rob'd of it's riches

Cofine teflored and Zindle with ochers Banifbed.

ra

fir

fir

gri it

北山

So

mat

cils

we

iches and Industry The Pope Rein the ruin of those men who at his delire had laid down Arms, was extreamly differented, and condoled with Rinaldo for the wrong done him under his Faith and Gredit, exherring him to parience and by fome happy change to hope for better Fortung To which Rinaldo answered : The mant of Credit in shofe which should have believed the and my toq. eafy reliance on you, bath ruined me and my Party; but I have most reason to blame my self that could imagine that you who were driven out of your own Country, could secure me in mine. I bave bad sufficient experience of the Dalliances of Rounne, and having never confided in proferity, am less afflicted at Advertity; Knowing well, that fortune when the pleafes may again favour me. But If the never do, I thall not be over-fond of living in that City, where Faction overrules the Laws; for that Country is only defirable where men may peacably enjoy their Friends and Estates and not that where a man may be eafily deprived of the latter; and the first, for fear of bazarding their own, in his greatest Necessity for sake bim ; for to the Wife it is less grievous to bear of the Miseries of their Country, than behold them with their Eyes; and more glorious to be accounted an bonourable Rebel, than a slavish Citizen. So taking leave of the Pope full of Indignation, and blaming often his own Councils, and the coldness of his Friends, he went into Banishment. On the other fide, Coforo Ecee

ij

7

d

dill de fold the man die de mas

cs

Cofice his high intelligence of his Revocation returned to Florence. Seldome has any Ottleen, seturning Triumphant after Vitory, been received with fuch a Concourfe of People, fuch acclamations of Joy, and such demonstration of an universal Affection, as He was upon his return from Banishment; the Citizens voluntarily falturing him with the Titles of The Peoples Benefolder, and, The Father of his Country.

The End of the Fourth Book.

have to the steeled to a simpacure of the factor of the fa

the second second for the second seco

HAT My tous below them with them

the series placed to be accounted on

Romande Rebel, than a flavelle Citizen.

Solution have of the Porce fift of India-

parion, and blamme on a life own Coun-

allegend the coldness of his Friends, be

wifein banifement same offer rice

0.785-9 J

which and the chart which we remain

When you is the of the trail Courses wall

3

8

20 · 05

AL.

1

30.00

th

he

di

El)

th

CS

-

-11

quiet, Quiet idlemeis, Idlemeis diter der unst Inderder ju net Binerder ju net Burner Barner Barner Barner

FLORENTINE

HISTORY,

Written by

Nicholas Machiavel.

BOOK V. lo san



arfe

出版時間

Rovinces, in their Change of Government, for the most part run from order to diforder, and from diforder to order agains for constancy heing by nature denied to fublunary

things, as foon as they are mounted to a height of perfection, they must of force descend; and being fallen into disorder, and thereby come to their utmost declination, they must by the same necessity (since they can fall no tarther) sise. Thus ever from good there is a descent to evil, and from e-til an ascent to good; for Virtue begets and

E

35.0

quiet, Quiet idlenels, Idlenels disorder, and Disorder ruine; in like manner Ruine produces order, Order virtue, and Virtue glory with good fortune. Whence the prudent have observed, That Learning follows Arms, and in all Cities and Countries Captains were before Philosophers : for virtuous and well governed Arms having obtained Victory, and Victory produced quiet, the fortitude of active minds cannot be corrupted by any more justifiable Idlenes than the study of Letters, nor can Idleness with any fo fair and specious pretence, creep into a well instituted Commouwealth. Which Cato (at the time Diogenes and Carneades came Ambassadors from Athens to the Senate of Rome) was perfectly fensible of; for feeing the Youth begin to follow them with great admiration, and perceiving the mischiefs might, by that honest Idleness, refult to his Country, he caused it to be encted that hereafter no Philosophers should be received in Rome : And indeed, by thek means are many Countries brought to ruine till men grown weary of destroying one another; return (as has been faid) to order; unless by some extraordinary force they are made utterly uncapable of it. These Occasions, first by the means of the Ancient Infeans, and afterwards of the Remans made Italy formetimes happy; and formetimes miferable. And though on the ruines of Rome nothing has been founded adequate to its glory (which possibly under some gallant

11

a

re

m

be

I¢

fta

br

th

Pr

the

ye

ter

wh

Ar

not

ilai

mi

An

WC

gur

ger.

Vir

ext

the

in I

Chal

6.1

e

h

а

m

30

ŝ,

i

to

æ

it.

he

.

10-

nes

ate al-

ant

3

lant Prince might have been effected doyer to much Virtue is revived in fome of the New Cities, and New Governments that a role out of the Roman ruines, that though one has not attained the Command of the reft, yet they were to well united and linked together, that they were able to defend and free themselves from the incurtions of Barbarous people, Among which other fat rentines, though not of any extent in Dominion, were as large as any in power's for being feated in the midft of Italy, high and ready to offend, they either fuecessfully fustained the Wars made against them, or brought Victory to that Party with whem they tided. From this Virtue in these New Principalities it proceeded, that though they never enjoyed any long time of quiet, yet the War was never very dangerous or terrible; for as it cannot be termed Peace, where Provinces are almost continually with Arms affaulting one another, fo that cannot properly be called War, where the flaughter of Men, facking of Cities, and ruine of Governments does not attend. And affuredly the Wars of thefe times were so weak and faint, that they were begun without fear, continued without danger, and ended without los: to that that Virtue which long and lazy Peace used to extinguish in other Countries, became by the Cowardize of their own Arms extinct in Italy, as will plainly appear by what we hall now fet down, from the Year 1434 to 5 A 2 Retail.

3

a

3

b

-4

-

1

-

0

1

-

0

E

6

fi E

11

9

d

H

in

W

fo

1496: Whereby it may be feen how, in the Conclusion, the Fences were again broken down for ftrangers to enter at , and Italy became fubject to them. And though the Actions of our Princes abroad, and at home, may not perhaps, for their glori and greatness, deferve to be read with the admiration due to the Ancients, yet poffibly for fome other quality they may merit to be confidered with no less wonder; fee ing fo many brave and Noble people, by few (and those ill disciplined) Souldiers kep in awes and though , in the description d things in these decayed and corrupt times you may find no relation of any Valour in Souldiers: Conduct in Generals, or love of their Country in Citizens; yet you may discover with what cunning, craft and policy, Princes, Souldiers and heads of Commonwealths (to maintain a Reputation the had never deferved) managed their Affairs which possibly may be of no less advantage to Humane Society than the other; for those fir up noble minds to follow the Example, these will incense us against them and provoke us to fly and eschew them.

The Condition of Italy, 1433. ITALT was, by those which Governed it, reduced to such Terms, that whenever upon the Reconciliation of any Princes of States a Peace was concluded, it was presently again, by those that had the Arms in their hands, disturbed; so that no glory was gained by War, nor no quiet by Peace. Wherefore, no sooner was the Peace concluded

Book V. An Florence

574)

Æ

rit ce

y 1

ept

d its

-

nat

po-

m

irs

8

ich

m,

nell

vet

SOL

10

S 1

W 15

ace.

onded

cludedin 1439 between the Duke of Mikeep themselves in Exercise, turned their Arms upon the Church. There were at this time in Italy two forts of Souldiers; thole trained up under Braccion and thole under Sforza: The last were commanded by the Earl Francis, Son of Sfarza; and the first had Nicholas Piecining, and Nicholas Fortebrace for their Leaders. And to thefe two Bodies almost all the reft of the Souldiers of Italy united therefelves. Of chefe two. Sforza's Division had the greater Reputation, both because of the Earls Valour, and of the Promise made him by the Duke of Milan, to give him Bianca his Natural Daughter in Marriage, the hopes of which Alliance added much to his offeem. After war made the Peace of Lomburdy, thefe two Armies on the (upon different occasions) affaulted Pope Sforza, and Engenius, Fortibrace moved to it out of Formace. the ancient Grudge born by Bracia to the Church and Sforma; by his own Ambition; fo that whilft Niebalas affailed Rome the Earl made himfelf Lord of La Mhrea: Whereupon, the Romans to avoid the War. drove Engenim out of Rome, who, with danger and difficulty escaped to Fforence: where, confidering the peril he was in, feeing himfelf abandoned by those Princes, who before, fo defirous of Peace, would not for his fake renew the War, agrees with the Earl, and grants him the Signory of La Marca; though the Earl to the injury of 5 A 3 having

The Pope makes peace with Sforza, having feized on it , had added Reproaches, Subscribing his Letters to his Agents, for ferting out the Land line Latin words paccording to the Italian Custome, Ex Giri. falce notro invito Petro & Paulo. Nor was he content with the grant of the Danid but would be made Goufaloniere of the Church ; all which was consented to . 6 much more fearful was Eugenius of a hayardons War than of a dishonourable Peace. The Earl thus become the Popes Friend, profecuted Niebola Fortibrace, and betwint them, in the Territories of the Church, for feveral Months happened fundry Accidents, more to the damage of the Pope and his Subjects, than of those that made the War Till at last, by the Mediation of the Duke of Milan, an Agreement by way of Truce was made between them, and both remained Princes in the Territories of the Church. This War thus quenched at Rome, was kindled afresh in Remania by Battista de Canneto the first murthering in Bolonia form of the Family of the Grifoni, then drove the Popes Governour, and other his Ene mies out of the City: And, to hold that State by Force, craved Aid of Philip; whilf, the Pope to revenge the Injury, demander affiftance of the Venetians and Florentines. Each Party had the defired Aid given them, so that on a sudden Two great Armies infested Romania. Nicholas Piccinino was General for the Duke, and the Venetian and Florentine Forces were led by Guatamelata, and

War in Romania, 0

t

A

á

d

B.

vas

the

6

13-

œ.

ıd,

X

ar

his

at:

Ke rec in-

h.

ne

at

是中华马马名

and Nichelas Tolentino. Near Imola they came to la Battle, wherein the Venetions and Florentines were overthrown and Niebolas Tolentino fent prisoner to the Duke; where, either made away by Treachery or o'repressed with Grief for his Misfortune. he foon after dyed. The Duke wafter this Victory, either because he was weakned by the former Wars, or imagining the Colleagues after fuch an overthrow would be quiet, purfued his Fortune no farther, but gave the Pope and his Confederates time to unite themselves : who chose Earl Francis for their Captain, and made an attempt to drive Fortibrace out of the Church Territories, thereby, to put an end to that War they in the Popes favour begun. The Romans feeing now the Pope grown powerful, fought his Friendship, and received a Governor from him. Nicholas Fortibrace among other Towns; was in possession of Tiboli Montefiasconi, the City of Castello and Asceci. Into this last Nicholin (not able to keep the tield) was fled, where the Earl belieged him; and the Siege continuing fomewhat long (for Nicholas manfully defended himself) the Duke thought it necessary, either to hinder the League from obtaining this Victory, or to contrive matters to , that after it he might be in condition to defend himfelf; therefore, to make the Earl raife his Siege, he commands Niebolas Piccinino to march by the way of Romania into Tofcany; whereupon the Confederates judging it of greater

Fertifrate victorious, and vanquished,

greater concern to defend Tofcany than take Aferfi, commanded the Earl to Rop Nielewith his Army to Fueli: | While the Rath upon the receipt of his Orders, moves with his Army, and comes to Celina, leaving the Care of the War in La Marea , and of his own Estates, to his Brother Lione. While Piccinino thus fought a passage, and the Earl to obstruct it, Niebolas Fartibrace falk upon Lione, and to his great Renown takes him, plunders his Carriages, and purfaing his Victory, furprizes in an inflant many Towns of Romania. This Mistorrune much afflicted the Earl, who fearing to lofe his own Estates, leaves part of his Army to confront Piccinino, and with the remainder marches directly towards Fortibrace, fights and o'recomes him. In this Battle Forei. brace was forely wounded and taken prisoner, and foon after, of his wounds, died By this Victory the Pope was restored to all the Lands taken from him by Niebolas Fortibrace, and the Duke of Milan, reduced to Terms of demanding Peace; which, by the Mediation of Nicholas d'Este, Marquis of Ferrara, was concluded, and by it, all the Towns which the Duke poffeffed in Romania reflored to the Church, and the Dukes Army withdrawn into Lombardy; fo that Battifta Cannetto (as generally happens to all those who are supported in a Dominion by the Power or Valour of others) fo foon as the Dukes Forces were retreated out of

te

4 はんかん

ic is in the late is the late

is

69 1

1di

H

0 is

11

in

0

15

温

6

ut

of

of Remania (his own Brength or epurage being infufficient to defend him) was forced to flie from Bolonia, and Meffer Amonio Bentivoglio, Head of the contrary Party cotred that City. All thefe things happened during the time of Cofmo's Banifhment. After whose return, those who had recalled him, and divers other Citizens before injured, confulted without any respect or referve, how to fecure themfelves in the Government; for the Sepace, which in the Months of November and December Succeeded in the Magistracy, not satisfied with what their Predecessors had done in favour of their Party, prolonged and changed the Confinements of many, and Confined many others anew. Nor was the fullenness of the Factions to prejudicial to the Citizens, as their Riches, Kindred, and private Friendships: So that had this prescription been accompanied The na with Blood, it might have been compared referto those of Octavius, or Sylla; yet was it in priom of forme measure flamed with Blood; for Ber- times, nardo Guadogni was Beheaded, and four Citizens more; among which were Zanobi Belfratelli and Cofmo Barbadori, who having paffed their Confines were taken at Venice; and the Venetions valuing more Cosmo's friendship than their own Honour, had fent them home Prisoners, where they were basely put to death; which increased the Reputation of Cosmo's Party, and ftruck Terrour into their Enemies, confidering that fo potent a Commonwealth should sell their

O wall

descriega

m 18 2 2 2

New Ot-

-115 GAT

distant sale

their Liberty to the Florentines, which yet was thought to be done, not so much out of kindness to Cosmo, as to inflame the Spirits of the Factions, and make the Division of the City, by means of the Blood thus fhed, more implacable and destructive; for the Venetians forefaw there could be no greater obstacle of their greatness, than the union of our City. The City thus cleared of Enemies, and all that were but suspeched by the State, they applyed themselves to shew their Kindness to a new fort of People, the better to confirm their Party; restoring the Family of the Alberti, and all other the Rebels to their Country. All the Grandees, except a very few, were brought into the Orders of the People, and the Poffelfions of the later Rebels fold amongst them at small prizes. Next, they strengthened themselves with New Ordinances, and made New Imborfations, taking out their Enemies Names, and filling the Purfes with their Friends. And vvarned by the Ruine of their Enemies, they thought it not enough to have the Purses thus replenished with Choice men; but to establish their Government the firmer, they consulted how to have the Magistrates, appointed for Life and Death, elected out of the Chiefs of their Party; and to that end required, that those appointed to make the Imborfations, should (together with the Old Senate) have authority to create the Nevv. They gave to the Eight of the Guard power of Life and Death;

0

B

Death; and enacted, that those Confined, though their time were expired, should not return, unless 34 of the Senate and Colledge (which confifted but of 37) should confent to their Restitution; they prohibited all writing to, or receiving Letters from any in Exile. And every Word, Sign, or Action, at which those in rule were pleased to take offence, were severely punished; and if there were any new Suspition started in Florence, which came not within the former bounds, it was by new mulcts or fines, by them impofed, punished, and thus having driven out or impoverished all the adverse party, they secured themselves in the Government. And that they might not want affiliance from abroad, but prevent these who by Forreign force might delign to offend them, they made defensive leagues with the Pope, Venetians, and Duke of Milan, Things thus fetled in Florence, Joan Qeen of Naples dies, Jee and by her last will and Testament makes Notes Reyner of Anjon heir of that Kingdom. Al- dies, phonso King of Arragon was at the same time in Sicily, who confiding in the friendthip of feveral Neapolitan Barone, makes preparation to possels himself of that Kingdom: but the Neapolitans, and many of the Barons, favoured Reyner. The Pope on the other fide was unwilling to admit either Reyner, or Alphanfo; but would have it governed by his Lieutenant: yet Alfonfo invades the Kingdom, and is by the Duke of Sella received, and entertains feveral of the

Princes

20 301 16

trust

1252683 toper

3423

42/20

i

Laphonio King of Sicily

Princes in his pay, with delign being once en tred Capus (which the Prince in Alphonfi's name poffeffed) to force the Nespelitani to a compliance; fending his fleet to attack Galeto which held for the Neapolitans. Whereupon they of Naples crave aid of Dake Philip, who perswades the Genoves to affift them, and they not only to fatistic the Duke their Prince, but to fecure the Merchandizes they had in Naples and Gaiera, armed out a powerful fleet. Which Alfonso having intelligence of, strengthens his, and goes in person to encounter the Genovele. the Gon- whom ingaging neer the Island of Pontion he received a total discomfiture, being himfelf with many other Princes taken, and by the Genovese fent prisoners to Philip. This Victory terrified all those Princes of Italy who flood in fear of Philips greatness, beleiving he had now an opportunity to make himself Lord of all; but he (fodifferent and various are men in their Judgments) cook a course quite contrary. Alfonso was a prudent man, and as foon as he came to discourse with Philip, he demonstrated to him, " How much be decrived bimfelf in favouring Reyner against bims for if Reyner came once to be King of Naples, be would with all bis power endeavour to reduce Milan under the Command of France, that he might have easier affiftance thence, and not have the way still to force open for his releif when he flood in Necessity. Nor could be wherwise for enre bimfelf, but by the ruin of that Duktdom.

of

hà

lea

at

m

mi

de

cer

fre

Do

dom, and making of it French, whilf the quite contrary must follow, were be King a Naples; for baving no Enemy burshe French tofcar, be sould be comit ained to love bonour, and obey him to bo bad the only power to open a way to bis enemies, fo that the title of this Kingdom would indeed refide in Alphonio but the Authority and power in Philip.Wherefore it much more concerned him then himfelf. to confider the benefit of the one and prejudice of the other; unless be were more intent to please his fancy then Secure bis state: for on one fid be would be a Prince, and free, on the other (placed between two powerful Princes) bemuft either tofe bis State, live in continual jealoufie, or obey them as their Servant. Thele words made fuch impression in the Dukes wiselesses by mind, that changing purpoles, he releafes Alphonfo, returning him honourably to Geand; who thence transports himself to Gaieta, which upon the first News of his delivery, had been furprized by some Lords of his Party. The Genovefe feeing the Duke had, without any notice taken of them, releafed Alphonfo (affurning honour to himfelf at their expence and hazard, for to him remained all the gratitude due for his enlargment, and to them only the regret for his defeat and Captivity) were extreamly incented against flim. In the City of Geneva, whilst it was at liberty, they were wont by free votes to create a head whom they called Doge, not as absolute Prince to determine matters of himfelf, but as Prelident of a Council.

nies de

Tuel Servi

D2012 3213

-74 VARETS

É

e

e

Š

ij

N.

Y

re

nt

5)

as

to

to

.

er

d

àn

he he

be

6

2

m,

t

te

er

It

pi

fre

pa

m

tit.

lyi

pri

to

his

Na

wit

ran

eith

Adı

ther

whi

Hop:

Council, or fpeaker of a Parliament, to propound Matters whereof the Magistrates and Councils should consult. This City has many Noble families so powerful, that with difficulty they submit to the Commands of the Magiltrates, and amongst the rest the Fregofi and Adorni claim one of the cheifelt ranks: From these arrive the Divisions of that City, and the corruption of civil orders; for many times not only fighting among themselves, but taking Arms against the Government, it happens that one party is oppressed, and the other rules, and often those which are deprived of their Dignity, have recourfe to Forreign affiliance; submitting that Dominion which they cannot enjoy themselves to the jurisdiction of strang-Whence it frequently followed, that reiested by those who reigned in Lombardy, commanded Genove, as now at the taking of King Alphonso happened. Among the chief of the Genovese that occasioned the submission of that City to Philip, was Francis Spinola, of whom (as it often happens to those than betray their Country into Servitude) the Servi- Duke not long after grew Jealous; whereat discontent, he had made choice of a kind of hee them. Voluntary Exile at Gaieta; where Residing when the Sea-fight hapned with Alfonso, and Behaving himfelf valiantly in that encounter, he thought he had afresh merited for much of the Duke, that he might at least live fecurely at Genova; but finding the Duke fill continued his Jealoulies (for he could

Sports 3

not believe, that a man who loved not the liberty of his Country could love him) he determined once more to try his Fortune. and at one push restore Liberty to his Country, and Fame and Security to himself; for he faw there was no other way to gain a good opinion with his fellow Citizens, than to make the hand that gave the wound to heal it. And perceiving the univerfal indignation conceived against the Duke, for discharging King Alphonfo, he thought it now a he opportunity to put his delign in execution, and communicates this his determination to feveral, whom he knew to be of the same Opinion, perswading and encouraging them to joyn with him in it. It was on the folemn Feaft of St. Joba Ba-1 puist when Arismino (a new Governour fent from the Duke) entred the City, accompanied by Opicino the old Governour, and many Genoeses: Francis Spinola now thought hit no longer to delay the Attempt, but fallying out of his House with those that were privy to his Determination, and coming into the publick Market+, lace, against which his Palace stood, openly proclaimed the Name of Liberty. 'Twas miraculous to fee with what alacrity and readiness the people ran to that very Name; to that none, that either for their own Benefit, or any other Advantage, loved the Duke, had time either to take Arms, or fearer to confult which way to flie. Arifmino, and fome Gemorefe with him, fled into the Caffle, which

Teraido de Albazi periwades the Duice 'of Mices

Willin Flo

\$1050.

B w

5 0

VI 10.

Ġ

at de so on la table de la constante de la con

uke

uld not was kept for the Duke. Opicino prefumine if he could recover the Palace, where he

covers its Liberty.

had 2000 Souldiers under his Command he might either fave himfelf or encourage his Friends to defend him fled thitherwards; but before he could reach the Piazza vis flain, and his Body torn in feveral pieces. Genevate drag'd about the whole City. And the Grnovele having thus reduced the City under their own free Magistrates, within few dais after took the Castle, and all the other strong Places, garrifoned by Philip, clearly calling off the yoak of Milan. This fuccels changed the fade of things; for, whereas before all the Princes of Italy were terrified, fear ing leaft the Duke should grow too powerful, they had now some hopes he might be dealt withal, and stopt in his carrier; and notwithstanding the League lately made, the Venetians and Florentines made Peace with the State of Genova: Whereupon Itnaldo de Albizi, and other principal Mer banished out of Florence, seeing these Dflurbances, and the course of things change ed, entertained a hope they might perfusi the Duke to an open War with Florent and coming to Milan, Rinaldo addresse himself to the Duke in this manner; The We, once your Enemies, should thus confident ly come to crave your affiftance; to restore in to our Country, cannot be wondred at either by you, or any other that considers worldly affairs, bow strangly they proceed, and be pariable they are: for me can produce mai f_0

Rinaldo de Albizi perswades the Duke of Milan to Wat with Flogence,

W

700

A

ftii Gi

Z

Cit

taki

bou.

.

nith

Ben

ies.

1

er

ics we me

21-

be and a wall

Met

Di Maria

fest and reasonable Excuses of our past and prefent Actions, both to you, and to our Conntry. None can blame that Man that strives to defend bis Country, in what soever manner be defend it : Not did we ever delien to injure you, but to guard our Country from Oppression; for which we appeal to your felf. who can teftifie . That when the League was in a full course of Victory, no sooner perceived we you inclined to a folid Peace, but we were more earnest for it than your felf. So that we are not conscious of baving done any shing. bould make us doubtful of obtaining favour from you: Nor can our Country complain that we now encourage you to employ the Same Arms against it which, with fo much obflinacy we once defended it from; for that Country deserves to be Beloved by all its Citizens, that bears an equall Love to all its Citizens, and not that which adoring some few, Post-pones all the reft. Nor let any w in General serms condemn all occasions of taking up Arms against our Country ; for though Cities are bodies mixed, yet have they with simple bodies some resemblance; and as in thefe, many infirmities, are bred, which without burnings and incifions cannot be Cund, fo in the other oftentimes happen thofe In-Th unveniencies and diforders; that a good and len July Citizen, where fire and Sword are netie to Wary, would fin more in leaving the wounds erh meured, than in applying those sharp reme-4 bes. And what greater Malady can a repub-Ich groan under then Servitude ? or what is

5B 2

bec

1201

the

to 1

beb

Wa

HOTE

pari

the

fail

Some

now

Ana

diffa

rent

certa

ifie

nade

bigb

I yo

ead

ber

6

tate

ut e

non

eith

kede

Duke

more proper and necessary, then that a fit remedy be applied to so violent a temper. That War only is just which is necessary, and those Arms pions, where no other hope is left. Whi Necessity can be more pressing then ours or who piety greater, then to redeem our Country of of Slavery? Doubtless then our cause uju and merciful, which both you and we on first to consider : Neither is Justice wanti on your part, fince the Florentines bave un been ashamed, after a league fo solemnly, folately agreed on, to conclude a peace w the Kebelling Genovele. Therefore if for Take you will not, yet let your own cause n you, and that the rather, because of the fi lity of the Enterprize; Nor let the Example past affright you, whereby you have Experie ced the power and obstinate defence made that people, both which might reasonably det you, were that City still as virtuous as before but now alas! tis quite the Contrary, for w Force is to be feared from that City, which fo lutely definited it felf of its riches and duftry? what resolution can be expelled in people divided by fo many new and various mities? which disunions will be the ca wby the riches they have yet left, cannot employed in such manner as formerly: men willingly expose their Patrimonies , w they fee them expended for their own Gla and the Honour and Safety of their Count lima boping to reap that advantage by Peace, wh War deprives them of; but the Case is qu otherwise, when both in War and Peace to

behold themselves oppressed, forced by one to fuffer the Injury of their Enemies , and by the other the Infolency of their Governours; because the Avarice of their own Citizens is more prejudicial to a People, than the foil of their Enemies; for they live still in hopes to fee a conclusion of this, but despair ever to behold an end of that. Besides, in former Wars, you affailed a whole City, and are now to wage War only against the smallest part of it; Tou attempted then to take away the Power from many Citizens, now you affail only a few wicked Usurpers; You then fought to deprive a City of its Freedom , but now you endeavour to restore it to Liberty. And it is not reasonable to imagine, but such differity of occasions must produce as differ rent effects; nay, you may almost conclude of certain Victory; which, how much it will fortifie your state you may eafily judge; baving made Tolcany your friend by the tyes of such high and considerable Obligations, which in Jour Enterprizes will stant you in more tead , than the whole Force of Milan; and, obereas, at other times, this Invasion would be branded as Violent and Ambitious, 'tmill now gain the Epithites of Just and Compassi-mate. Let not therefore this opportunity slip, but consider that an your former Attempts spon this City, were attended with defficulty, ntr limage and difgrace; this will be Crowned. with success, advantage and bonour. There needed not many words to perswade the by Duke to a War with Florence; for he that

Book V. is commanded by an hereditary Hate, and

g

n

d

n

b

fa

D

20

th

Pe

Pi

tin

all

Ne

Pi

Fr

w

Pi

pai

nie

Ar

and

tur

Sca

ny

Th

wh

The Duke vots to recover Ga-

endea

blind Ambition, is eafily led to any thing and the fresh Injuries of the Genoveses made him the more inclinable but yet, the remembrance of his vast Expences, the Hazards he had been exposed to and the Losses he had fo lately fultain'd, fomewhat startled him. This Duke, as foon as he had intelligence of the Revolt of Genova, had fent Nicholas Piecining, with all his Men at Arms, and as many Foot as he could levy in the Country. against that City, to reduce it by force, before the Citizens had their minds fetled, a had established a new Government; confiding in the Castle of Genous, which se held out for him. And though Nicholas drove the Genovese up the Mountains, and took from them the Vale of Pozevori, where the had Fortified themselves, constraining them to retire within the Walls of their City, vet he found fo many stops and difficulties, and to much resolution in the Genovese to defend themselves; that he was content at last to retreat. Whereupon the Duke, at the motion of the banished Florentines, gave of der to affault the River on the Eastern Confines, and to profecute the War towards the Country of Fifa with all vigour image nable, believing this Attempt would, from time to time, chalk him out the way how to proceed farther: whereupon Nicholas besieges Serazana, and takes it; and after having laid waste many places, the more to increase the Florentines Jealousie, he come

nd

he of the or

to Luces, giving out, That he was marching into the Kingdom of Naples to affift the King of Arragon. Pope Engeniss upon these new Accidents leaves Florence, and goes to Bolonia, where he treats an Accommodation between the Duke and the League; declaring to the Duke, that if he would not confent to the Agreement; he should be necessitated to confign over Earl Francis (at present his Confederate, and under his pay) to affift the League: but though the Pope took a great deal of pains in this Affair, his labour proved all in vain; for the Duke would confent to nothing unless Genova submitted, and the League would have that City free: whereupon, in despair of Peace, all fides prepared for War. Necholas Piccinino being come to Lucca; the Florentines Jealous of some new Delign, caused all their Forces, under the Command of Neri di Gino, to march into the Country of Pifa, and prevailed with the Pope that Earl Francis (hould joyn with him, and the whole Army make head at Santia Gonda, Piccinino who lay at Lucca defired free paffage to the Kingdom, which being denied him, he threatned to force it. The Armies were equal in Men and Captains, and therefore both wary of tempting Fortune; and belides, withheld by the cold Scason (for it was now December) lay many daies without any Action on either fide. The first that Moved was Nicholas Piccining, who being informed, That if he flormed Vico 5 B 4

Vice Pifane by night, he might eafily take it, made the Attempt; but not having the good fortune to carry it, he facke all the Country, pillaging and burning the Borough of St. John alla Vena. The success of which enterprize, though in effect to little purpose, encouraged Nicholas to proceed farther, especially seeing the Earl and Neri yet stirred not: whereupon he affaults St. Maria in Caftello, and Filletto, and carries them. Yet for all this the Florentine Army lay still, not that the Earl was afraid, but because the Florentine Magifirates, out of respect to the Pope who endeavoured for Peace, had not yet decreed the War; but what the Florentines did in prudence, their Enemies attributed to Cowardize, and thence took Courage to proceed to new Actions: whereupon, concluding upon the taking of Barga, they prefented themselves before it with all their Forces. The Belieging this Town made the Florentines lay atide all respects, and resolve not only to relieve Barga, but to fall upon the Territories of Lucca: where upon, the Earl advanced towards Piccining and engaging him near barga overcame him, forcing him, in great diforder, to raife Mean while the Venetians judging the Duke had broken the Peace, fent John Francisco de Gonzaga, their General, to Gbiaraddada, vvho ravaging and spoiling the Dukes Country, forced him to recall Nicholas Piccinine out of Tofcany, which Kevo-

TheDukes Forces ander Piccimins defeated.

Revocation, together with the Defearabefore given to Nicholar, put the Florensines in fuch heart, that they refolved to attack Lucca, with great hopes to become Masters of it: Nor had they indeed any great reafon to fear it, or vvere by any respect obliged to refrain it, fince the Duke, whose Forces only awed them, was diverted by the Venetians; And the Lucchefi having received and quartered their Enemies, and encouraged them to the affault of their Towns, could not now complain of any wrong done them: In April 1437 the Earl fet 1437forward with his Army; but before the Florentines vyould make the Affault upon others, they thought hit to recover their own , and retook Santia Maria in Gaftelle, and all the other places taken by Piccinino; and then entring the Territories they befieged Camajore, whose Inhabitants, though faithful to their Lords, yet fear of a prefent Enemy prevailing over their fidelity to difrant Friends, they yeilded: and with like Reputation vvere Massa and Serazana furrendred; which done; about the latter end of Maythe Army drew towards Lucea, all the vvay as they event destroying the Corn, burning the Villages, cutting down the Trees, rooting-up the Vineyards, driving away the Cattle; and in a word, acting all the Out-rages and Hostilities, the most enraged Enemy would or could do. Whill tare on the other fide, the Lucchefi feeing them- strelled felves forfaken by the Duke, and despairing

made.

¢

S

d

n

vil.

04

u-

eir

de

nd

to

CON.

NO.

me ife

g-

ent

rala

oil-

TO-

ich vo-

to defend their Country, had deferted it : And with Ramparts, Trenches, and allother convenient Fortifications, firengthned their City, not doubting but having men enough within, they might for fome time defend it, as in former Affaults made by the Florentines they had done: they only feared the mutable mind of the Commonpeople, who perhaps, wearled with the Siege, would be more concerned for their private danger, than for the Liberty of their City, and fo force them to some base and dishenourable Composition. Wherefore, to heighten their Resolutions, they affembled them in the Market-place; where one of the gravest and wifest Citizens, spake in this manner : Tou ought alwaies to remember, that what's done out of Necessity deferves neither commendations nor blame; and therefore, if you should complain that we have occasioned this War by receiving the Dakes Forces into our Territories , and permitting them to affault the Florentines, you are much in the wrong. You know well the ancient Ennity born to this State by the Florentine people, which no Injury of yours, nor Jealoufie of theirs , but only your Weakness. and their Ambition bath occasioned; for the first gives them hopes to oppress you, and the last encourages them to perform it. Nor can you well imagine that any defert in you can quench, or any injury to them inflame their defires of offending you. Wherefore, as they strive to rob you of your Liberty, you must labour

labour to defend it; and at what either Party shall do to those ends, though all maybe grieved none can wonder: for though is may afflitt us to fee our Territories invaded, our Towns fackt, our Houses burnt, our Country destroyed; yet none can be such a fool to admire at it , fince , were it in our power , we should do the like to them or worfe: And whereas they have begun this War upon Piecinino's coming bither, bad be not come they would have found some other presence, and perhaps the danger being deferred would bone proved greater; we ought not therefore to blame bis coming bither but our own bard Fortune, and their Ambitious Nature: for we could not refuse the entrance of the Dukes Forces into our Dominions, nor when they were entred, binder them fram profecuting the War. You know that without Some powers ful Aliance we cannot be defended, and what Potentate more proper to do it , both for Force and fidelity than the Duke: He reftored our Liberty, 'tis reasonable be should defend it: He bath been a constant persecutor of all own ancient Enemies; if then, by not offending the Florentines we should have incurred his Anger, we had both loft our Friend, and made our Enemy more powerful, and more apt to offend us : So that it is much better to have this War with the Dukes love, than Peace with bis diffleasure: And we have reafor to bope he will refeue us from those dangers in which be bath engaged us, provided we do not for ake bim. You know well with

what rage the Florentines have oft-times affaulted us, and with how much glory we have defended our felves; even then when we had no other bope than in God, and Time, and both of them miraculously preserved us: and if then we defended our selves, why (bould we defair of doing it now? All Italy had then left us as a prey to them: now we have the Duke on our fide, and may reasonably believe the Venetians will be flow in offending us; for the greatness of Florence will not be consistent with their Interest : In former Actions the Florentines were more at freedom, and in more bopes of Assistance, and we in all points weaker; for then a Tyrant defended us , now we defend our selves : the glory accrued then to others, now 'twill be our Own: then united they affaulted us, noro in dif-union; all Italy being filled with their Exiles. Finally, were none of thefe things fo. Necessity should urge to a resolute defence. Tis reasonable to withstand every Enemy, for they all prosecute their own glory with our ruine; but above all we ought to dread the Florentines, whom our Obedience, Tribute, and Subjection will not content , but who aim at our Persons and Estates; with our Blood to fatiate their Cruelty, and with our Substance their Avarice : fo that all forts and degrees among us ought to have them in deteftation, Be not therefore dismayed to see your Fields foiled, your Towns burnt, your Castles garrisoned or demolished; for if we save our City. they will eafily again be recovered, but lofing

is, all will with it be utterly loft: preferring our Liberty, bardly can the Enemy preferre our Towns; but lofing our Freedom, in vain poffes we any thing elfe. Stand therefore to your Arms, and when you fight remember, That the reward of Victory will not only be the Safety of your Country, but of your Houses, your Wives, and your Children. Thefe laft words to animated the whole Multitude. that with an universal Cry they all promifed rather to die, than yeild, or confent to any Terms infringing their Liberty; and prepared all things necessary for the Defence of a City. Mean while the Florentine Army lay not Idle; and after unexpressible Damage done to the Country, took Monte Carlo on Articles, and from thence went and encamped before Vzzano, that the Lucchefi, begirt on every side, might become hopeless of any relief, and constrained by Famine, yeild. The Lucebefi (as it was but reasonable) seeing themselves thus streightned, had recourse to the Duke for of Aid, by all kind and obliging means recommending themselves to his favour, formetimes in their Speeches fetting forth their own Merits; sometimes the Oppressions of the Florentines; and how much Courage it would add to his Friends, if he defended them; and how dif-hearten them, if he left them defenceles; and if they should lose their Lives and Liberties, He, with his Friends, would lofe his Honour and Credit with all those who, for His fake, should

Craves Aid Of Miles,

hereafter run themselves into any danger: adding Tears to their Speeches, to the end. that if the Obligations he had to them could not move him, Compation might. Infomuch , that the Duke having his old grudge against the Florentines, now joyned with his fresh Obligation to the Lucchefi. and above all, delirous the Florentine Power thould not be increased by such an addition, determined to fend a great Army into Toscany, or so hercely affail the Venetians, that the Florentines should be glad to raise their Siege to come and affift them. This Resolution taken, Intelligence was soon brought to Florence, that the Duke was fending Forces into Tofeany, fo that their hopes of Success began to flag: however, that the Duke might be diverted in Lombardy, they folicited the Venetians to fet upon him with all their Forces. But they were already disheartned by the Marquis of Monsova's forfaking them, and taking the Dukes pay: whereby, being in a manner difarm'd, they replyed, that they were fo far from being able to appear in a better posture, that they thould not be capable to keep the field. if Earl Francis were not fent to be their General, with Condition, that he should oblige himself in Person to pass the Po; for they would not stand to the old Articles. by which he was not obliged to pass it; alleadging, that without a General they could not make War, and on none but the Earl could they rely, nor on him neither, unles

1

1

li

unless he were obliged to make War in all places. The Florentines were of opinion the War should be hotly pursued in Lonbardy; and on the other fide, without the Earl, they despaired of ever carrying Lucia : and very sensible were they, that this Demand of the Venetians was not made fo much out of any necessity they were in of the Earls prefence, as to hinder them of this Victory: On the other fide, the Earl was to go into Lombardy whenever the League appointed him, but he would not change his Covenants, unwilling to deprive himfelf of the hopes of that Alliance promifed him by the Duke. Thus were the Florentines distracted between two diverse Passions, The defire of having Lucca, and, The fear of a War with the Duke. But (as for the most part it happens) fear prevailed, and they were content that the Earl having taken Uzzano, should go into Lombardy. There being in the Florentines power to compose, perplexed them, and created more doubes than the former: for the Earl would not pass the Po; and the Venetians, if he did not, would not entertain him. So there being no way of accommodation to be found, but by the one yeilding to the other, the Florentines perswaded the Earl, that he should write a Letter to their Senate, obliging himself to pass that River; alleadging, that a private Promise could not make a breach of publick Covenants, and that

n t

d

r

3

he might afterwards make War without parling it; only this advantage would accrue to them . That the Venetians having begun the War, would be forced to profecute it, and thereby give a divertion to those Forces they fo much feared; and to the Venetions, on the other fide, they affirmed, That this private Letter was enough to oblige him, and therefore they ought to content themselves with it; for if they could contrive how the Earl might still preserve his Respects to his Father in Law, it were convenient to do it, and would be no way either for his or their advantage, without manifest necessity to discover it. Thus was the Earls paffage into Lombardy contrived; who having taken Uzzano, and raised some Bulwarks about Lucca, to streighten the Befieged, leaving the Charge of the War to his Lieutenants, he passed the Alps and comes to Reggio; where, the Venetians grown jealous of his proceedings, to make tryal of his intentions, dispatche away a Messenger to him with Orders to pass the Po, and joyn the rest of their Forces; which the Earl utterly denying to do, there happened many reproachful words between him and Andrea Mauroceno, who was fent from the Venetians; the one telling the other, that he had a great deal of Pride, but little faith; and feveral protefts being made, by the one That he was not obliged to the Service, and by the other, That there the uld be no Mony paid. The Earl returned into Tofcany,

1

T

S

d

u

te.

4

ch

en

nt

0-

ut

le,

he

ld

ito

ry,

केट्युक्टवित

Frederic

7:119608

Tofcany, and Maurocene to Venice. The the Country of Pifa, and they were still in hopes to induce him to renew the War against Lucea, which they found he had no great inclination to; for the Duke understanding that out of respect to him he had refused to pass the Po, thought he might by his mediation fave Lucca likewife, and therefore defired him to confent to make Peace between the Lucchefi and the Florentines, and (if he would) include him allo putting him in hopes he should, when he pleafed, be married to his Daughter. This Alliance tickled the Earl, being in hopes by means of it (the Duke having no Male iffue) to make himself one day Lord of Milan: wherefore he delayed the Florentine proceedings, declaring he would not stir till the Venetians had made full payment of his Conduct Mony: nor was their pay sufficient; for designing to live securely in his own Estates, he thought it convenient to have other supports than the Flarentines; and if he were deferted by the Venetians, it was time to look about him; cunningly threatning and intimating an Agreement with the Duke. These Deceits and Cavils vexed the Florentines at heart a for they not only beheld Luces loll to them. but were in fear of their own Estates. whenever the Duke and Earl (hould joyn together: And to induce the Venetians to make payment of the Mony promited.

Colmo

Cosmo de Medici went to Venice, believing by his Reputation he might incline them to The Matter was at large disputed in their Senate: The flate of Italy laid down before them, what force the Duke was of. and where the strength and reputation of Arms now lay; and that if the Duke and Earl did joyn, the Venetians would be driven to Sea, and the Florentines in danger of their Liberty. To which the Venetians replyed. That they knew their own strength. and that of Italy; affirming It was not their Custome to pay Souldiers that served others; wherefore the Florentines (hould take care to pay Sforza, fince he had done them Service; but certainly it were fitter if they would possess their City in security, to abase the Pride of the Earl, than pay him; for the Ambition of the man was boundless, and if now he were paid without doing Service, he would ere long demand something more dishonest and dangerous; - therefore in their opinion, they ought in time to find fome way to bridle his Infolency, and not fuffer him to become incorrigible; but if they either for fear, or any other delign, thought fit to preserve his friendship, they might pay him if they pleased. Thus Cosmo, without effecting a-ny thing, was fain to return: Yet the Florentines used their endeavours with the Earl, that he might not withdraw himfelf from the League; and he was indeed unwilling to defert them, but his earnest defire to

Difference between Venice and Flerence about paying Sforza. r

d

ic

1

y,

IV

25 h-

e-

n-

ev lle

me

or

ve

rev

2-10-

the

felf

un-

fire

to

to conclude his Marriage kept the Balance fo even, that the Scales upon every Accident (as one foon after happened) were ready to turn. The Earl had left the charge of his Towns, in La Marca, to one Furlano a principal Leader of his; who being long folicited by the Duke, discharged himself of the Earls Service, and entred into the Dukes pay; which made the Eatl, out of fear to himself, lay aside all Respects, and come to an Agreement with the Duke; and one of the Articles was. That he should no farther concern himself in the Affairs of Romania and Toscany. Upon this Conclusion, the Earl instantly perswaded the Florentines to make Peace with Lucco, and reace be indeed in a manner forced them to it; fo tween that feeing no other remedy, in April 1438, Flores. Articles were concluded on; by which the Lucchefi still remained free, and the Florentines had Monte Carlo, and feveral other of their Caltles left in their possession: then with Letters of Refentment they filled all Italy, declaring, That fince God and Men had conspired that Luces should not fall under their subjection, they had now made Peace with it: and feldome have any gricved more for the lofs of their own, the Florentines did, that they could not violently feize the Poffessions of other men. In these times, though the Florentines had fo many Irons in the hre, they forgot not to have a care of their Neighbours, and to adorn their City. Nicholas Fortibrace,

Cattedral

5 C 2

who had married a Daughter of Earl Pappi, was, as hath been faid before, dead. That Earl had at Niebolas's death, the Borough of St. Sepelchro, with the Castle, in his hands; which he held during his Son in Law's life, as Governour under him; after whose death, he pretended still to keep posfellion of them for his Daughters Dower, refuling to furrender them to the Pope, who (as of right belonging to the Church) had demanded them: whereupon he fent the Patriarch with Forces to recover them: the Earl doubting himself unable to endure the shock, offers the Town to the Florentines, who refused it; but at the Popes return to Florence, mediated an accommodation between him and the Earl, and finding forme difficulty in the agreeing them, the Patriarch affaulted Casentino, and took Prato, Vecchio and Romena, and in like manner offered them to the Florentines; who refused the acceptance of them, unless the Pope would first consent they might restore them to the Earl; to which the Pope, after tedious Disputes agreed; but would first have the Florentines promise, that the Earl fhould furrender the Borough. The Popes Affair thus fetled, the Florentines thought convenient (their Cathedral Church called St. Reperats, which had a long time been building, being now brought to fuch perfection that Divine Service might there be erates the celebrated) to request his Holines in Peroffirmer fon to Confecrate it, who readily confented

and for the greater Magnificence of the City and Church, and to do the Pope more Honour, a Terrace was built from St. Maria Novella, where the Pope relided, to the Church that was to be Confecrated, four yards wide, and two yards high, covered over with very rich Cloth, on which only the Pope and his Court, with the Magistrates, and those Citizens appointed to attend him, walked; the reft of the Commonalty and People, flood either in the Streets, in their Houses, or in the Church, to behold fo glorious a spectacle. Having performed all the Ceremonies usual in such Confecrations, the Pope to give a greater Testimony of his love to the City, bonoured with Knighthood Giulian Avangati, then Gonfaloniere of Justice, and in all times accounted a Noble and worthy Citizens and the Senate, to appear no less kind than the Pope, gave him the Government of Pife. for a year. In these times there was some pifference difference between the Roman and Greek between Churches about Divine Service, and because the Zoman in the last Council held at Basil, much had and Greek been faid about it by the Western Prelates, it was there determined, that all possible diligence should be used to induce the Emperour and the Greek Prelates to affemble in Council, and there to make tryal if they could reconcile the Differences, and confent to the Roman Church. And though this determination intrenched upon the Majesty of the Emperour, and much more grated

on the proud spirits of his Prelates, to yelld to the Pope of Rame; yet being oppressed by the Turky, and confidering they were not able of themselves to defend themselves, that they might with more fecurity demand and rely upon the Western Assistance, they resolved to submit; and so the Emperour, Patriarchs, and other Greek Prelates and Lords, in order to an affembly (according to the Conclusion agreed on at the Council of Basil) came to Venice, where terrified with the Plague, they refolved in Florener to end their Differences; and after several Meetings of the Roman and Greek Prelates, and many long and tedious Disputes, the Greeks submitted, and came to accord with the Church and Pope of Rome. The Peace being concluded between Florence and Lucca, and between the Duke and the Earl, it was thought an easie matter to pacifie those Arms which still infested Italy, especially in Lombardy and Toscany: for as for the War in Naples between Rinate of Anjon, and Alphonfo of Arragan, it could not be expected to be put an end to without the ruine of one Party: And though the Pope was diffatisfied, having lost many of his Towns, and that all men were fensible of the Ambition both of the Duke and the Venetians; yet, most thought the Pope out of necessity, and the others out of weariness would lay down their Arms: But things fell out quite contrary, for neither the Duke nor the Venetians would be quiet;

The Greek

quiet; whence it happened that new Forces new Tion. were raised, and Lombardy and Toscany again bles to made Seats of War. The Dukes hatighty and To mind could not endure the Venesians thould cay. be Masters of Bergamo and Brefera, especially feeing them in a Warlike posture, and daily molesting and disquieting his Country. He therefore supposed, that if they were once deferted by the Pope, the Florensines; and the Earl, he could not only flop their Carreir, but recover his own Towns. To compass which, he designed to take Romania from the Church; gueffing, if he were Lord of that Province, the Pope could no way hurt him ; and the Florentines feeing the fire at their own doors, either would not ftir for fear, or if they did, must very difadvantagiously affault him, The Duke alfovery well knew, how angry the Florentines were at the Venetians about the bulinels of Lucca, and therefore thought they would not be over-eager to ingage in their quarrel. As for Earl Francis, he doubted not but the late Agreement, and the hopes of his Alliance would keep him fleddy; and that he might eschewall manner of offence. and give the less alarum, being by his late Articles with the Earl, bound not to invade Romania, he privately treated with Nicholas Piccinino, that he (as if led by his proper Ambition) should take that Enterprize in hand. Nicholas, at the time of making the Agreement between the Duke and Earl, was in Romania, and appeared 5 C 4 highly

A 22 - 1 200.0

Q. Thee

highly displeased at the Dukes entertaining a Friendship with his perpetual Enemy, and thereupon with his Army withdrew to Camurate a place between Furli and Rovenno; where he incamped as if it had been for a long time, and with delign to stay there till fome new Expedition presented. And the fame of his anger and discontent being spread abroad every where, Nicholas sent to acquaint the Pope, how well he had deferved of the Duke, and how ingratefully he had been dealt withal by him; and withal let him know that Philip gave out, That having now all the Arms of Italy (under the two principal Captains) at his Command, he would feize the whole Province: But yet, if his Holiness pleased of those two Captains (the Duke perswaded himself to be at his dispose) one should become his Enemy, and the other be useless to him; for if he would provide Mony and pay his Souldiers, he would fall upon those Estates the Earl had rob'd the Church of and giving him his bands full in his own defence, hinder him from preffing forward the Dukes Ambition. The Pope believed this feigned Tale, it appearing reafonable to him, fends Nicholas five thoufand Ducats, with mountains of Promifes, offering Estates to him and his Sons. And though the Pope was often Advertized of the Deceit, yet he would needs believe it a Reality, and would hear nothing to the contrary. Oftafio da Polenta was now Governour

Webolas
Poccinino
cunningly
deteives
the Pope,

bu

to

di

en

WO

T

Gm

bre

·ole

Ita

del

Ni

ît i

the

bar

ent

fho

fieg

firo

to

Flo

wha

vernous of Ravenus, for the Church. Nichitas thinking it fit no longer to delay the Nid execution of his Deligns (his Son Francis ? having to the Popes great Ignominy already fackt Spoleto) refolved to beliege Ravenue; either because he thought it might eafily be taken, or having some private Intelligence with Oftafio; however it were, in a very few daies lying before it, it was firerendred on Articles; and foon after Bolonia. Imola and Furli followed the fame fortune: but what was most to be admired, of all the Castles held for the Pope in that Territory not one but submitted to Nicholas. Nor did he think these injurious Actions wrong enough to the Pope; but with reproachful words he derided him; writing to him. That he had defervedly loft his Towns. fince he had not been ashamed to make a breach of Friendship between wim and his old Friend the Duke, by having filled all that with Letters, lightfying, that he had deferted the Duke and joyned with him. Nicholas thus possessed of Kamania leaves it in Charge to Francis his Son, and with the choice of his Army marches into Lombardy, and joyning with the Dukes Forces, enters the Territory of Brefeia, which in a fhort time he becomes Mafter of, and be- belieged. fieges the City. The Duke, who was defirous the Venetians should be left as a prey to him, excuses himself to the Pope, the Florentines, and the Earl, declaring, That what Nicholas had done in Romania, if it

were

were a breach of Articles, was also contrary to his Orders, and by private Messengers infinuated into them, that he would give evident demonstrations of the dislike of it. by punishing his disobedience when time and opportunity served. The Florentines and Earl gave no Credit to him, believing (as indeed the truth was) that the Attempt was made only to keep them at a bay, whilf he tamed the Venetians; who, proud and haughty (believing themselves able to oppose the Dukes Forces) vouchsafed not to ask any ones Affistance, but under Gattame. lata their General maintained the Was Earl Francis, with the consent and favour of the Florentines, was desirous to have gone to the Affistance of King Renate, if these Accidents, in Lombardy and Romanis had not withheld him; and the Florentines were willing to have encouraged him to it by reason of the ancient Amity between their City and the House of France; but the Duke favoured Alphonfo, fince the Friendship contracted in the time he was his Prisoner: however, both one and the the other forbore whilst the War was at their own doors, undertaking distant Enterprizes. And now the Florentines feeing Romania Surprized, and the Venetians ale faulted (from others ruine, fearing their own) defired the Earl to come into Tofcany, where they would confult what was to be done to oppose the Dukes Forces, which were now greater than ever ; affiringing, that

四旦日

pro W.

W2

Ear

YVO

rins

VVa

ter.

loft

fels

VVC

Ter

pof

Befi

cou

Man

ral

beyo

10yn

Prid

ning

that if fuddenly his Infolencies were not Supprefied, all that held any States in Italy might justly fear to rue it. The Earl was fensible that the apprehensions of the Florentines were xeasonable; yet his earnest defire to perfect an Alliance with the Duke kept him in suspence: and the Duke, who knew how much that defire fwayed him, fed him still with hopes; and to restrain him from engaging against him, let him know that his Daughter vvas now Marriagable, and carrying on matters fo far, that preparations were made for the Weddings which yet by some Cavils and Delaies was again obstructed: However, to keep fair, and gain the firmer Credit with the Earl, the Duke added vvorks to his yvords, fending him Thirty thousand Florins, which, by the Marriage Contract he was to pay him. Still the War grew hotel The War ter in Lombardy, and the Venezians daily grows her loft forme Town or other ; and all the Vef- in Lande fels of War that they had fent up the River, vvere by the Dukes Forces taken; the whole Territory of Verona and Brefeia by them possessed, and those two Cities so streightly Belieged, that it was generally thought they could not long hold out. The Marquis of Mantoua, vyho had many years been General of the Forces of that Republick, even beyond all belief, had forfaken them, and joyned with the Duke; so, that what their Pride would not let them do in the beginning of the War, their fear made them Submit

ä

E

ij

it

3

22

fubmit to in the progress of it. For no feeing there was no remedy but engage the Florentines and the Earl, they lous their Friendship, though it were with sham and doubt of Success; for they were jes lous least the Florentines should return them the fame Answer they had receive from them in the business of Lucca, and concerns of the Earl: But they found then readier than they hoped for, or than the Deportment had deserved; for hatred to an ancient and inveterate Enemy prevailed in the Florentines, above their Refentment and Anger conceived against old and tries Friends: And having long fince forefer the Necessities into which the Venetian would fall, they had endeavoured to convince the Earl that their Ruine vvould like wife be his; and that he deceived himfelf to believe the Duke vvould effeem him less in his good than evil Fortune; for the reason of the Dukes promising him his Daughter, being only the fear he flood in of him, those things Necessity makes men promife d it must likewise make them perform; and therefore it ought to be his defign still, to keep the Duke in the same Neceffity, which without the Venetians greatness could not be done. Wherefore he ought to confider, That if the Venetians were driven from the firm Land, he would not only want those Conveniencies he might receive from themselves, but even those, which all others for fear of them, might other-

12 200 der find per (as por his

not

Art

by

thir

Cha

cs, 2

Lea

che:

Rim

thou

the !

100

Pay

enza

feele

Barg

the

patc

Olice

differ

otherwise contribute; and if he well confifered the other States of Italy, he would find forme of them poor, and others his Enemies. Nor were the Florentines alone (as himself had often faid) sufficient to support him; fo that upon all accounts, it was his main Concern to preserve the Venetimy power on the Continent. These perfwations added to the Hate newly conceiv'd by the Earl against the Duke, for thinking himself mocked in the Alliance, made him confent to an Agreement; yet would he not be obliged to pass the River Po. These Articles were concluded in February 1438, The Vail by which the Venetians agreed to pay two thirds, and the Florentines one third of the and Ead Charge; and both bound themselves to the Francis defence of the Earls Territories in La Mar- sew A. es, at their proper Cofts. Neither was the green League yet content with these Forces, but joyned to themselves the Lord of Faenza, the Sons of Meffer Pandolfo de Malatefta de Rimini, and Piero Giampagolo Orfino: but though with large Promises they tempted the Marquis of Mantona, yet they could by so means withdraw him from the Dukes Pay and Friendship; and the Lords of Faenza (after the League had concluded and fetled their establishment) finding a better Bargain, revolted to the Duke; which put the League out of hopes of fo foon difpatching the Affairs of Romania, as they once thought. At this time in great diffres vvas Lombardy, for Brefeis was

of for

ki

pe

to

601

Ea

fen

no

mo

for

me

the

int

Du

me opin

me

Sta

bas

Obos

tion

cur the

Cre

ply

you

not

Pro

The Difirefs of Lembardy.

so closely belieged by the Dukes Forces, that all men thought it would be forced through Famine to furrender : Nor was Verona any better condition; and in the judgment of most men, either of these Cities being taken, all further preparations of War would be in vain, and all the expence his therto made, be loft. So that now there vyas no other remedy to be proposed, but the marching of Earl Francis into Lombards In which there appeared Three main diffe culties; First The disposing the Earl to me the Po, and profecute the War every where: In the fecond place, The Florentines were extreamly apprehensive of being left at the Dukes diferetion, if the Earl were drawn off from their Affistance; for the Duke could ealily retire into his strong holds, an with part of his Army attend the Earls motions, and with the remainder, joyning with their Rebels, come into Tofcany; t fear of which extreamly terrified the prefent Government. The third was, Which way the Earl (hould march to joyn wi the rest of the Venetian Forces, which he in the Country of Padona. Of these three Difficulties the fecond which concerned t Florentines was the most doubtful; re they fensible of the necessity, and tired will the Venetians importunity, who inceffant demanded the Earls Advancing, declaris That without him they must abandons submitted the fear and suspicion of the own fafety to the necessities of their Alli

u

g

II.

te.

út

2:

ne he m

ke mis ing the resident by the resident ing all their resident in all their resident ing all their resident in all the resident in all their resident in all their resident in all the resident in all

So there now remained only the difficulty of the Way, which was concluded must be fecured by the Venezions; and because Neri di Gino Capponi had been successful in making the Agreement with the Earl, and Boile perswading him to pass the Po, the Senate persise thought fit to fend him Express to Venice, to Venice, to Venice, to endear this favour to that Senate, and to confult about the Way, and fecurity of the Earls paffage. Neri takes his way to Cefena, and from thence by Sea to Venice; nor was there ever any Prince received with more Respect and Honour by that Senate; for on his coming, and on what by his means they were to order and determine. they thought the Honour and Safety of their Empire depended. Neri being admitted into the Senate, addressed himself to the Duke in this manner : Those Lords that fent His me (most Serene Prince) bave ever been of to t opinion , That the Duker greatness would be the ruine of this State, and of our Commonwealth; and therefore the welfare of both States depends on your Greatness and ours had this been believed by your Lordships we should have found our selves in a better condition, and your Estates would have been fecured from those dangers which now threaten them; but because in due time you gave no Credit to us, we were made incapable of applying quick Remedies to your Difasters, and you of readily demanding them; for you have not fludied us either in your Adverfity or Proferity, nor perhaps do you yet know that

46

to is one compet fill so love shofe we have once we have once justly conceived a harred. Be your solves the Wisnesses of the love me have ever born this most Noble Senate, by the knowledge you have how, to our own apparent damage, we have often fent our Forces into Lombardy to your affiftance and succour; and the whole World can teftifie the hate we bare Philip, and his whole Family: Nor can such ancient Love, and fo fetled a Hatred be eafily cancelled. We were, and are certain, that in this War we might have flood Neuters, to the Dukes infinite futufaction, and no great baward to our felves; for though, by your ruine, be should become Lord of all Lombardy , ver would the remaining Force of Italy be Sufficient to keep us from despair; for with Power and Dominion Envy and Enemies increase which are usually attended with War and destruction. We are likewife very sensible bon vast an Expence might bave been avoided by our declining this War; bow many eminent dangers we might have escaped: for wherea Lombardy is now made the Seat of it, by our affifting you it may be carried into Tolcany : Tet our ancient Affection to you but, made in baniff all those jealoufies and sufficions and we bave resolved with the same power and affection to affift you, as we would defend our felves if we were Affaulted. Wherefore, My Lords, judging it of absolute necessity, before all things, to relieve Verona and Brefeia, and believing without the Earl

it could not be done, we fent first to persivade bim to pas the Po, and make War in all places; for you know be was not obliged to pas that River ; yet have I difosed bim to it. prevailing with him by the same Reasons that prevailed over us : And as he feems to be invincible in Arms, fo he will not be overcome in Courtefie, but contends to be the Superiour in that Generofity and Liberality be beholds in us towards you, for be knows well to bow many dangers Toscany is exposed by his drawing thence by Forces : yet feeing we have Postponed our own Safety to your relief, be will not prefer any Keffells or Interests of bis own before it. I come therefore to offer you the Earl, with seven thousand Horse, and two thousand Foot, ready to go any where whither you shall Command bim, to find out your Enemies. I intreat you therefore (and it is also both my Lords and His Request) That as the Numbers of his Men exceed what he is obliged to serve with, so your Liberality will extend to him a proportionable Recompence; that he may not repent his coming into your Service, nor we be forry that ever we encouraged him to it. This Speech of Neri's. to the Venetian Senate, was liftned to with as much Attention as if it had proceeded from an Oracle, and fo much did his words move the whole Auditory, that not having the patience (according to Gustome) to let the Prince return him an Answer, they all role up, and lifting up their hands with tears of Joy (many of them) in their Eyes? 5 D

ce me Be

to

td

re

.

ž.

14

いったい かんい かりは おかに

i

te de la co

ä

+48

seturned thanks to the Florentines for for friendly an Affiftance, and to him for having with fuch speed and celerity dispatched it; promising. That no process of time should ever blot the memory of it out of theirs. or the hearts of their Posterity; but that their Country should be in Common to the Florentines and them. These Kindnesses and Congratulations ended, they began to Confult what way the Earl had best March. that Bridges might be erected, Paffages levelled, and other Securities provided. Four Waies were proposed; one from Ravenna along the Sea-fide, but this being narrow, and streightned by the Fenns and Marishes. was not approved: The next was by the Direct way; but that was impeached by a Tower called Vecellino, kept for the Duke, which must of necessity be won before pasfage could be had, and that was hard to do in so short a time; for the least delay might rob them of an Opportunity of relieving their Cities, which above any thing required haste and diligence: The third was by the Woods of Lugo; but because the Po had o'refwell'd its Banks, that Paffage was made not only difficult but impossible. There remained only the fourth, which was by the Champion of Bolonia, and fo paffing at Ponte Puledrano, at Cento and at Piene, march between Finale and Bondeno to Ferrare, from whence, by Land and Water, they might eafily Transport themselves into the Country of Padona, and joyn with the

the Venetian Forces; though there was in this Way many difficulties, and possibly fome Paffes might be Guarded by the Enemies Forces, yer, as less dangerous than any of the reft, it was pitcht upon a which was no fooner figuined to the Earl but with admirable celerity he Advances, and on the 19 of June came into the Country of Padona. The coming of this Captain into street Italy gave fuch Courage to the Venetians, comes and all their Subjects, that whereas before they despaired of their own Sasety, they began now to think of Conquering others. The Earl in the brit place marches to the Releif of Vergua, to stop whose passage Nicholas with his Army advances to Some, a Castle seated between the Territories of Vicenza and Verona, and encompassed with a Ditch cut from Soave to the Marishes of Adice: the Earl perceiving his passage through the Plain thus impeached, thought he might yet pass the Mountain way, and so get between his Enemy and Verana, imagining, that either Nicholas would not believe he would adventure that way, being fo rough and craggy, or when he did believe it, it would be too late to ftop him; and having provided eight daies Provitions, advances with his whole Army over the Mountains, and arrives under Some in the Plain: for though Nicholas had fortified some Posts, and raised some Bulwarks to impeach his passage this Way, yet the Works and Guards, as not much regarded, 5 D 2 proved

ı,

r

,

í,

3

0

it

9

25

by

at

re,

7.

ne.

ch

ne

proved too weak to withfiand him. Nichtlas therefore feeing his Enemy, contrary to all imagination, got into the Plain, that he might not be forced to fight upon difadvantage, retreated on the other lide the Adice, and the Earl without any opposition enters Verena. The Earl proving thus fuccessful in his first Attempt, and with so much eafe railing the Seige of Verona, the next thing to be undertaken was the relief of Brefeia. The City is to well feated upon the Lake of Garda, that though it be blocked up by Land, it may fill be supplied with Provisions by Water; which had made the Duke, with feveral strong Parties, fortifie himself upon the Lake, and in the commencement of his Victories, had garrisoned all those Towns that might send Brescia any Relief by the Lake. The Venetians likewise had Gallies there, but not of strength enough to oppose the Duke. The Earl therefore judged it requisite, with his Army on Land to affilt those Forces on the Water; for, by their joynt power, he was in hopes he might eatily win the Battle; he encamped therefore against Badilino, 2 Cafile seased upon the Lake, hoping, if he took that, the others would furrender. The Earl in this Enterprize found Fortune averse to him, for here great numbers of his Souldiers fell lick, so that forced to raise his Siege he retreated to Zmo, a Castle of Verona, a place both plentiful and healthful. Nicholas feeing the Earl setired, to the

the end he might not let flip this opportunity of making himself Lord of the Lake, leaves his Camp at Vegofis, and with a felect Party goes to the Lake, where with great Courage and fury he affaults the Venetian Fleet, and took almost all of them: After which Victory, most of the Castles remaining on the Lake furrendred to him. The Venetians terrified at these Losses, and fearing least Brescia should weild also, by Messengers and Letters earnestly solicited the Earl to its releif. And the Earl perceiving all hopes of releiving it by the Lake cut off, and that by the Champion way it was impossible (by reason of the Trenches, Ditches, Bastions and Bulwarks, raised by Nicholas,) amongst which entring against an Enemies Army he hazarded a manifest defeat and loss, he determined by the way of the Mountains, as he had faved Verona, fo to fuccour Brefeia. The Earl having formed this delign, Decamps from Zemo, and by the Vale of Acri Marches to the Vale of St. Andrea, and comes to Torboli and Penda, on the Lake of Garda, thence to Tenna; for to reach Brefeia he must of necessity take that Castle: Nicholas having intelligence of the Earls intention, draws off his Army to Pefchiera, and thence, with the Marquis of Mantona, and forme Chosen men of his own. goes to face the Earl; whom engaging with Nide he was defeated, his Army (quite broken Precons and disordered) put to flight, many of his defended Men taken, and the relt escaping, part to the Camp,

b-

o

1-

4-

n

ċ-

fo

he

ef

on

be

ed

de

1-

he

11-

nd

10-

of

he

his

he

135

e;

2

he

er.

ne

of

ife

of

h-

to

he

Camp, and part to the Gallies. Nicholas faved himself in Tenna, but night being come on, he began to imagine, that if he staid there till break of Day, 'twould be impossible but he must fall into the Enemies hands ; fo to avoid a certain danger, he adventured a very doubtful one. Of all his Men Nicholas had none now with him but one Servant a German, of very great frength of Body, and who had ever been very faithful to him: This Man Nicholas perfwaded to put him in a Sack, and throwing him on his shoulders, as if he were carrying forme Forrage for his Maller, convey him to forme place of fatery. The Camp lay full round about Tenna; but overjoyed with their Victory the day before, were in great diforder, and very negligent of their Guards: To that it was eatie for the German to fecure his Mafter; for having laid him on his thoulders, and being clad like a Porter, he passed without any stop through the whole Camp, and brought him lafely to his own Men. Had this Victory been as diffigently profecuted, as it was fortunately won, it might have proved of greater advantage to Brefera, and more happy to the Venetrant: But the true use not being made of it, the joy was foon blown over, and Brefeia remained in the fame diffress as before: For Niebolin being returned to his Camp, began to contrive with himself, how by some successful Exploit he might wipe off the stain of his late defeat, and deprive the

Piccinino's frange eleape.

the Venetions of all means to releive Breftia. He knew very well the scituation of the Circadel of Verena, and by some Prisoners by him taken in that War, had understood both how flenderly it was Guarded, and in what manner it might eafily be furprized. Wherefore he imagined that Fortune prefented him with an opportunity to regain his Honour, and convert the Enemies foy for their late Victory, into Grief for a more confiderable Lofs. The City of Verona is feated in Lombardy, at the foot of those The sein Mountains that divide Italy and Germany, ation of forhat the City partakes formewhat both of Verma. the Plain and Mountain; the River Adice foringing out of the Vale of Trent, at its entrance into Italy, diftends not it felt immediately through the Plain, but turning to the left hand along the fide of the Mountain, finds out this City, and paffes through the middle of it; not that it divides both parts equally, for it leaves a much greater proportion on the fide of the Plain, than of the Mountains: On the part towards the Mountain are two Caftles, one called St. Peters, and the other St. Felice, which are stronger by Nature than by Art, and being feated very high Command the whole City. On the Plain on this fide Adice, and upon the Walls of the Town are two other Fortreffes, distant the one from the other about a thousand paces, one of which is called the Old, and the other the New Cittadel; from one of these to the other, within 5 D 4

the City, is a Wall built which looks like a ftring to the Bow made by the ordinary Walls

of the City, and all the space between one and the other is filled with Inhabitants and called Burgo de St. Zeno. These Cittadels, and this Burgh Nicholas deligned to surprize, which he thought might eafily be done, as well because of the usual negligence of the Guards, as beleiving the late Victory had made them more careless, well knowing that no enterprize in War succeeds better than that, which the Enemy is confident you cannot compass, or dare not attempt. Having therefore chosen out a strong Party, he (with the Marquis of Mantona) ; goes by Night to Verona, and without being difcovered, Scales and takes the new Cittadel, and from thence with his Infantry entring the Town, breaks open the Gates of St.

Antonio, to give admission to his Horse Those who for the Venetians had the Guard of the Old Cittadel, hearing first a noise, when the Guards of the New Cittadel were flain, and after, when the Gate was broke open, knowing they were Enemies, rung out the Bell, and sounded an Alarum; which the Citizens hearing, were all in amazement and confusion; and those who had most Courage took Arms, and ran to the Rectors or Governours Palace. Nicholus's Party had in the mean time fackt the Borough of St. Zeno, and proceeding forward; the Citizens finding the Dukes Forces were got into the City, and perceiving no

farptizes Verena,

way

way how to defend themselves, advised the Venetian Governours to retreat into the Fortreffes, and fave both their Perfors and the City; declaring, It was much better for them to fave their own Lives, and preserve the Riches of the City to a more fortunate Conjuncture, than by oppoling the present fury, die themselves, and impoverish the Town for ever. Whereupon the Rectors or Governours, and all Venetit ans what loever, took the Castle of St. Felice for their Refuge; after which the Chief Citizens went to find out Niebelas. and the Marquis of Mantona; befeeching them, that they would rather with Honour enjoy that City rich and flourishing, than to their own Infamy fuffer it to be made poor and miferable; especially, since from their former Masters they had not deserved thanks, nor from them hate for defending themselves. They were both by Nicholan and the Marguis comforted, and as much as possibly they could (in that heat of Military License) the City faved from spoil. And, because they were affured that the Earl would endeavour the recovery of the City, they firove with all imaginable Art and industry to get the Brong places into their hands, and those they could not they began to divide from the Town with Works and Trenches, that the Enemy might have no entrance from thence. Count Francis was at Tenna when the first News of this Surprize was brought him, and he looke upon

10

upon it at first as an idle Story; but when by more certain intelligence he understood it to be real Truth, he determined with diligence and expedition to repair fo great Neglect; and though most of his principal Officers advised him, that leaving both Verone and Brefeis to themselves, he should make an Attempt upon Vicenza; that he might not by staying here be befieged by his Enemies; yet he would not confent, but resolved to make tryal of his Fortune in the recovery of that City, and turning in the midft of these doubts and fuspentions to the Venetian Proveditors, and to Bernardetto de Medici, who was Commiffary for the Florentines, he promised them certainly to regain the City if but one Castle held out. Putting therefore his Army in order, with unexprellible Celerity he marches towards Verona; upon advice of which Nicholas beleived, that (as his Officers had before advised) he was defigned for Vicenza, but feeing him turn his Front towards the Town, and march directly up to the Caftle of St. Felice, he began to give orders for Defence, but all too late; for the Trenches and Works were not yet finished, and the Souldiers out of greediness of the Spoil, were all divided and in diforder: nor could they be drawn together foon enough to make Head against the Earls Forces before they had reached the Castle; by which they descended into the City, and most happily, to the great thame

Harl Frande recovers Varthame and diffrace of Niebolas, and his whole Party repossessed it. Nicholas, togeand Into the Cittadel, and afterwards into the Plaint of Mantona; where rallying the remains of their shattered Forces, they went and again joyned themselves with the Camp at Brefcia. Thus was Verona in the frace of four dates both taken and loft by the Ducal Army. After this Victory Winter being fornewhat advanced, and the Seafor very Cold, the Earl having with much danger and difficulty supplyed Brofeis with Previlions, took up his Quarters at Verona. and gave Order that fome Galleys thould be built at Torboli, to the end, that by the tirit of the Spring he might be ffrong enough both by Land and Water to releive Brefera The Duke perceiving the War here at a fland, and his hopes of becoming Maker of Brefeia and Verana utterly cut off, and all this occationed by the Florentine Mony and Councils, whom, fince neither the Injuries received from the Venetians could provoke, nor the large Promiles he had made them perswade, to alienate their Amity from that Republick, he resolved (that they might nearer home reap the fruit of those feeds they had fown) to invade Tojcany; to which he was both by Nicholas, and the Banished Florentines, encouraged; the hist moved to it out of a delire to feize the Elites of Braccio, and drive the Earl out of La Marca; the other out of hopes to be

nt

ij

is

ė.

e-

oo re of

ed

WB

nft

od

reat

ame

The Doke deligns to provide 58

restored to their Country; and each had urged the Duke by the most prolling Arguments they could invent, to comply with their Defires. Nicholas told him, that he might both fend him into Tolcony, and still maintain the Seige at Brefeia: for being Lord of the Lake, and his Camp towards the Land well fortified and furnished with all flores of War, having likewife other Captains and Souldiers to oppose the Earl; should he attempt any other Design, which would be almost a madness to do, till he had releived Brescia, and the Releif of it was in a manner impossible: So that he might both wage War in Tofcany, and fill continue it in Lombardy. Belides, the Florentines would be confirmined, as foon as he was entred their Territories, either to call home the Earl or be loft, and which foever of these things happened gave him a certain Victory. The Banished Florentines alleadeed; That as foon as Nicholas should with his Army draw nigh to Florence, it was impossible but the People, quite tired with heavy Taxes, and the more burthenlome Infolence of their Great men, would take up Arms against their Magistrates, and, That the approaches were easie to Florence, and the way open by Cafentino, by means of the Friendship between that Earl and Rinaldo de Albizi: Infornach that the Duke being before inclined to it, was by their perswasions fully confirmed. Mean while the Venetians, though it were a very bitter Winter.

The Duke defigns to invade Tofcany,

Winter left not off foliciting the Earl to relieve Brescia with his whole Army; in which the Earl denyed to comply with them, as a thing not to be done till Spring, and in that time they might get a Fleet in readiness, and fuccour them both by Water and Land. But at this the Venetians were diffrufted, and flackned their Provisions, fo that their Army began to wast away. which things being certainly known to the Florentines, extreamly difmayed them, feeing the War brought to their own doors, and little good done in Lombardy : nor were great for they less perplexed with the Jealouties they of the had conceived of the Forces of the Church not that the Pope was then their Enemy, but that the Patriarch, who had more Command in that Army than the Pope himfelf, bore them a deadly Hatred. This was John Vetteleschi Cornettano, first Apostolick Notary, then Bishop of Ricanati, afterwards made Patriarch of Alexandria, and at laft Cardinal, with the Title of Cardinal of Florence. This Man was both Couragious and Crafty, and knew fo well how to play his game, that he was extreamly beloved by the Pope, and by him made General of all the Churches Forces, and Commanded in Chief in all the Popes Wars in Tofcany, Romania the Kingdom, and at Rome: whereby he got fuch power in the Army, and over the Pope, that the last was afraid to Command him, and the first would Obey none but him. This Cardinal being with his **Forces**

la constant

Forces in Rome, at the time that the Rumour was spread abroad, that Nichels de-figned to invade Tology, redoubled the Florentines Fears; the Cardinal having ever since Rinaldo's banishment been a profest Enemy of their State, because the agreement made in Florence by his intermittion was not observed, but rather managed to Rinaldo's prejudice, being the occasion of his laying down Arms, and giving his Enemies the power of expelling him. So that the Heads of the State were fearful. the time was now come of repairing Rinaldo's damages, if he joyned with Nichtlas in the Invalion of Tolcany. And they were the more doubtful of it, because they imagined Nicholar's present departure out of Lombardy very unfeafonable, leaving a Conquest almost perfected, for a very uncertain and doubtful one, which they could not believe, without some hidden intelligence. or secret intrigue, he would ever do. Of these their Suspitions they advertised the Pope, who was already sensible of his Errour in giving too much Authority to ethers. But whilft the Florentines were in this suspence. Fortune shewed them the way how they might secure themselves against the Cardinal. This Republick kept in all places very diligent Spies to fearch all Letters carried too and fro, that they might the better discover any Contrivance against their State. It happened that at Monte Pulciano some Letters were taken, which the Patri-

P

Ru-

Re-

pro-

ree-Tion

d to

n of

E-

80

uful.

Ri-

che-

hey

they

t of

on-

tain

DOC

nct,

Qf

the

Er-

00-

e in

way .

ioit

n all

Let-

ight

ainlt

Pul-

the

tri-

Patriarch, without the Popes confent, had written to Nicholm Piccinino; and althoug they were written in unufual Characters and the matter fo knotty and implicate. that no certain fense could be made of them. yet that obscurity, joyned with the practices of the Enemy, fo affrighted the Pope, that he determined to provide for his own fafety, and committed the Charge of the Affair to Antonio Rido of Padona, then Governour of the Cafile of Rome. He laving his Commission, prepared to put it in Execution as foon as opportunity prefented. The Patriarch had defigned to go into Tofcany, and being the next day to depart Rome, he fent to the Governour, that on the Morning early he thould meet him on the Castle-Bridge, for he had formene to discourse with him. Autonio thought now his opportunity was offered, and having given instructions to his Guards, at the time waits for the Patriarch on the Bridge, which being very near the Caftle, for the more fecurity of it had a Drawbridge in the middle, which, as foon as the Patriarch was past, stopping there to difcourse with him, he made a ligh to his Men to pull up the Bridge; fo that the Patriarch in an inflant, from General of an Army was become Prisoner to the Gover- The Pafour of a Fortress. The People that fol- imprisonlowed him began at first to make a Turnult; ed. but understanding it was the Popes pleafure, they were pacified. And the Governour

com-

The Pa

comforting the Patriarch with kind and Courtoous speeches, giving him hopes all would be well a He answered . That Great men were never taken to be let loofe again; for those who deserved not to be imprisoned. did not deferve to be fet at liberty; and fo. foon after he died in Prifon. After whose death the Pope appointed Lodovick, Patriarch of Aquileia, General of the Forces; and having hitherto refused to concern himself in the Wars between the League and the Duke. he was now content to become a Party and promised to be in a readiness, for the defence of Tofcany, with 4000 Horse, and 2000 Foot. Thus were the Florentines rid of this fear; yet still the fear of Nichola remained, by reason of the consusion of the Affairs of Lombardy, and differences of Opinion between the Venetians and the Earl. Wherefore to beget a right understanding they sent Neri di Gino Capponi, and Giulian & Avanzati to Venice, giving them Commission to conclude how the War should be managed the year enfuing; and so Neri they gave farther Order, that having understood the minds of the Venetians, he should go to the Earl to know his, and to perswade him to fuch things as might be advantagious to the League, and necessary for their fafety. These Ambaffadours were scarce got to Ferrara, but they had intelligence that Nieholas Piecinino with 6000 Horse was paffed the Pe, which made them haften all they could, and being come to Venice, they

y thind that whole Senate resolute, the als for that the City was not able to the ve hald our till Spring, or till a Navy were built; but if they found they had no other relyance, would yeild, which would make the Duke absolutely Victorious, and all their Territories on the main Land would boutterly loft Whereupon New goes to Verous to hear what the Earl could alleadge against it; who demonstrated by folid Real The fasts fors. That the marching his Army in that against is. Seafon towards Brefera would be to no purpole for the present, and a future impeachment of the deligns, for both in regard to the Time and Scienation, they could do his Army of the only diforder and tire Army 5 fo that when Spring came that was he for Action, he must be forced to seturn to Verona for a supply of things necellary for the Service, which would be rainly confirmed in Winter, and to all the time proper for War would be fpent in gog and coming. There were with the Earl to Confult of these things at Verona, Messer Orfatto Justiniani, and Messer John Pifant with them; after many Disputes, it was concluded. That the Venerians for the fueceding year should give the Earl 80000 Ducets, and to their other Souldiers forty Ducats each y and that they flould folleite. that they might with the whole Army take the field, and fall upon the Dukes Terories that in fear of his own Effacer S E he

d H

Ŧ d. 0.

th

of

3in

Ġ.

nd

e-

nd id

la

he

0.

ırl.

AN

mbe

ney

bod

20

ade

nta-

heir

got that

was

ften sice.

they

The Male refti defert the Venetiaw, and ioga with

or April :

uses. The Konssians (she fum g to great) provided all this 500 900 15 en ce best in the mean time Nichola Pacini regarded Remenia, where he had to surpushe with the Sons of Pandelfe Mal tella that deferring the Vanetions th owned with the Duke This gevoluti who were in hopes, by that may, to m fome retiftance against Niebaler; but feel the Malargti rebelled, they were difmay principally because they seared least the Captain Pierogiampagola Orfine (hould conted and sifled, and they thereby left armed Nor did this News less deune Earl, who was affaid, by Nicholar's In from of Tofcary, he should lake La Men and definous to fave his own Estates comes to Venice, and being introduced in the Senate he declared . How that an Es dition into Tokany would be advantage to the whole Langue ; for the War mas as profested where the General and Arm the Engry lay, and not where his Tomar Cattles figod a fur by defeating the de the War is brought to an iffue, but taking Townes, and leaving the Army inti the Mar glacunimes breaks out the fier Affirming & That La Marca and Tole mera both left, if Nicholas were non bris opposite and they once instructionnies ban

Sforfa's Speech to the Senare Mt Venice.

And the case Sulpain

vote Lander Total which the Pri plyed: Thus is made apparent what if he can with his strong name are of Launturing, and it was expected by the can be such that the reposition Bo, of their Estates who made proceeds in an oranged when he was defended by the such in thought wife who attemper to define the last was a stronger to define the this was account to top a made the information to top a stronger with the Boston made, when There he's certain to lofe a said she infrance in laft to the Effects only a chem Effects and history was a worken sheet Dentision that proc main-pet, 'covered fate be diferented of white and personne the Versetian Republican was to the ingers of Robustia ded Tofcenty and above for also moving a quise different opinion to be, for shop believed, that talko into empower in Louthandy manded discourse talignature, and to Canquel new year eight, the Duket Effects g by Nicholae's departure left fo weath has about may being all negative before he follow on rocal Nightalia, or provide other Remo-That mboover examined the litters of we would find, that the Duker fale end in the Nicholas into Tolcary, was so dear be Earl from Lottiliardy; and remine the last of the War from his administrate effections. Sitting a substitution of the Earl fathings time (and of special party of the group generam merfity) he would have the glassic field fine bis defigues accomplished; and his inter-

The Senates Ip ply, tion freedered gitting the circulated then in Located the left provides they could be small different by respective had asserby by Lombard).

nothing we Tofcany. ving faid, and replyed according to his Opt nion, they concluded a truttend patiently fome daies of discover what unight be the effects of the Malaight's Agreement with Nicholar, and if Proving ampagate might yet do the Phrominer any Service; and whether the tope would be fielfall to the League as he had promited. Some few daies after this Conclution, intelligence was brought; that the Malurifi had made the Agreement more for fear than any evil intentions that Pierce ampaged was marched towards Tofeng with his Forces, and that the Pope teltified more alacrity to affift the League than at first, which Advice fetled the Earls mind and he was content to flav in Lembardy, and that Nevi Capponi thould return to Florence with 1000 of his Horfe and 500 others: And if things fell out to that there was a necessity of the Earls prefence, he should but write, and he leaving all things elfe would go. So Neri with his Forces came to Florence in April , and the fame day arrived there likewife Giampagole Mean while Nicholas Piccinino having letter Affairs in Romagna, delighed to make a defeent into Tafteney, and intending to pat by the Alpshof St. Beinger, and the Valley of Mon-- Main

Nichelar Pittings Enters and Epotle the Florented Territor

of their Citizens with Footleveld inhalte to guid those Passes of their Citizens with Footleveld inhalte to guid those Passes of the Assessment, when we Reveldence Instantian Ro, at action was configured the guard of the Castle of Marcell, and that puls of the different Nides of Processing perceiving the obtained force the pass of Sc., Bluess, because of life. Maintipo the Guardish, thought he might willy gain that of Marcell, heraust of the Covardite of the Man appointed to desind the Marcell in a Castle leating to be so of the Assessment of the in on that part looking towards flavouring to the Nule, of La-many though it be without a Wall, wet the River, the Mountain and the Inhabitants mke it firing! for the Men are Warlike and faithful, and the River has fo worm into the Land, and made fuch deep Caves and holes, that by the way of the Vale it is impelible to approacheit if a little Bridge be defended a sand on the Mountain fide it is in fleep and craggy, that it renders it very from, and catily defentible: Yet the Cowstdize of Meffer Bartislamer, made thole then Cowhearted too, and the Caffle feem weak and defencelefs a for no fooner heard he a Rumour of the Enemics approach,

E 3

はは

de

Hicholas Precining Enters and Spoils the Florentine Territo-Figs.

the sales losers Culter, and at ? intere fits down with his Army from with his Army from with his Army from whence he offered as the Mountains of Picfol and grow whole, that he pulled the first and grow whole, that he pulled the first and grow whole, feeding and delicitying the Country with three Militiaal Bingrass ... Wit were not di Florencias diffunced, but first of all applie Information distanced, but further all apparatus the Government in twice in the best of the Government in thick their had little best of the Committee of the C definous of Noveleys they hald likewife derflood with what force New, by the in like mahner were in expectation of Popes Trecord, which haper till North tem Reported in heart; who tinding the City in these difference referred to de forth the Army, and for far mee Nibbil shap he should not dure to freely to said the Contary, and drawing a body of Fo out of the People, with those the ha he marchesons and remker Remistrohich Enemy had garrifoned; where areamping

h

40.35 10 5

the Content in hopes that the Entroy would be forced to remove further from the Mallace Alebert Coing that at what time to Force in the City on Turnals nor Commotion topped y and and princing how quanty and handy they lived within; chought in it the to lote more time. to lote more time, but rechest of tonicoler Accompanies for him he might need to the florest last for the florest last for the florest last females them to them to the florest last females them to the florest last Whate them to come to a Battle s in which if he had the better, he doubted metals all things offe would fucceed profusibility and well, will there was in Webshir's himp Francis Each of Poppi, with when the thinky lay in March. the Enemy by in Magallopevolted from the Ministrate, with winder he was before in League. And though they having Tonic carpates his indulicy had intrented his Pay grand made him Gothe powerful is the love of Factions in n, that no advantage nor fear could make him forget the affection he bore buffer Rise nath; and those who had formerly govern-ed the State; wherefore no fooner heard to of Wiebelm's approach ; but he joyned with him, and with all carriefiness folicited him towithdraw from the City and march into Cafencias , feeting touth the firength of the place, and how he might with eafe from thence Arcighiten his Enemies. Nichola follows his Advice, and being come into 5 E 4

Cafen-

The Siege of St. Niciolas Ca-

to the Galle of St. I the is feated at the foot of the Hills which divide Cofeheine free Vale of Armo, which flanding high, and a wing within a firong Garrison, and a flow retiliance a netwithlanding blisbels will Engineer abrowing Stones, and other fue Artillery continually hartered it. This fits had continued for above reventy idain during which, the Florentines endeand to draw together their Forces, and had ready affembled, dinder feveral Captain good Horte Commanded by Pierogian galans Generaly and Neri Copposi and niride de Medicias Commifferies. Toth came four Mellengers from the Calle St Abidula to befeach them to relieve th the Commissifaries having well examined feituation of the place, found there was Meintains which aftend from the Nate by the Enemies Forces before theirs co reach them, they having the thorter want thefe having to means to conceal the coming it whereupon the Committee prairing their tidelity, gave them Ord when they could no longer hold out; to fit render. So Nichelantook the Caffle in a and thirty daies and the lofing for mi time for lo finall a purchase was in a po meative, the occation of the less of exhible butiness of for had he continued wi

Nicolar's defign to flipping

the Army near Florines, he had produced the City to great designation of the with more Causion have floring them from the People, with more difficult have tailed being or indeed made any other provision whilst the Enemy was on the bades of them, than when he was further offs and perhips many might have beginnelinable to have fectived themselves from the bades of the bades of themselves from the bades of themselves from the bades of themselves from the bades of themselves from the bades of themselves from the bades of the bades of themselves from the bades of themselves from the bades of the bades of themselves from the bades of the bades of themselves from the bades of the bades of the bades of themselves from the bades of t Nichelas by Peace, fince they were not able to do it by War. But the delire Count Popp had to reverge himself of forme Gover his knowles, made him give this. Counfel and for his fatisfaction only dischola followed it is which proved the riline both of the one and the other: And Itis very sare hat private Pathon does not prove the infring his Michory, takes Raffina and Chief. In thefe pairts Gount Populperfinaded him to flayer demonstrating, hose he might, by differring his Forces in Chiefe, Gaprife and Le Riche; become Lord of the Mountain and at pleafure make his deferate into Go and Teveripedetending every anotion of the Esemy tailbut Nicholas confidering she roughnets and craeginess at the place, told him. That him therea could not can finner, of for weite Thence to Borge St. Sepelabra where he found a kind reception. Whillishe was there with made arial springing the freindfhip robithe Citizens out of affects as but) Property

Booker

Nichelar's delign to furprise Certma

bitnes to the Flo rent with farty Florie to Periodic wi ng sheiri Citheni he was histori ved , sher irribus klaich thirt he of him as und he treated many things to the Legate , daily with the Phragidur, dist bloo Duces telestanted and his Arm Next he drove a dalign libur to get Corton from the Fibrentiate to litte the Plot being dified served before Extentions of it) all cu to stocking air A mong the Choif Citizens of that City was Bareboloum Benfa is ha young by Order of the Sovernouri to take Ch of the Guard Attone of the Gales, swist a Contravenup 30 his Friend) defined not to grantel he had a mind to be failed where that would acude introduction and meaning mid-depth of the Advice pland three made flood, all the Grand office of the Plan, which he revaled to the Obs resistant of the state of the s the Confinential, doubles the Chardshat the Cotosy and Chales expeding according to the Appointment made, that Wirkster then identify evito comes by Nighter the aligned hours to the finding he was different verted recreases to this Quarters of While thele things were again ing in Agirmy, or the Diller familie advantage. Hand only who not as quice red his great damage and long for as toon as the Senion permitted. Had they Francie

Printing having po himself Master tot the White all avwere done other thing follow: Wherefore with the Plan he makes an affinio upon the Dak nones them, and takes all the Caffle es gazzilentil by Rhičiy s whosened tal Foncts, which by Land School in bearing the Newboof thefe Lottes & i, and thus after three years Sign Broj this relayed. In purfus of this victory East follows this Electrics, who was to good not be the series a Castle on the River by Addants then and mister then are to Green a grid where the Doll to the series of the party of the Doll to the series of the party of the Doll to the series of the party of the But the Early the ighering him irrespident mine and mostly thanful to the piece or all of his Estates, he began to be fen timed viscol needs in femology. Alcoholombacal Tellings, and the correct visit consumble ventrals 10 about 1 femology from known in which in a short in the limit of the control of the limit of the control of the limit of the control of the limit of the thousing the state of the refuse defining him that leaving Tofesty he would national form interval, the Ploreurines having affemble all their Forces and joyned with the Poses made Head at Angelow, a Caffe America the feet of those Mountains that divide on Valent Tours and the Vale of China, ha four

Barl Francisco che Siega

Streets President recalled by she

b

14

Miles, a level ground in for Horse Serfindbed apt for all Actions of War his because the Pleteniniet had intelligence the Barls Wifteries; and of the revocate of this below in the work and dame before they drow their Swords. senfore attender to their Commillament of Niebel around notified many dates in Medical This Gorantifion coming to Niebel around notified the needlets of his departure; that he might leave in descentioned be determined they should tight believing be might find them unprowilled and out of order; as not deligning a Bettlesdrtos which he, was encouraged by fer Bindle, Count Poppi, and other Banithed Floreintuer by beheld their buil manifest ruine if Nicholagiswent chences but by engaging dim total Battle they were in hope either to gain the day, or lole them che Arrivadranced bestween the Cities of balkan Cafalland alto Berough and being come to and notice below their Enemies having 2000 Men byho confiding in the Valori and Promits of the General, and withall greedy of Spoil followed him. Thence in Battalia Nicheles marches directly towards Aughers), and was come within less than foied a great Duft, and conceiving it must be the Enemy gives the Alarum. The Tumult

Ē

Book V. of Plorence of

ult was great in the Florentine Com for they generally caramping withink a Discipline, to their adiforders Neglige was now added; for they not inily as his their Enemy at a great distance from the than fight; fo that every one was differ and wandring from their Tents cwhittee her their fancy or the coolings of the shade led them; yet fach was the diligend of the Commiffaries and General, that be fore their Enemies got up to them they were Armed and on Horfeback, ready to redeive the Charge: And as Michelette was the first that discovered the Enemy to he was the first that made Head against them 4 advancis with his Troops to make good the Bride of the River, which croffes the way not very far from Anghieri. And Pieregiampi gole having hefore the Enemies coming caused the Ditches to be filled and levelled which were on each fide the Road between the Bridge and Anghiars, Michelette placin himself against the Bridge, Simoneino the Popes Colonel, with the Legar, drew upon the Right hand of him, and Richogianopagola and the Florentine Commissaries on the Left and the Infantry was disposed on both hand on the Banks of the Rivers So that the End my had no open every to come and affail them but directly over the Bridge nor the Florentines any where elfe to right but of the Bridge, fave only they had given Or-ders to the Foot, that if the Enemies infantry went out of the way to flank the Men

Angliani

the state of the s

Ú.

ä

Ē

Book !

, they hould Chan shall Craficherer, that they might mitgal our Holle in the flank us they fiel she Bridge. The tieft char Charges of far Minhalotte heavely accessed, and by the reputed the diterral last Troops, they Charged him to furiou that they gained the Bridge, and drove h foot of the Hill that goes up bidie ; but they were seale repulled and driven back over the Bridge by the that Charged them in the faille. The Figh times Nichelas, and Cometimes the Flores rime were Matters of the Bridge An though upon the Bridge they had no sil-vantage against one another, yet, both or this und that fale the Bridge Nisboles fought at great diffuteuritage; for whom any Party of Michigan palled the Bridge, they found grese Bodles of cheir Enemies, which be e levelling of the Diothes had room draw up wand shole which were wes werp Militiaconded by fight referves : bu when the Rivershines trappened to pull. Michael acute not communicatly feed in free miles beinge of the theightness and on wicked the every included with Duch Dreiches fo that though many tim Mishela's Manufad paffed the Bridge , ve hoche lapply of freth Enemies they even shining driven back. I Bor when the Floridate won the Bridge went out of the way to flank the Men

artle or

一年の 元代 中 ア 中 中 中 中 中

lag

-00

arries and sarrownship the figure law in facilities places; forthat the Ve ing back upon the Stear) and difference another, all the Avery was force and most without knowing a Realist to an towards the Darges . There fell the P mitina Seuddiene to the plunder of whit Men, Mony, and Horfes amounted to a Value a for with Nicholas there faved the o net above 2000 Hosse 21 Those In mis of the Berge St. Sepolobra that ca for Prox, were made a proy of peing all mun and put in Ranforn, their Color Cassiages were all takent yet this Vidore was smuch more advantagious to To say than it was prejudicial to the Dukes for had the Florentines lost the Day Tofk Arms and Horfes which good flore of Mothe would four reurnit. Neither could ever

the danger than in these sines; for in so total a Rout, and so long a sight, which lated four hours, there died but one Man, and he not because waliant stroats, but falling from his Honse was tood to death; with some state, and when they wilded there was no reason to kill them; so that sighting they were saved by their arms; and yellding

The want of Hillshift charte de Armier of these

Middle Pinepula defeated The want of Difelpline in the Armies of thefe Times...

> Pitcisme deleated

Quarter This Battle (both for matt ppening in, and after it) is a great examthe Enemy lovercome; and Niebolas feel to Borges, the Commissaries would have flowed him and belieged that place to complean their Victory but many of the Captains and Souldiers policively refused to featre their plunder and dress the wound ded, and then perhaps go. but what is more remarkable is Sthat the next day at Noon without any leave of, or respect to the Com miffaries or General, they went to Areago, and there leaving what speal they had got all Military order, or any Warlike discipline that any finalt termant of a well-governed Army migh eafily, and defervedly have matche from them that Victory they he undefervedly gained a and tis worth ou wonder to confider how fuch an ill-trayner Army fhould have formuch Course vi them as to know how to Conquery but his much more twonderful that any Enemy should have for much Cowardize as to ! besten by fuch diforderly People whilf the Florentine Souldiers were going and coming from Arexes, Nichelas had time to depart with his People from Borgo , taking his way towards Romagnia, with whom the Flarentine Rebels likewise fled who beholding themselves deptived of all hopes of ever incurning to Flarance divided them-

themselves to several places of Body, or our of it, according as suited with every many Conveniency; of whom, Messex Kenald Albizi choic Anema for his relidence, from whence to gain himfelf a heavenly Country, lince he had Jost that here on Earth; he went to the Sepulchre of Christ, and upco his return thence, at the Marriage of one of his Daughters, fell down fuddenly and aled, in which fortune feem'd to favour him. that in the least unhappy day of all his Banishment the let him die. He was a Man worthy of Honour in all Fortunes. and would have certainly enjoyed more than he did, had Nature let him been born in any united City, for many qualities of his offended in a divided City, which in one united would have preferred him. The Commissaries, as foon as their Men were returned from Arezze, and Niebela gone, presented themselves before Borges, the Borges would have surrendred themselves to the Florentines, and they refused to accept them; however in treating the matter the Popes Legate conceived a fulpicion, that the Florentine Commissaries had dealt underhand to rob the Church of that Town: to that many hitter and injurious vyords paffed, and there had happened fome diforder between the Florentines and Esclefi but things being concluded as the Legare would have them, all was pacified. Whilli thefe Debates were about Borgo, Intelligence Was -empe.

Seged

ø

ë

b

was brought that Nichola Procining was La Marca , whereupon the Legate and Sforfa's Horse thought it convenient to go to Persona to be ready to affilt either Re or La Marca if Nicholas should turn either way; and over them was appointed Bermardo Medies, and Neri with the Florentine Forces ordered to reduce Cafentino : according to this determination Neri marched to Raffing, and took it; and going forward regained Bibiens, Prato Vecchio, and Komens, and from thence went and belieged Poppe beleaguring it at two Polts, one in the Plains of Cerromondi, and the other on the little Hill in the way to Franzoli. This Earl, Reing himfelf forfaken by God and Man, had thur himself up in Poppi, not out of any hopes of affiftance; but to ge the best terms he could: Being now begint by Need he demanded Conditions, and found them fuch as he might reasonably at such a time expect; That he should depart with his Wife and Children, and fuch Goods as he could carry with him, and leave he Lands and Estate to the Florentines. And whilst they were upon Capitulating, he came down upon the Bridge over Arno, which washes one fide of the Town, and in doleful and afflicted manner spoke thus to Neri: Had I taken right measurer of m Fortune, and your Power, I should have ap Speech to peared now as a friend to congratulate your Victory, and not as an enemy to petition you

To dosa

Poppi Be-

fieged,

Some-

C

C

fe

ai

10 di ed rd

or, he

H

nd

の場に

nd h a

his

m

n

to

710-

formenbut en allerotene ing Misseminal Maine but as the prefere Chante le tergenbyde for and joyful, teleste me greioter deat mesticitet I had Horses, Manuel, Subjectes, Estadolish Richer, and who can wonder if it and tone to part with them & beat if you paul and will commined all Tolcany all must seft force vos you ? Had not It committed this Brown no Forsune ball never been home, 21 the wor had opportunity to how your L'enerality of for if you yet restored me you will toude to re world an evernal example of sour Oleranies Let your Goodnest furmount my Crimes, wild let at leaft this only Honfe descend so thise whem your Andytours have received man Services. Nevl answered: As your bine to had soo much in shoft who were table to the little , fo your Offerever lagains the State of Florence have been fo bigb shirt confident ing the conjuncture of Affairs, 'tis needle you refign all your Estate, and quit those places as an Enemy to the Florentines, which you would not bold as their Friend; for you have given such an Example as ought not to be born with nor your fuffsted in a place where upon every Change of fortune you may damage the Commonwealth : for it is your Estates they fear, and not You, and if you could be a Prince in Germany that City would rejoyce at it, and for the love of those Ancestones you mention have an Esteem for you. To which the Earl in great Anger answered; He wisht to see the Florentines at a far greater distance. And thus all kind discourse ceasing, 5 F 2 the

the Earl feeing no other semedy, religned his Lands and all his Concerns to the Floreminer, and with all his Goods, Wife and Children, in tears departed, greiving to have loft an Estate which his Ancestors had for 400 years paft, enjoyed. As foon as the News of thele Victories was brought to the State, and by the whole People received with excessive Joy; and because Bernardo Medici found the Report false of Niebola's being gone either towards La Marca or Rome, he returned to find out Neri, and they together came to Florence; where all those Honours were in ample manner conferred on them, which according to the Orders of that City can be allowed to Victorious Citizens, and they Triumphant wife received by the Senate, the Captains, and the whole City. the management his care was a contract the second

The United and Winerick Comment in The The End of the Fifth Book " with the ment over the second to an a little of

troff of working a proper school which is given a supplied to The Alderdamen was to green wall to the sales Die fri have on Duites minutes D. M. world as es and a she lower and American sting

while the tip the didremants birth should be to Millions The Sile bear to weather to Justille

bits ordering restriction of iron at the section C. D. M. Wood after house of proper in Section 1984

of side of the month small size separation THE Year great Ains 't bit or THE

handled adapt bend of desired and

FLORENTINE HISTORY

supply when the men with they are mercane

Written by noles all a

Nicholas Machiavel.

BOOK VI.



of those that make War, to emich themselves and impoverish their Enemies; neither is Victory for any other

end fought after, nor Conqueit defired, but to make our felves Mighty, and our Advertaries Weak: Wherefore, whenever Victory impoverifies, or Conquest weakens, they either exceed or come short of those ends for which War is made. That Prince or Commonwealth is by the Victories of War enriched, who utterly roots out his Enemies,

6 A 3

and

ed lond to ad he

to in ed

or ney ole of ci-

ole

Machivel's Hiftery . Book VI.

and remains fole Lord of the Spoils and Ranfoms ; but those are by Victory impoverified, who, though they overcome cannot entirpare their Enemies, and the Spoils and Ranforms belong not to them but to their Souldiers. Such a Prince is unhappy in loss, and most unhappy in Victory; for losing he rould undergo all the Injuries the Enemy can do him, and winning endure the Offences of his Friends, which, as they are less reasonable are more insupportable; especially, seeing himself necessitated to burthen his Prople wild new Taxes and Impofitions; and furely, no Prince (that has any humanity) can rejoyce at that Victory which makes all his Subjects fad. Ancience and wellfordered Oppmonwals were wont by Victories to fift their Treatury with Gold and Silver, to distribute Gifts among the People, to release their Subjects from Tax or Tributg, and to exhibit foleren Shows and Triumphs ; but those of the Dines of are now writing of high empired than Treasuries, and then improve that the Peo-ple without securing them from the tramies ; for only plundering their Enemies, and mether keeping them Prisoners nor killing them, the Revenge was no longer deferred, than whilst the adverse Leader was returnished with Horse and Arms. Befides, the Spoils and Ranfoms being the Souldiers, the Victorious Princes wanting them to employ in new Wars were forced to extract all their Expences from the very bowels

-10

135

A

Book VL Florence SEM

0-

n-

ils to

PY

he re ey

eş

II.

0

ry

me

nt ld

he

ys fe

cs,

or

A.

GT.

0-

he

cls

howels of their Subjects, not People any other advantage, by but that the Prince became the sreedy and less respectful of burthening them; for the Souldiets had brought th War to that pals, that both the Conquerous and Conquered if they would corntrain their own People I flood in daily need a more Mony, the one to reinford them and the other to reward them for the hill without being again Horled and Arme wasded would not hight: whence it hapned, that the one emoyed little of the Victory, and the other was learne lemble of the loss. for the Conquer'd had time to recruit, and the Conquerers lost all opportunity of pur-lung the Victory: This differently and pertene way of proceedings in War made Ni-sulas Piccinino be again remounted. before his lois was well known in Italy, and make a nercer War upon the Enemy after his do test than he did before; This enabled him after the discontinuity of Bieless to surprize Prople at Verona, with a great Army to invade Tofcany; by this means, after the rout of Anghieri, before he reached Romasnin, he grew stronger in the Field than he was at first, and encouraged the Duke of Milan once again to hope he might, defend Lombardy, which, by reason of his absence, feemed to him almost lost for whilst Nicho-Lu made those stirs in Tascany, the Duke

The Duke of Miles moves for Teace. The Duke.

Peace.

was reduced to fuch Terms, that he was very doubtful of his own Effaces, and feared his Ruine would be compleated before Nicholas Piccinino (whom he had recalled) could come to fuccour him: wherefore to put a flop to the Earls fury, and with policy to temporize where he could not with Porce oppole, he had recourfe to those remedies which in the like condition had off availed him, and to that end fends Nicholas PEfte, Prince of Farrara, to Refebiera where the Earl then was, who on his behalf perfwades him to Peace, demonstrating, That that War could be no wales advantagious to the Earl; for if the Duke were fo weakned that he could no longer maintain his Reputation, the Earl would be the first would suffer, for the Venezians and Florentimes having no further use, would have no farther effeem of him; and for a full affirrance that the Duke indeed detired Peace. he offered a conclusion of the Marriage promiting to fend his Daughter to Ferrara, where, as foon as the Peace was concluded, he would joyn their hands. The Earl made answer, That if the Duke did faithfully defire Peace he might eafily find it, as that which both the Venetians and Florentines with'd for; true it was he could hardly beleive it, knowing well that he never defined Peace but out of a pure Necessity, and as foon as that was past his inclinations to War revived; nor could he give any Credit about the promise of the Marriage, having

having been to often mocke with it; but when the Peace was Concluded, he would all in that Affair according to the Advice of his Friends. The Venetians (who ordiarily are suspicious of their Souldier sithout cause') with reason entertained a new jea-supplicion of these practices, which the Earl lous of last endeavouring to cancel, carried on the War with great briskness; yet his Course through Jealoufie was grown to like-warm that little or nothing was done that Sum mer: So that Nieholas Piccinino being refurned into Lombardy, and cold Weather oming on, all the Armies were drawn into heir Winter quarters; the Earl into Vocation the Duke hito Cremona; the Plorentine Forces into Tofeaky, and the Poper into Roaguis; which last, after the Victory at recover them out of the hands of France Piccinino, who was Governour there for his Father, in which though they fisceeded not, for France bravely defended them; yet did their coming for terrine thole of Ravenna, that fearful they thould be again reduced under the Empire of the Church by Agreement with Oftafio of Polanta their Lord, they fubmitted themfolies winto the power of the Penerians, who in requital logration the of fo fair a Prefent, that Oftafie might not vous by force retake that, which for want of Wit he had given them, they lent him together with his Son to die in Candia. The

りのる由っ州南北上衛地に連歩がある。

3000

át

ès

ě.

d

į.

Earl Store

siden aber

PROGRAME V

The Paparin, their Enterprises, not we francing the Victory at Anglisms, wanting Mony, Gold the Calife of Roge St. Sepoleho to the Clorentials, for a 7000 Ducats. Affairs thanking thus, and surprious, by an form of the Scatter of the Vary Peace was more talks of especially by the Duke, wh bearined by the Winter and Piccining return, broke off all manner of Treat with the hart, using all pollible diligen to recruit Piecinine, and making all other provisions toxa future War, which the Fail having intelligence of went to Venice to Advise with that Senate how to manage the War for the year enlying Wichelas the other fide finding hirafelf in order, and the Enemy disordered , Standynot for the coming of the Spring , but in the coldelled Winter paffes the Adden and entring into the Territories of Brasian becomes pro fently Mafter of all that Country a except Adula and Ancil, where he like wife furner zes and darries away 2000 of Sforza Horfes who expected not the Alarum; but what more displeased the Barl and fright ned the Venetians was that Cierpellone por of the Earls principal Officers revolute from him; the Earl appartais Advice de parts fuddenly from Kenisa, and being are rived at Brefeia ; found that Nichola Pices nino after he hat dong this damage was returned to his Quarters whereupon the Earl feeing the War extinct, thought it not convemak VL M Florence

evenient to reinflame it er, fince both the Sealon rive him a convenience of recovering and make ule of its, that be might the better make the of step spar be mught the spring be able to revenge their A he therefore made the Penerican recal thouse forces that ferved under the Florences in Ideany, and in the room of Gestoms have who was dead, defined Micheletty Assemble might command them. The house now field, and belesqued Cignate of Sall welve Miles from Brelein, to the releif of which comes the Earl, and both on one free deh'other the War was by these two Generals managed according to their worst-ed Custome; and the Earl, being doubted of Bergamo, went, and laid Siege to Manth senge, a Cattle to leated, that (taking it) he might at any time with safe: relieve Herent , which City was forely oppres d by Nicholas, who having made fuch province that be could not say way, but that of printago, be disturbed by the finemy he had so strongly fortified that Calle, that it was necessary for the Earl to come with all his Forces to attack it a whereupon Ni chilas, with his whole Army, gained such a Poll that he stopt all Provisions from the Earl, and with Trenches and Bulwarks to fortified himself, that the Earl without apparent danger, could not affault him, reducing him to fuch fireights that the Befieger was in greater danger than those Befieged

Tise Ambitions de fires of Michelas

nor could be without apparent loss raise in so there seemed to be a period Victory prepared for the Duke', and certain ruine for the Vinetister and the Earl: but Fortune, who never wants waies to affish her friends and discountenance her enemies, raised in the breast of Niebolas Piccinino (fwell'd with

the hopes of this Victory) fuch Ambition and Infolence, that without any respect other to the Duke or himself, he sent to the him, Flow that having I long time made war under his Entigus, and never gained to much Earth for himself as would serve to bury him, he would now know what Reward he should have for all his Labour, since it was now in his power to make him Lord of Lamburdy, and put all his Enemis

into his hards: and concerving that a certain Victory ought to have a certain Reward he defired him to grant him the City of Piacenza, that fo tired with tedious War he might at length repose himself. Nor was he ashamed, in the Conclusion, to threate the Duke to give over the Enterprize if he granted not his Request. This haughty and inscensed him in that manner, that he resolved rather to lose all than give his consent; and him that so many dangers and to many threats of his Enemies could not bend, the insolence and pride of his Friends now made bow! Wherefore he resolved upon an

hicious de fires of Michelas Piccinina.

Agree-

greement with the Earl, to whom he fo dutiony Guide Buone of Tortons to make fers of his Daughter, with Conditions of Peace, which were greedily accepted by the Earl and all the Colleagues and having privately fealed Covenants, the Duke of fent to command Nichelas to make Truce priva with the Earl for a year, alleadging he was the D to tired with the valt Charge that he would and Bark not refuse a certain Peace for an uncertain Victory. Nieholas was firangly furprized at this Order a not being able to imagine what should make the Duke decline to affured a Victory; for he could not believe that the not rewarding his Friends could make him wave the destroying his Enemies: wherefore, by all means he could beft devile, he strove to oppose this Determination; infomuch that the Duke to bring him to conformity, was forced to threaten, That if he would not confent, he would give him up as a prey to his own Souldiers. or to the Enemy, Nicholas hereupon obeys. but with the same regret of mind as he that is forced to ahandon his Friends and Country, lamenting his perveric Fate, while formerly ill Fortune, and now the Duke. rob'd him of Victory over his Enemics The Truce made, the Marriage between the East Frank Lady Bianoba and the Earl was celebrated and the City of Gremons affigued for her many the Peace was fully ratified, Francis Barbadies and Louis Trons being Commissioners

10

ine

di

tion tell tell total tryte turs,

himistary of the beautiful first the beautiful

ce-

as alsoos #13/49152 @9997131

for the Brainton, and Moffer Agusto Mal ainale for the Morenament by this Peace the Venetime dame of graners of Pefebben, Afola, and Lablas , Cattles in the Marqui bardy atwer Att reigned in the Kingdom which not being to be pacified, proved the occasion of renewing it again in Lombardy King Renate was, during the Troubles in Lambardy underpoiled of all his Realm, except the City of Naples , fo that Alphan thinking he had the Victory in his own hands, determined, whilf he lay at the Siege of Naples, to take from Earl France Benevente, and other his Estates lying in the Country adjacent ; for he drought he with out much hazard might fucceed in it, the Earl being employed in the Wars of Lon bardy ; and his fuccess was indeed conformable to his withes, for with cafe he possesse himfelf of all those Lands. But Peace being concluded in Lombardy, Alphonfo was fear ful leaft the Earl because of his lost Town would joyn with Renate, and Renate, for the same Considerations, had hopes he would de fo: whereupon be fent to the Earl, incomraging him to come and affi a Friend, and revenge himself of an Ene my: On the other tide, the King requested thip between them, he would give the Earl fuch a divertion, that forced to attend o weightier matters he should be constrain to wave this. Philip complyed with the Request, 201

the Lady Examples. 0

to

五五

5 1

the resi

社会

日の日本の主義をおりる。

quent, not confidening that thereby he murbed that Peace which to much to his own difadvantage he had lavely concluded for he fent to Pope Engenius to inform him, that now was his time to regain those Lands the Earl had usurped from the Church, and weffect it he offered him Nicholas Pletining (he paying him while the War latted) who ince the Conclusion of the Peace, had taken p his Quarters in Romania. The Pope preedily entertained the motion, as well out Hate to the Earl, as defire to regain his own; and though formerly he had with the fame hopes been deceived by Nicholas, ter, now the Dukes intervention made him more mistruffful, but he presently joyned his Forces with Nicholas and affaulted La Marca. The Earl fartled at fo fudden an Marca Onfer, with all speed draws together his forces, and marches towards his Enemies. in the mean time King Alphonio takes Naer, fo that all that Kingdom except Colle A woo, was now in his power. Wherefore Resate leaving a firong Garrison in that Caftle, comes to Florence, where he was homurably received; whence, a few dates after, feeing he could no longer maintain the War, he departs, and goes for Marfilia. Mean while Alphonfo had taken Coffe Nueand the Earl in La Marea proved forme what inferiour to the Pope and Nicholas whereupon he had recourse to the Veneriaus and Florentines for affiftance of Men and Mony, affirming, That if they did not now bridle.

heidle the Pope and Kings power while he was yet in being, they would afterward in vain firuggle for their own fafety; for they would joyn with Philip, and among them divide all Italy. The Florentines and Venetions flood a while in suspence, somewhat doubtful to engage against the King and the Pope, and being at present employed in the Affairs of Bolonia; for Annibal Bentivogli had driven from that City Francis Piccinine, and to enable him to defend himfelf against the Duke who favoured Franeis, had craved Aid of the Venetians and Florentines, who had not denied him; fo that having engaged themselves in this Affair, they could not at present resolve to affift the Earl : but Annibal having defeate ed Francis Piccinino, and matters there feeming fetled, the Florentines resolved to affift the Earl, but first to be affured of the Duke, they renewed their League with him, which the Duke refused not; for he had only confented that War should be made against the Earl while Renate was in Arms but feeing him vanquished, and utterly driven from the Kingdom, he was not at all pleased that the Duke should be spoiled of his Estates. Wherefore he not only was willing that the Earl should have affiltance but wrote to King Alphonfo that he would be content to return back into his Kins dom, and delift from making farthe War; which, though Alphonfo was forme what unwilling to do, yet being obliged chè

al njarit

I

th

h

24

B

a

EN

TO

W

m

of

A

in St. III

ga

VC

tit

ple

Ba

for

be

the Duke, he thought best to comply with him, and netired with his Forces on the farther fide of Trenta, Whilft Affairs were dus in Romania, the Florentines were not quiet among themselves. There was in Flurence, among the Citizens of chief Reputation in the Government, Nortical Gino Capponi, of whose Greatness Cosmo, more than of any others, flood in fear; for to the Credit he had with the Citizens , he had joyned the favour of the Souldiers; for having been often General of the Florentine Army, his Valour and great Merit had gained their love; and belides, the remembrance of the Victories, which they acknowledged from him and his Father (the one having reduced Pifs under the Eleventine power, and the other defeated Niebolas Piccinino at Anghiari) made him respected by many, and feared by others who defired no Partners in the Government. Among many other Prime Leaders Zaldario of the Florentine Army was Baldaccio of of angli-Angbiari, a Man famous in War, and who in those Times, either for Knowledge, Strength, or Courage, had not his Superiout in lealy; and to much Reputation had he gained among the Infantry (for thiefe he ever Commanded) that they were at any time ready win whatever Enterprize he pleased to andertake, to follow him. This Baldaccio was a most intire Friend of Neri's; for he loved him for his Vertues of which be had been often witness, which made the 25.13

ではいればいる

nd Go

LF-to

ere to

ははは

ade

ons, In-

all of was

100

che

Book VI

other Citizens grow jeulous of him ! and judging the disbanding of him would be hazardous, and the retaining him yet more dangerous, they resolved to rid him out of the way in which delign Fortune proved favourable to them. Bartholomen Orlanding was Gonfaloniere of Luftice. He, as we have before related, having the Charge of the Guard of Maradi, basely fled and deserved a Pass wich Nature it self in a manner defended. This Cowardize fo difpleafed Botdeccio that he could not forbear both by Words and Letters to brand him for it at the shame of which Messer Bartholomen conceived fuch a fecret regret and foten, that led on by an infamous delire of Revenge, he thought nothing but the blood of his Accufer could cancel his fault or cover his blushes. Many other Ottizens were fenfible of Bartholomen's Malice, whereupon they inflamed him, and perswaded the facility of getting eas'd of fuch a Reproach, thereby at once revenging his private Injury and freeing the State of a Man whom the must either retain with fear or dismis with damage. Whereupon Barsholomen having taken his resolve to affassinate Baldaces concealed many armed young Men in hi Chamber, and Baldacco being come upon the Piazza where he usually every day walked, or came to treat with the Magistrates about his entertainment: the Gonfalonian fent for him, and he not having the leaf fuspicion, obeyed, whom the Gonfalonien met

n

E P

to

oorc

dino

iave

the

rted

de-

Bal

1 by

r it

teep.

Re

lood

OVC

fen-

POR

e fa-

ach.

JUFY,

the

with

vine

ices.

a bi

the

zalk:

rates

HIERE

nien

met

met; and walking with him feveral turns about the Senate Chambers, talking and discourling with him concerning his Pay, at length, when he faw his opportunity, being come near the room where the Armed men band lay hid he gave the fignal and they immediately fallying forth and finding him alone and difarmed, foon flew him, and threw him out of the Window which looks from red by the the Palace to the Coftome-House , and 9 of dismi thence carrying him into the Piazza, cutting off his Head, left him for all that day as a spectacle to the People. He left behind him only one Son (born of Annalena his Wife) who not long furviv'd him: that virtuous Lady, having lost her Husband and Son, would not again Contract her felf to any, but turning her House into a Monastery (with many Noble and virtuous Ladies who conforted themselves with her) in a holy manner lived and died : Whose memory, for the Monastery by her founded and from her named, doth hitherto live and will live for ever. This Action formes what check'd Neri's power, and lessened him both in Reputation and Friends: Nor did the prime Ministers of State think this enough, for Ten years being now fpent fince the foundation of their Governments and the Authority of the Balia expired, and many prefurning both in words and deeds to exceed the limits thought requifice; The Chiefs of the State judged it ht for maintaining their Authority to revive the Balia, whereby

1444 Florence reformed.

Talkocein

effoling.

seti vd.co Gonfalor

whereby they might afresh give Authority to their Friends, and weaken their Enemies ; and therefore in the year 1444 they, by the consent of the Councils, created a New Balia; which fetled the Offices, gave Authority to a few to evente the Senate, reviving the Chancellorship of the Reformation, displacing Philip Peruzzi, and in his room constituting one that would act according to the pleasure of the Great Men; who prolonged the Confinements of many, imprisoned Simon Veffueci ; removed from their Honours and Offices the Accopiatori, as Enemies to the State, and with them the Sons of Peter Baroncelli, all the Seragli, Bartholomen Fortini , Messer Francisco Castellani, and many others; and by this means regained their own Power and Authority, and abated the Pride both of their known and fulpected Enemies. And having thus fetled the State within, they applyed themselves to Affairs abroad. Nicholas Piecinino being, as we have before declared, deferted by the King Alphonfo, and the Earl with the releif fent him by the Florentines grown strong, he engages with Nicholas near Fermo, and gave him fo total a Rout, that Nieholas with the loss of most of his Men hardly faved himself in Montecebio where he fortified and fo bravely defended himself, that in a short time he had rallyed all his People, and was grown able, with case to defend himself from the Earl; especially Winter coming on, which con-Grained

Nicholas Piccinine discomfited.

CC

ty

おおませる

12-

Ç-

n;

m

ri,

he

li.

4

is

u-

ir

ng ed

ic-

d,

mĺ

255

las

ut,

nis

0 ;

रे प्रस्

ed

+ moleton ..

Book VI firained both those Captains to draw into their Quarters, Niebolas applyed himfelf-all Winter to reinforce his Army, in which both the Pope and King Alphanio allifted him; to that early in the Spring both Generals took the Field, and Nicholas, being the fronger, had reduced the Earl to extream necessity, and had certainly overthrown him, had not the Duke interrupted Nichola's Deligns. Philip lent to delire his immediate presence, for he had something of importance to confer with him; which Nicholas covetous to hear, abandoned a certain Victory for an incertain Pleasure; and leaving the Command of the Army to his Son Francis, posts to Milan. This the Earl having intelligence of, would not lose the opportunity of fighting in Niebolas's ablence. and engaging near Monte Lord, routed Niebolas's Forces, and took Francis prisoner. Nicholas arrived at Milan , finding himself abused by Philip, and receiving intelligence of his Sons being defeated and taken, died with Grief in the Year 1445, and the 64 Death of of his Age; leaving behind him two Sons Number Francis and Jacob, who had less Valour, and worse Fortune than their Father; fo that thele Braccian Forces were almost quite worn out , and the Sforzan Arms Still (feconded by Fortune) became more and more The Pope Seeing Nicholas's Forces defeated, and himself dead, having no fure reliance on the Aid of Arragon, fought Peace with the Earl, and by the Florenzines 6 B 3 inter-

thofe

B

th

ti

di

ri

E

h

8

ti

t

A

d

D

B

S

it

B

I

n

V

C

fi

h

2

R

ät,

E

A

intermission concluded it; by which Ofinio. Fabriano or Riconati Towns of La Marca. became the Popes, and all the rest of that Territory remained subject to the Earl. Peace thus concluded in La Marca, all Isaly had been at quiet had not the Bolonesi di in Rolonia, flurbed its repofe. There was in Bolonia two mighty Families, the Cannesobi and Bentivolii; of the last Hannibal was the Head, and of the first Battiffa. They had to beget a greater confidence in each other. made feveral intermarriages; but in Men aspiring to the same Greatness, though Alfiances may be easily contracted, yet Friendthip is not. Bolonia was in League with the Florentines and Venetians, which they had entred into by the Mediation of Hannibal Bentivogli; after his driving Franci Piccinino out of that City: Battiffa knowing how much the Duke defired the favour of this City, plotted with him to kill Hannibal, and reduce the City under his obedience. And having concluded on the manner, Battifta, with his Followers, on the 24 of June 1445, affaults Hannibal and kills him, and thereupon Proclaims the Duke throughout the Town. The Venetian and Florentine Commissaries were in the City, who upon the first Rumour retired to their Houses, but seeing afterwards how the People Arming themselves, flocked in great numbers to the Market place, to oppole the Murtherers, and revenge the death of Hannibal, they took heart, and with those di:

nid nd

he

ad,

er. len.

VI-

id-

ith icy

18-

col ng

百分十百

tic no for

as le

在15.20

Se !

thole Men they had about them! Joyned with the People, and, making Head, Charge? ell the Cappefell, whom in a very thore time they overthrew, killing forme, and driving the rest out of the City. Battiffa not having an opportunity to the, nor his finemies to kill him; hid himfelf in his House under a Vestel made to keep Corn in ; and his Enemies having made fearth for him all that day, knowing that he was not gone out of the City, fo terrified his Servants, that a Boy of his for fear flewed them where he was, whom; pulling out thence still in his Armour, they immediately flew, and then having drag'd his Body 3amga through the Streets, burnt ito Thus the dan and Dukes Victory proved Officient to make Bartiffa attempt this Enterprize, but bis Succours came not time enough to maintain it or fave his life. Though the death of Barrita, and flight of the Cambichi had! quieted thele Tumules, yet the Botonians remained in great Confution; where being none of the Family of Bentinoghistituto Go vem, Hannibal having left but one Son, called John, not above fix years of Age; is that they grew fearful least fothe Division happening among the Friends of the Bentiwegli, might give opportunity to the Cunnofebi so return, to the ruine of the City and their Party But whilft they lay under those Fears and Jealoulies, Francis, formerly Earl of Poppin being then in Bolonia, gave Advertisement to the Prime men of the 6 B 4 City

Tolonia.

in

he

Go

th

213 1800

Len

8

Wa

Yec

wh

by

and

of

Ma

mai

den

CRIL

mer

askı

take

by:

him.

City that if they were defirous to be Governed by one of the Blood of the Bentirogli, he could inform them where to find and therewithal acquainted themes How Herenles the Coulin of Hannibel happening, about twenty years fince, to be at Pappi, had there Carnal knowledge of a young Woman of that Cafile, who was afterwards delivered of a Son called Santiwhich Herculer often affirmed to belbis, nor! could he indeed well deny it for whoever look'd on Hercules and the Child, would find a very great likeness or resemblances The Citizens gave Credit to his Report and delayed not the fending Ambaffadours to Florence to find out the young Man, and to prevail with Cosmo and Neri that he might be fent to them. The reputed Father of Santi was dead, and the Youth lived under the Care and Tuition of an Uncle of his, alled Anthony Cafefe, And thony was Rich, Childless, and a Friend of Neri's; wherefore as foon as the matter was divulged. Neri was of Opinion that it was neither to be flighted, nor rathly accepted, and thought good to speak with Sansi himself, in the presence of Colmo and those fent from Bolonia; and being all met, Santi was by the Bolonefi not only hopoured, but almost adored: fo much can the love of Parties or Factions prevail o're the minds of Men. For the present nothing was copeluded, fave that Gofine taking the Young man alide, told him, None can in this case

Santi Zantivoglio fent forto Govern Bolonia, Ě

Ü.

а

ď.

Ya.

Ti-

Y

di

10

100

he

se

cofe advife ther better than thy felf for thou an se make the Cheice which thou findet the own Soul inclinable to; and if show he the Son of Hereules Bentivoglio, thou well fo shy felf to Actions marthy that Hange and Family , but if show he she Son of Age polo Cafcele, them will consent the felf to frage in Florence, and follow bis mean Trade of Dreffing Wool, These words moved the Young man, and whereas before he had in a mariner denyed to accept the proposal, he now referred himself wholly to what Golino and New should determine : fo that they agreeing with the McHengers of Beis lonis, himished him with Cleaths, Horics and Servants, and foon after with an home nourable Company he was attended to Boy lenie; where the Change and Government of Hannibal's Children, and of the City was committed to him: wherein he bebs ted himself with so much prudences, that whereas his Predeceffours had all been flain by their Energies, be both lived in Peace. and died in Honory. Philip, after the death of Niebolas Piccining, and the Peace in Marea, being defirous of a General to Co mand his Armies, held private Cornelpon. dence with Giarpellone, one of the Earls principal Captains, and came to ah Agreement with him : whereupon Ciarpeliones asked the Earls leave to go to Milan to take possession of certain Castles, which had by the Duke in the past War been given him. But the Earl having some inspicion of the

Mew War

Hew Wa

the Contrivance (that he might not ferve the Duke to his prejudice) first stop d think and foon after our him to death, giving our He had dealt fally and fraudulently with him. At this the Duke was exceeding Angry, but the Florentines and Venetians ve ry well pleafed, fearing nothing more than a friendship and Conjunction between the Dukes and Earls Forces. But the Dukes resentment stirred up the War afresh in La Marca. Gifmond Matatefti Lord of Ris mini, being Son in Law to the Earl, hoped to have Pefare affigned over to him ; but the Earl having got possession of it; gave it to Alexander his Brother; at which Gifmond was enraged, and to encrease his fury it happened, that Frederick of Montefelin his profest Enemy, had by the Earls favour and Connivance, feized on the Lordship of Urbin. These Affronts made Gifmond joyn with the Duke; and folicite the Pope and King to make a War upon the Earl; who to make Gifmond tafte the first fruits of the feed he had fown, by way of prevention falls first upon his Territories : fo that Rowie and La Marca were billed with War and Turnult; for the King, Pope, and Duke fent large Aids to Gifmond and the Venstians and the Florentines, if not with Men yet with Mony abundantly supplied the Earl Philip, mean while, thought not the War in Romania enough to afflict the Earl, but deligned to take from him Cremona and Pontremoli, but the first was by the Vent

G

25

cc

W

E

fer

ón

dp

E2

Fa

T

Du

W

the

him

fup

We.

Ear

Etio

COU

Venetions , and the last by the Florentiaes. defended. So the War was again revived in Lombardy, in which, after lome Skir- Warremilbes happening in the Country of Cres vived in mond , Francis Piccinino, General for the Duke, was at Cafal, by Michelesto and the Venetian Forces, defeated. Which Victory put the Veuetians in hopes of becoming Lords of the Dukes Ettates, and encouraged them to fend one of their Commisfaries to invade Gbiradidda, who took the whole Country, except Cremons, and thence pailing the Adda, made his incurhons as far as Milan: whereupon the Duke had recourse to Alphonfo, craving his affiliance, and setting forth the danger his b ingdom would be exposed to if the Venetians were Lords of Lombardy. Alphonfo promited to fend him Aid, which could hardly, without the Earls confent, have passage. Whereupon Philip was forced to supplicate the Earl, that he would not utterly defeit his Father in Law now grown blind and Aged. The Earl thought himself injured by the Duke, for having been the mover of this War; but on the other fide he affected not the Greatness of the Venetians, and began himself to want Mony, which the League supplyed but sparingly: for the Florentines were now freed from their Fears of the Duke, which had begot their esteem of the Earl; and the Venetians lought his dellrug vake so is Ction, believing the Dominion of Lamburgy to the could not be matcht from them by any one fremaliz.

NI.

ic

G 1

žų.

od at

P

UŸ

THE NEW YORK THE PARTY IN

ion

Ro-Vat

ike

HP

ics, thi

thi

arl,

1114,

the

ent

They entered

but him: And yet, whilft Philip folicited him to accept of his Pay, and offered him the fupream Command of all his Forces fon Condition he would defert the Veneries, and reftore La Marca to the Pope) they ent likewise their Ambasadours, promiting him Milan if they took it, and to be perpetual General of their Armies, provided he profecuted the War in La Marcs, and prevented Alphonfo's Forces from coming to relieve Lombardy. The Venetians Promifes were great, and their Merits greater, having hirst begun this War to secure Cremona for the Earl; and on the other fide the Dukes Injuries were fresh, and his Promifes faithless and not be relied on. However the Earl was doubtful what Choice to make: On the one fide, his obligation to the League, his word past, with the late deservings and promifes of future Advantages were strong motives; and on the other fide, the prayers of his Father in Law; but principally the poylon he feared lay hid under the Venetians extravagant Promises withheld him: for he judged, that both in relation to their Promises, and his own Estates, he should, whenever they were Vi-Aors, lye at their discretion; which no prudent Prince ought to expose himself to, unless in pure necessity. These distinculties of coming to a Refolve were by the Ambition of the Venetians removed; who, put in hopes to surprize Cremona, by some intelligence they had in that City, under other pretences

1

THE PERSON NAMED IN

*

i

THE

t

1

ited him ices etc.

hey

cr-

ind

ing

10-

er,

re-

de

ro-

W-

to

he

v-

jes le,

in-

er he E is u n of

on in

lier cs pretences made their Army approach it; but the Plot was discovered by the Earls Garrison, and their delign frustrated : so, though they got not Cremona, they loft the Earl, who, laying afide all respects, joyned now with the Duke. Pope Engenius was now dead, and Niebolas the Fifth succeeded in the Papacy. The Earl lay with all his Army at Cotignuola, ready to march into Lombardy, when Intelligence was brought him that Philip was dead, which happened Dekerte on the last of August 1457. This news ex- in death treamly perplexed the Earl; he suspected his own People were discontented, not having had their full pay; he was fearful of the Venetians; now in Arms against him, and whom he had so lately made Enemies by deferting them and joyning with the Duke, he was doubtful of Alphonso his perpetual Enemy, and had no great hopes in the Pope or Florentines in these, because they were in League with the Venetians; and in the other, because he was possessor of the Church-Lands; yet he resolved to out-face fortune. and govern himself and his Affairs according as things fell out; for many times by Action those counsels are discovered, which Idleness Some hopes he had in believing. conceals. that if the Milanefi would defend themselves from the Ambition of the Venetians, they could fly to no shelter but his : wherewith taking heart he marches into the Territories of Bolonia, from thence passing Modena and Reggio, and fitting down on the Lenza, fends

to Milan to offer his Service. The Milane. is after the Dukes death, would, forne line free, and others under a Prince; those who defired a Prince were partly for the Earl. and partly for King Alphonso, wherefore those who made choice of liberty, being more united, prevailed against the other, and established such a Common-wealth as pleased them, but to which many Cities of the Durchy refused obedience; thinking they might enjoy their liberty as well as Milan. or not being able to aspire to that, yet they would not be Lorded over by the Milanefi: wherefore I odi and Piacenza Submitted to the Venetians, Pavia and Parma would live free The Duke hearing of these confusions, went to Cremona; whither came his Ambassadors with others from the Milanefi, bringing this Conclusion, that he should be General of General Milan upon the fame terms lately made with Duke Philip ; with this addition that Brefeis should be the Earls, till he could take Verona; which done, that to be his and Brefeis to be restored. Before the Dukes death Pope Niebolas at his Exaltation to the Papacy had endeavoured to make Peace among all Italian Princes; whereupon he prevailed with those Ambassadors sent him by the Florentines at his creation, to request that a Diet might be held at Ferrara, in order to the treating either a long truce or a firm Peace: To which end there affembled in that City

> the Popes Legat, the Dukes, the Florenune and Venetian Ambassadors, but those of

of the Milaneff .

King

ř

W.

ho

arl,

ore

ore

c-

Gd

the

hey

41,

ney

fi:

the

ce.

ent

ors

ing

lot

ith

cha

cia

ape

iad

ian

rith

en-

liet

the

ce:

icy

une

ot

ing

Ming Alfonso came not. He was then at Tiwith a great power of Horfe and Foot, and from thence countenanced the Duke defigning as it is thought; having gained the Earl to their fide, openly to affault the Florentines and Venetions; and whilf he delayed time, the Earl with his forces to flay in Lombardy, and the treaty of Peace proceed; to which the King fent not, affirming he would ratifie whatever the Duke affented to. The Peace was many daies debated, and after many disputes concluded either to be perpetual, or a truce for 5 years, which of the two best pleased the Duke, but the Dukes Ambaffadors being fent to Milan, to understand his pleasure, found him dead : the Milanefi not withflanding his death, would have food to the Agreement : but the Venetians would not, having now greater hopes than ever, to become Lords of that State, efpecially feeing fo foon after his Death Lodi and Piacenza submit to them; affuring themfelves they should in a short time, either by force or consent, despoil Milan of all its Estates, and afterwards so oppress the City it felf, that it should be constrained to surrender before any releif could come : And they more firmly perswaded themselves to this sceing the Florentines intangled in a War with King Alphonfo. That King was now at Tivole, and deligning to purfue his expedition against Toscary, as he had concluded with Duke Philip (imagining the War raised in Lembardy gave him time and opportunity) He

Alphonie invades the Flores tine.

He was definous to get footing in the Flores the Blate, before he declared open War and to that end plotted the furnizal of the Cafile of Consists in the upper vale of Arib. Which by conspiracy with some within he won. The Florentines flartled at this unexpected accident, feeing the King resolved to profecute them, hired Souldiers, created the Council of ten, and according to their Cut torn prepared for War. The King was already marched into the Territories of Siena and used all his endeavours to gain the fayour of that City; but the Sanefi continuing him in their friendship to the Florentines, would not admit him into Siena, nor any other of their Towns; true it is, they furnished him with some Provisions, but for that, their weakness and his power pleaded their excuse. The King thought it not convenient to make his intoads by the Vale of Arm, as he had at first designed, both because Cennims was again recovered, also because the Florentines were already pretty well furnished with Men; wherefore he advances towards Volterra, and took feveral Catles in the Volterran; thence turning into the Territory of Pife, by the Countenance of Anigo and Fatio, Counts of Ghirardefea, he takes some Cattles, and affaults Campelia, but finding it detended both by the Florentines; and the hard Winter, fails in the Attempt wherefore, leaving Garrisons in the Towns he had taken, both to defend them, and make incursions into the Country with the reft

tu

lie

11

th

中である。日本のでは、

14, a

1

Ó.

1

or

cd

ot

ile

th lib ty

he

ral

to

te

he

ut

csi

rt:

ms

nd

hè

reft

25W 944

reft of his Army, he returns to his Ouarters in the Country of Siena. The Florentines. having this advantage of the Season, with all diligence provided Men, and chole Frederick Lord of Urban, and Gifmond Malaselfi for their Commanders; between whom though some difference happened, yet by the prudence of Neri di Gino, and Bernadetto Medici, it was in fuch measure accommodated, that notwithstanding the Cold was full very herce, they drew forth the Army, and regained all the Towns loft in the Country of Pifa and Pomerancy in the Volterran, and so streightned the Kings Forces, that made their inroads alone the Sea Coast, that they were scarce able to defend their Garrisons. But Spring coming on, the Commissaries advanced with all their Forces, confisting of 5000 Horse; and 2000 Foot, to Spedaletto; and the King draws his Army, confisting of 15000; within three Miles of Campiglia; and whilst they thought he would beliege that Town, turns off and fits down before Piombino which he hoped easily to carry, because it was very ill provided, and withal believing the Acquifition would prove of great advantage to him, and prejudice to the Florentines; because from thence he might confume the Florentines with a tedious War. and having his own Provisions by Sea, spoil the whole Country of Pifa. This Siege forely afflicted the Florentines; yet advising what was best to be done, they supposed that 73/17

if their Army could maintain its flation at mone the Thickets of Campiglia, the King would be forced to depart either with los or differace. Wherefore they Armed four Gallagfer, which they had at Legborn , and by them fent three hundred Foot into Pione bino, encamping themselves at Calducce, Post where they must with difficulty be all failed; for to lye among the Firzes in the Plain they conceived it dangerous. The Florentine Camp was Victualled from the Towns adjacent, which being but few and thinly Inhabited, made Provision scarce So that the Army fuffered extream Want but especially of Wine; for none being made there, and no possibility of having it eliewhere that defect could not be supply ed; but the King; though he were fireight ned by the Florentines, had abandance of all forts of Provision (even from Straw up wards) all which was brought him by Sea. Wherefore the Florentines grew defirous to make tryal, if they likewife could relieve their Camp by Sea, and loaded their Galleaffer with Provision; but in the Voyage they were met by feven of the Kings Gallies, and two of them were taken, and the other two put to flight. This defeat made the Plorentine Army lofe all hopes of refreshment; whereupon two hundred Pioneers, or more, for want (of Wine especia ally fled into the Kings Camp, and the rell murmured, declaring, They could not, not would not flay in those hot places where they

1

.

6

81

4

die

2

h

m Pi

出出

of pe

do

植物

he

25

20 his

of:

they had neither Wine nor wholeforn Wawhereupon the Commissaries resolved to remove, and addressed themselves to the recovery of feveral Caftles which were yet in the Kings hands: who on the other fide, though he flood in no want of Provision and was superious in Number, yet began to wafte; for his Camp was infected with divers Diseases occasioned by Vapours arifing from the Sea, of which many died and most were infirm. Whereupon a Treaty was fet on Foot, whereby the King demanded 50000 Florins, and Piombino to be left at his discretion; which being debated E Florence, many that were defirous of Aphonfo Peace accepted, affirming, They knew not Flormeine, how any could hope they should overcome in a War that required fuch waft Expence to maintain it. But Neri Capponi going to Plorence, with fuch Reasons dehorted them. that the whole City agreed not to accept those Conditions, but received the Lord of Piombino into their Pay and protection, promiting in War and Peace to maintain and defend him, provided he would not be wanting to himfelf, but as hitherto he had done defend his City. The King having sovice of this Refolution, and perceiving The King that by reason of the Sickness in his Camp, sailes his he could not gain the Town, raifed his Siege diffics if he had been defeated, and leaving 2000 dead upon the place, with the rest of his infirm Army retreated into the Country of Siens, and thence to the Kingdom; 6C 2 despe-

Overtures. berween

9. 年来,是自己的母亲和宗传。他也在他的

音文学できなったまない

182 200

HOL

ere

hey

desperately angry at the Florentines, and threatning the next Spring a new Invalida During this turmoil of Affairs in Tofcani Earl Francis being made General for the Milanefi in Lombardy, first of all engages Francis Piccinino's friendship, that either he might favour his Defigns, or at least be more wary of obstructing them; and the drawing his Army into the Field, those of Pavia supposing themselves unable to refil his Forces, and refolving not to submit to the Milanefi, offered him their Town, upon Condition he should not deliver them up to Milan. The Earl was very delirous to have the possession of that City, believing it would be a brave beginning, and an excellent Colour for other deligns. Nor did shame, or breach of Faith, restrain him; for Great men think loss a shame, and not Conquest, though by Deceit. Yet he was fearful by taking it he should so anger the Mi lanefi, that they would give up their right to the Venetians; and if he took it not he was fearful of the Duke of Savey, to whom me ny Citizens proposed a surrendry. One was or the other he faw himself deprived of the Empire of Lombardy: yet prefuming there would be less danger in the taking it, than leaving it to another, he resolved to accept it, perswading himself he might pacifie the Milanefi; to whom he fent word, how may ny Dangers he had incurred by not accepting Pavia, which those Citizens would or therwise have surrendred, either to the Vene tians

A

t

u

b

th

0 (B. B) D

CI

lip

mi

M

of

hi

an dr.

Q:

w

Wj

160

TIN O

ga

k

hen c of

ciii

t to

pon

Pto

ave

gi

cel-

did

for

00

cari

M

t 10

Was

ma

way

the

nere

han

cept

the

ma-

pt-

1 0

ente

ans

tians or the Duke of Savoy, in either of which cases their Dominion there were lost; and that it were much better for them to have him their Neighbour and Friend, than to have a powerful Neighbour (as either of the other were) and an Enemy: withal, the Milanefi were much troubled at it, imagining they had made a discovery of the Earls Ambition, and the ends he drove at; but they thought it best not to discover their thoughts, not knowing whither (if they once cast off the Earl) to turn themselves, unless to the Venetians, whose pride and heavy Conditions they detefted: wherefore they resolved not to fall at variance with the Earl, but to mak use of him to oppose the present Storms, hoping they once blown over, to free themselves likewise from him: for at this time they were not only affailed by the Venetians, but by the Genovese and Duke of Savoy, in the Name and Right of Charles of Orleans, Son to a Sifter of Philips; but that War was with eafe by the Earl suppressed; and then they had no Enemies left but the Venetians, who with a mighty Army fought to make themselves Mafters of that State; and were poffeffed of Lodi and Piacenza; which last the Earl hid Siege to, and with great labour took, and fackt. After which (for Winter was drawing on) he brought his Army into Quarters, and went himself to Cremons, where all that Seafon whe repoled himfelf with his Wife. v. But Spring approaching 16013 the

XUM

the Venetian and Milanele Armies took the Field s the Milanefi only delited to regain Lodi, and then make Peace with the Vente tians; for both the Charges of the War increating upon them, and withal their Jealoufies of their General, whose fidelity they mistrusted, they grew infinitely delirous of Peace, that they might enjoy some repose; and fecure themselves against the Earl They therefore resolved their Army should make an attempt upon Caravaggio, hoping whenever that Cattle were regained from the Enemy , Ladi would furrender. The Earl obeyed the Milanefi , though he had more mind to pass the Adda, and fall into the Country of Brefeig. Having therefore laid Siege to Caravaggio, he fortified himfelf with Trenches and Bulwarks that if the Venetians attempted to raife the Siego,the frould do it with difadvantage. On the o ther side where Venetians came with their Army under Micheletto within two Bow that of the linemy, where they lay fever daies and many Skirmithes happened, How ever, the Earl made his approaches to the Caftle and reduced it to fach a condition that lit rould not longer hold out; which trach afflicted the Venetions, believing with the loss of it they should lose Lodi, Where fore calling a Council of Wat, there were many Debates how to delieve it a but non feemed probable milefs they could force the Enamiles Dogoks, which must be done with pricate difertyamare, However, they chought that

O HE

fy

日本 日本日本

ici Hi

Ble

ing

om

he

ber

nto

one

im•

the help to the trion middle with

cro

écut

010

rght char

that Castle of Such concern, that the Senate of Venice (naturally fearful , and dreading any thing they behold doubtful and dangerous) chose to run the hazard of all, rarather than with the loss of that Catile lose their present Delign. They therefore determined, in the belt manner they could, to form the Earls Camp, and getting in Order one Morning very early; fall on in that part they had observed weakest Guarded; to that upon the first Charge (as happens in all unexpected Affaults) Sforza's whole Army was in confusion: but the Earl foon repaired that disorder; so that after many Attempts made by the Enemy to force the Trenches, they were not only repulfed, but to totally routed and discomfitted; that of The vm-Twelve thousand Horse, which were in the deferaed Army, not above a thousand faved them- by the elves; all their Ammunition and Car- Earl. ringes became a prey to the Enemies; nor ever before or fince, did the Venetians recrive a greater or more dreadful blow. Among the Prey and Prisoners was found a Kenetian Providitor very fad and melancholy, who before the Fight, and in the carrying on the War, had been used to speak very diferacefully of the Earl, calling him Bahard and base Fellow: so that finding himfelf now a Prisoner, and being confcious of his Fault, fearing to be rewarded according to his Deferts; being brought before the Earl quaking and trembling, according to the nature of proud and base-minded men,

who are infolent in Prosperity, and low and vile in Advertity; casting himself on his Knees with tears in his Eyes, humbly craved pardon for the Injuries he had done him; whom the Earl taking by the Hand, and rating him up, bid be of good comfort. and hope the best; and then told him: That The gene be wondred a Man of that Prudence and Gravity be would be thought , fould fo overfee himself as to talk so vilely of those that bad not deserved it : for as to those matters wherewish be bad fcandalized bim, be knew not what had been done between Sforza bis Father, and the Lady Lucia bis Mother, because be neither was nor could be pre-Sent; but as to bis own doings, be was sensible be bad governed himself so, that no man could justly reprove bim; of which both himself and the whole Senate could bear fufficient teltimony : and therefore exhorted him for the future, to be more modest in bir Expressions, and more cautious in bis proceedings. After this Victory, the Earl with his Triumphant Army marched into the Territory of Brefeia; all which he possessed himself of, and then pitcht his Camp within two miles of the City. On the other fide, the Venetians having received this defeat, imagining (as it happened) That Brefera would be the next thing stroke at, had taken the best Care, and made the best provision for it they could; and then with all diligence levyed Forces, and rallyed the remnants of their broken Army, and by

ross temper of Eatl Sfore

virtue

fi t

Ź

virtue of the League fent to demand Aid from the Florentines, who being released from the War by King Alphonio, fent to their affiliance rooo Foot, and 2000 Horfe. With this addition of Forces the Venetians were in a condition to begin to think of Peace. It hath been a long time fatal to the Venetian Republick to lofe in War, and afterwards by Treaty to have it reftored double; and the Venetians now well knew how jealos the Milanefi were of the Earl, and how the Earl defired not to be Earl but Lord of Milan, so that it was in their power to make Peace with either, the one defiring it out of Ambition, and the other out of Fear. They chose to make it with the Earl, and offer him their Affistance to Conquer the other; perswading themselves, That the Milaness feeing themselves deceived by the Earl, would in indignation rather submit them-Elves to any than to him; and fo reducing them into a condition that they could neither defend themselves nor trust the Earl, they would be forced, not knowing which way to turn themselves to fall into their lap. Having thus deliberated, they founded the Earls inclination, and found him very ready to embrace Peace, being defirous the Victory gained at Caravaggio should be his and not the Milanefi's: wherefore an Agreement was concluded, by which the Venetians were ob- resee beliged to pay the Earl, till fuch time as he had Earl and conquer'd Milan, 13000 Florins a Month; and Venetians. moreover, during that War, to affift him with

21/2

M. oder

mel A

chilled.

1200

ac

distributed the state of the st

4000 Horfe, and 2000 Foots and the East on the other part obliged himself to retion to the Venetians all the Towns, Priloners, on whatever elfe had been taken in that War and content himself with those Lands Duke Philip at his Death possessed. As foon as the Agreement was known at Allen, it more a flicted that swhole City than the Victory Coravaggio had rejoyced them: the Mac firates vented their Griefs to one another ful Complaints; the Common People rails and the Women and Children wept, and with one voice called him Difloyal and Te tour; and though they could not believed ther Prayers or Promiles could withdraw him from his ingrateful delign, yet they feat Ambaffadours to him, to fee with what, face and what words he vyould justifie his vyick odness; who being come before the Far one of them spoke in this manner: The who are earnest to obtain any thing from and ther, do nfually with Prayers, Premises, Threats invade bim , fo that either moved Compassion, Advantage or Fear, be may cond frend to their defires; but in Cruel and Atu rition minds, and withal epinionative of the own Power, all these waies are to no purpos and in vain men strive ember to humble the with Prayers, to gain them with Rewards, terrifie them with Threatnings. Wherefore being made fenfible, thangh too Late, of your Cruelty, Ambition and Pride, are not come be ther to beg any thing from you, nor have any hopes to obtain it of me should, but to put y

The Speech of the Milangi Am. baffadours to the Larl.

, FF4 (\$510)

sh.

C

ceived

Book VI PARTITIONENCE M in wind of the Obligations you one to the Perpless Milany and to declare with how much lagastisade you have discharged show, shat in hamidit of fa many Miferies me may have as his the satisfaction of Reproaching you. You minos bus mell remainber subas Conditione. were Enemy to the King and Pope, bud desed the Venetians and Florentines, who either ant of just and fresh references; or besufe they had to more need of you, were upon the point of Declaring against you. You were your falf grown weary of the War with the Church, your Forces few , your Friends none, and your Tressure quite expended, and you in iger of losing your Estates, and your ancient Reputation together; all which had foon befalla you, bad it not been for our fimplicity; for wonly faeltred you, moved out of the Revewhere we bore so the bappy memory of our Dake, with whom you baving contracted a former Ala liauce and new Eriendship , me believed your leve might descend from him to w, and that if to in Obligations we joynedours, that Bond would nat only be firm, but in seperable, and therefore to the former Articles were added either Breicia W. Verona ; what could we give ar promife you more ? or subat could you. I do use fuy of us, but in those times of way one either have or indeed define? Tour scrived then from m unboped for hindness , and we have now in ceturn from you succeptiled Malipe. Nor have you ceafed from that very hour to declare the perver fuels of your intentions; for no faoner ore you General of our Forces, but contrary to all Juffice you rea

4

等配出手打工

神の味ん

中學可

ceived Pavis, which might have warned what the end of your Friendship would prove ver me past by that injury, supposing the large nest of that Conquest might have satisfied you Ambition; But alass! Those who defire d will never be fatisfied with part. Tow the promised we should enjoy what you afterward gained , because you imagined what was give by parcels, might be fuatch'd again at once as hath bappened fince the Victory at Caravag. gio , which being gained with our Blood an Mony, hath fince been pursued to our destruction on. Ob unbappy those Cities who are exposed to defend their Liberty against all Oppressouri but mire unhappy those who are necessitates to trust the defence of it to Mercenary and dif loyal Arms, like yours : Let posterity there. fore be warned by our Example; though me have not taken warning from that of Thebe and Philip of Macedon, who after baving en quered their Adversary , first became their E nemy, and then their Prince. However, we eas be accused of no other fault, but putting to much considered in him whom we should not a all have rented, for your past life the ambition of your mind content with no Estate or degree should have deterred us. What bopes could me have in him who had betrayed a Lord of Lucca fleeced the Florentines and Venetians flighted the Duke, abufed the King and what's above all with fuch violences and inpuries perfect red God and bis Church? Why should we think all those States and Princes bad tel power over Francis Storza that the Milaneli, or that he who had fo often violated bis Faith with . thers

Ċ

祖田の日本日

G

Di

M

d

TO

學院是

iba

there would keep it with us. Let our want of prudence, for which we are to be blamed, it no excuse for your perfidiousness, nor case it purge that Infamy our just Complaints fall fread through the World or release you from the checks of your own Consciences for when with those Arms prepared fit our defence, you come to smite and injure w. you cannot but inwardly condemn your felf to the punishment appointed for Parrieides. And though Ambition should blind you the abole World, witness to your Treachery, will pen your eyes, God bimfelf will open them, if Treasons, Perjury, and violated Faith dif-Heafe bim : unles (as bitberto for some occult end be bas been) be still continue a favourer Melignant men. Promise not then to your felf Villory which the just anger of God will deny may and know, we shall till death defend our Liberty, and when we can no longer do it. Submit it rather to any other Prince then you : wif our fins be so great that we must, in deshise of us, fall into your bands, yet be affured, that Dominion you enter into by Fraud and Deceit, will end in you or in your Children with Loß and Ignominy. Though the Earl were touched to the quick with what the Milanefi had faid, yet without any visible alteration either in words or gesture he answered: That be was content to attribute to their The Rads auger and passion all the injuries of their im- the Milaprudent Speeches, to every particular of which nos. be could give an Answer, were he before any that could judg of their Differences; that it might

to the state of th

might appear he bad not injured the Milanelli but only taken care they bould not injure him for they could not but be fenfible of their praise zes after the Killary at Caravaggio, when in Bead of rewarding him with Breleia or Verona they fought a Peace with the Venetians, this on him alone all the burden of the Hate might lye, whilft they anjoyed the fruits of the Vices TV. the sweetness of Peace, and all the advant toger could be extracted from the War, Where fore they had no reason to complain if he bad now made that agreement they had fuft delien ed to do which, if he had but a little dela ed, he mighe with more Tuttice have reproved ed shemwith that ingrasitude wherewith the now frandalize him ; which whether true w no that God whom they invoke for their reven er will by the conclusion of the War determine by which is would appear which had atted will most Honesty, and fought with most Justice The Ambaffadors gone, the Earl gave or der to affault the Milanefi, and they prepared for their defence, and with Francis and Joen Piccining (whom one of the antient enmit between the Bracobi and Sforzi, bad cont med faithful to the Milanefi) thought fo long at leaft to defend their Libert vill they made a breach between the Earl and the netidus, whom they knew to be faithless and inconfiant friends. On the other lide the Earl who knew this well enough. thought it a wife course, when Faith was too weak a cord to hold them, to ftrengthen it with Rewards; and therefore in diffributing the

alves

n

fi

h E

1

1

ti

2 3年出口

t

fe

A

ø

thegains of the War, he was content the Venerians should, if they took it, have Crema, and he with the ternaming forces would Mauft the rest of that State. This Cove must made the Venerians continue firm, till the Dake had become mafter of all the Mifinefe Dominion, and fo fireightned the City, that despairing of any other aid, they lent Ambastadors to Venter, to beg their compession compassion, and that they would be pleased on of the faccording to the wont of their Commonwealth) to be favourers of liberty, and not of a Tyrant, who if once he became Lord of their City, they could not bridle at pleafure: for it was in vain for them to think he would be kept to the conditions agreed to, or confined to the antient bounds of that Domi-The Venerians had not yet mafterd Crems, and being willing, before they dranged countenance, to become Lords of that Town, they publickly answered them. that they could not, because of their agreement with the Earl, afful them; but privately they encouraged them to put their fellow Citizens in firm hopes of their friendhip. The Earl with his forces was already gor fonear Milan, that he plundred the fuburbs, when the Venetiums (having taken Crema) thought fit no longer to determahing an accord with the Milanefe, with the vonwhom they entred into Articles: the first of tians make which was , that they would fully defend with the their Liberty; this agreement made, they Milenefe. commanded their forces which ferved under

the

hey Valles ide ide

e ie

ing

the

Single and the state of the sta

THE NE SO

BYRID SAM

20,000

. Constant &

the Earl, to withdraw from his Camp to their own, and at the same time lignified to the Earl, the Peace they had made; giving him twenty daies, if he pleased, to accept The Earl did not much wonder at these proceedings of the Venetians, for he had long before forefeen it, and ex pected every day when it should happen; yet now it was befallen, he could not forbeat fretting at it, and feeling the fame pattion · charmes within himself, as Milanese had done when he abandoned them, he took two dayes to return an answer to the Ambassadors, who brought him the fignification of the Peace. In which time he determined to keep a treat ty on foot, and yet follow his own delignes; wherefore he publickly declared he would accept the Peace, and fent Ambassadors with full commission to ratify it; but gave them private instructions not to do it, but only with cavils and delays gain time, and to confirm the Venetians in a beleif that he meant faithfully, he makes Truce for a Month with the Milanefe, and drawing off his forces from the City, quartered them in the most conve nient Towns he had in his possession about it. By this meanes he procured victory to himself, and ruined the Milanesi: for the Venetians trulling to the Peace, made flow provision for War; and the Milanesi seeing a Truce granted, the enemy withdrawn and the Venetians their friends, flattered themselves that all was well, and that the Ear had given or'e his enterprize; which eale belie

tr

III N

h

belief did them double prejudice, for in the first place they reglected to prepare for their own defence, and then shough the Country lay open to the Enemy (it being now Seed time) they lowed great quantities of grain whereby the Earl might the easier famish them. All these things hurtful to the Enemy proved helps to the Earl, who besides gained so much time to breath and recruit his Army. In all this War of Lombardy, the Florentines had declared themselves on neither party ; neither had they howed any favour to the Earl either when he defended the Milanese or fince, for indeed the Earl not standing in need of it, had never pres'd it : only after the rout of Caravaggio, being obliged to it by the League, they had lent affistance to the Venetians : but now Earl Francis being left to himfelf, having no other recourse, was constrained instantly to urge the folicies Florentines to affift him; which he did not the Florenonly publickly to the State, but privately to his sines aid. Friends, and especially to Cosmo de Medici, with whom he had alwaies preferved an inviolable friendship, and who in all his undertakings had faithfully Counselled, and largely supplyed him: nor did Cosmo forsake him in this necellity, but as a private Person plentifully contributed to his relief, and encouraged him to proceed, withal moving the City publickly to abilt him: but herein he found some difficulty. Neri de Gino Capponi was a man very powerful in Florence, and he was of Opinion, It was not for the interest of the City that the Earl (bould take Milan , judging it rather for the Safety of

the own

iri

SECOND SE

Italy shat the Peace were earlied, than the Wa projecured: for in the first place, be was doubtful teeff the Milancic out of hight to the Di should furrender to the Venetians, which we prove rainous to all ; and again, hould the Ex brodne Mafter of Milan, be thought fo mighty Memy, and fo great a Dominion joyned to would render bim too formidable ; and if were almost insupportable being but Earl if on Dake there would be no enduring him. When fore be thought it better for the Commonweat of Florence, and all Italy, that the Earl found fill preferve bis Reputation in Arms, and Lon bardy be divided into two Commonwealths, w would never joyn to offend others, and each obemfelves could not do it: to bring tobich pass he saw no way, but, by not relieving to Earl, and maintaining their old League bin the Venetians. But Cofmo's Friends approved not these Reasons, which they thought No moved, not because indeed he thought it good for the Commonwealth, but because he would not have the Earl (fo great a Friend of Como's) become Duke, whereby he thought Of mo would grow too powerful. Cofmo on the other fide by Reason demonstrated, That the affifting the Earl was for the good of Italy and that Commonwealth; for it was an Opinion fabouring of little wifdome, to think the Milanel could ever preserve their Liberty, for both to Quality of the Citizens, their manner of tiving and the ancient Factions in that City, were contradictory to Civil Government; fo that & recessive the Earl must become Duke or the Vend tians

and Lords of its and no man could be fo much afool at to flave a doubt, whether it were better bave the neighbourhood of a poseut Friend, a a very powerful Enemy? nor was it, as be images, to its doubted that the Milanele (though inched War with the Earl) would ever submit import to be doubted that the Milanele (though to had War with the Earl) would ever submit to the Venetians; for the Earl had a Party in Milan, but they none; so that whenever they daired of longer defending their Liberty, any would rather submit to the Earl than the Venetians. This divertity of Opinion had the City in a long suspence, but at last development of the determined to send Ambassadors to Treat with the Earl, with instructions, That if they had him strong, and likely to eveneous, they would clap up an Agreement with him, but hed the City in a long suspence, but at last bey determined to fend Amballadors to Treat with the Earl, with instructions, That if they fould him strong, and likely to overcome, they the linet, then use Cavils and Delaies. These Ambaffadors were in their way as far as Regome Lord of Milan; for as foon as the Truce good we expired, he had again drawn his Forces with hopes, in defpight of the Veneticus, shortly to possess it, for they ould no way relieve it but by the way of the Adds, which he could eafily block up; and hedid not at all fear, fince it was Winter, that the Venetians would encamp on the banks of that River; and before Spring he hoped to make the Victory, especially since Francis Pictorians was dead, and the Milanese had no other than the Milanese had no other than the Milanese Comin but his Brother Jacob. The Venetians for their Ambassadors to Milan, encouout f reing these Citizens to defend themselves and momiling great and speedy succour. There 6 D 2 hapned

th th

2 202

ving

ente

tians

antierol !

hapned during Winter divers light Skirmilho between the Earl and Venetians, and Spring coming on, the Venetians with their who Army, under the Command of Pandolpho Malaterta, fat down on the banks of the Adda where they began to confult, whether to relieve Milan they should affail the Earl, and try the fortune of a Battle. Pandolpho their General thought this too hazardous an Experiment, knowing the valour both of the Fail and his Army, believing they might eafily vanquiff him without fighting, the Earl being in great diffres for want of Corn and Straw he therefore advised they should keep that Poll To putting the Milanese in hopes, least in despair they should surrender to the Earl. The course was approved by the Venerians, as well because they thought it secure, as because the were in hopes, by holding the Milanese in me ceffity, they should constrain them to submit to their Dominion, perswading themselves, the would never yield to the Earl, confidering the Injuries he done them; so that the Milange were reduced to extream misery, and the City naturally abounding with Poor, they died in the very Streets with hunger, which cause Uproars and Complaints in divers parts of the City, that the Magistrates were forct to the their utmost endeavours to prevent a genera Tumult. The Multitude are long before the are disposed to mischief, but once disposed every little Accident moves them; so now two Persons, of no considerable Quality, difcourfing together at the New Gate, of the Ca lamin

orin

vhol

Ma

dala

98 0

and

xpe

Ear vap

ng in

w i he

Poft.

n de-This well

n ne-

g the died that died they old more

hat means there was yet left for fafety, others egan to gather about them; till at laft they ew to be a great number; whereupon a Ruour was foread about the City, that those aout the New Gate were in Arms against the Magistrates; upon which all the Mustirude took Arms. and made Japer of Vicomercato their Leader. d going to the Palace where the Magistrates ere affembled, they fell on with such fury mongst whom was Leonard Vinetto the Vene- The Vene Ambaffador, whom, as an occasioner of ties Amtheir Famine, and rejoycer at their Milery, they thereia mein pieces; and thus become (as it were) flain. Princes of the City, they proposed among hemselves, what was best to be done to reseal themselves from these Afflictions, and procure their quiet and repose; every man was of ounion, fince they could no longer maintain their liberty, that twas their best course to shelter themselves under the protection of fome Prince able to defend them: fome were for King Alphonfo, others for the Duke of Savoy, and others would have the King of France for their Lord; not the least mention was made of the Earl , fo prevalent was their anger against him: but when they could not agree upon any of the others, Jaffer of Vicomercato was the first that named him, affirming, That if they designed to free themselves from the War they groaned under, there was no other way but choosing bim; for the People of Milan stood in.

baffadour

william fire or beshies Earl From der Pela 26. 3751

need

mity

need of a prefent and certain Peace, and con never be redreft by the tedious bepeach future lief. Then mith the best of his invention he culed the Earls affirms accused the Venetiana, of Ambition or Avarice permit them to live for and fince they must give appay their Liberty, a should give it to one who could and moved defi them, that at least with their Servitude th mighs purchase Peace, and not a more danger and bazardow War. He was with wonder attention liftned to by all and no fooner ha done speaking but they unanimously cryed on That the Earl should be called in, making Jaster Ambassadous to that purpose, who by command of the People, went to atten the Earl with this pleasant and joyful News which the Earl gladly accepted, and entre into Milan, as Prince, on the 26 of Februar 1450, and was with wonderful joy received by those who not long before had defame him with fuch fpight and hatred. This News arriving at Florence, orders were dispatch'dto their Ambassadors, who were on their way, not to treat an Agreement with the Earl, but to congratulate the Duke for his Victory These Ambassadors yvere by the Duke, very honourably received, for he very well knew that, against the power of the Venetians, he could not find in Italy more faithful nor braver Exicods than the Florentines, who being quit of their fears of the Farnily of the Vifconti, they believed must now be force to engage gainst the Powers of Arragon, and Venice: for the

Milan furrendred to Earl Francir.Feb. 26, 1450.

he Kings of Naples being of the Houle of the endship which they knew the Floreniene Pcochad always kept with the Houle of France the Venetians sensible that the sear th fore flood in of the Vifconti, was now turned wer to them, remembring with what earnests they purfued the Visconti, and fearing the ne perfecutions, fought their ruine. This fa itated the New Duke in agreeing with the lecentines, and was likewife the occasion that Venetions and King Alphonfo entred into a leigue against their common Enemies, and obliged themselves at the same time to begin War, and that the King should affail the Florentines, and the Venetians the Dukes who, farce fetled in his Government, they thought able, either with his own Force, or any flance he could have from others, to mainin the War. But because the League between he Venetians and Florentines was fill in force od the King, after the War at Piorubino, had likewise made Peace with them, they judg'd it me convenient to break the Peace, without lone pretence to justifie the War; and therefore they both fent Ambaffadors to Florence who on behalf of their Masters declared to the Florentines, that they had entred into that League , not to offend others, but to defend themselves. The Venetians further complained: that the Florentines had given passage to Alewander, the Dukes Brother, to march by the way of Lunigiana with his Forces into Lonbardy; and had moreover been the Authours 6D 4

XUM

fra the care who care with the
IN PARTY

th.

CH IN

ti.

20

os

and Advisers of the Agreement between the Duke and the Marquis of Mantens; all which State, and contrary to the Friendship they h Contracted together; wherefore they cou not but lovingly put them in mind, That who offends wrong fully gives occasion others to offend with reason; and he who brea the Peace must look for War. The Senate pointed Cosmo to return them an Answer this Embaffy, who, in a long and prudent C ration, made rehearfal of all the Benefits which the Republick of Venice had received from h City; letting forth, How great a Dominion th bad gained by the Florentine Mony, Arms, a Counjel; and declaring, As the Florentin had been the occasion of the Friendship between them they would never be the cause of any breas but as they bad been ever lovers of Peace, forthe applanded the new League they had entred in provided it was made for Peace and not for Wa In true, they could not but wonder at the Con plaints, seeing so mighty a Republick make h great an account of things so light and value. which, had they been indeed worthy of confidederation, they would have all men know, that their Country Should be free and open to any, and that the Duke was of that quality, that to Contratt a Peace with Mantova he needed not then favour or advice : Wherefore he doubted therew Some other poison hid under these Complaints which , if it were Jo, they shoul I easily make it appear, That as the Florentine Friendship could administer advantage, fo their Enmity could bring

ed over lightly for the prefent, and the indiffadors feem'd to go away fatished : Bu or the new League, and the measures held by Venezians and the King, made both the man hope a firm Peace: wherfore the Florentines atred into a stricter League with the Duke, and a the mean time the Venezians discovered their Intentions for they made a League with Siea, and banished all the Elorentines, and their ects, from their City and Dominions; And bonafter Alphonfo did the like, without any repet to the League made the Year before, or without any just, or so much as pretended ocbilines, and having gathered together all the The failes of that City, with a good additional new please, they conveyed them into Bolonia by the Polonia. Common-fewers. Nor was their Entrance known till themselves gave the Alarum; whereat Santi Bentivoglio Starting from his sleep, was told the whole City was possessed by the Rebels; and though many advised him by flight to fave his life, fince he could not by ftaying five the State, yet he would out-brave Fortune. and Arming himself, encouraged his People, and making head with some of his Friends, charged a party of his Enemies, and routing them flew most, and drove the rest out of the City; whereupon all men adjudged him to be indeed of the blood of the Bentivogli. These Actions and open Attempts made the Florentines firmly believe a War would enfue : wherefore they apply-

ap to Och his base and be and the same of
ide-that and ben that

seld

ing

.

to formit

applyed themselves to their usual course of defence, and Created the Council of Ten, enter tained new Officers sent Ambasselves to Romand at Naples Penics Milan, and Siens, to demand at of their Friends, clear their own doubes an suspicious of those that were Nauvel, and di cover the Councils of their Enemies. From t Pope they gained nothing, but general affuraces of his good Inclinations, and exhortation to Peace: From the King vain Excules, for having district the Florenthes, offering to give fafe Conduct to whoever defined in and thous he contrived all he could to conceal the Cou fels of the intended War, yet the Amballado discovered his evil Intentions and detected in ny preparations of his delighted to damma the Common-wealth. With the Duke, by va ous new Tyes and obligations, they forting their league, and by his meanes contracted mity with the Genovese and their actient diff rences of reprizals, and many other Quarre they compoled. Norwith landing that the Ven tions, and forbore not foliciting the Emperer of Constantinople to forbid all Plorentines. Tra ding in his Country: With formuch rancour an malice they began this War, and to powerful i them was the defire of Rule, that without an sense of gratitude they sought the destruction of those who had raised them to their greatness But the Emperour gave no ear to them. . Th Florentine Ambassadors were by the Senate of Venice forbid entrance into their Estates, a leading. That without the Kings participation having

\$53 V. mill High d seems -147 463 party pinishe

.palues

centralized for christan alliance with his y seceived show Ambaffaders , tourns of ig forprised before the League could refuse mains show their rather to temporine, than marketer Arms shey could not selift. The merium and King had deligned as high been mee tonisctured so have for Ambuffidors to ther to Julina the War s but fince the Ve tide would not be admitted into the Floren-Territories, and the Kings would not permethat office alone, that Embaffy was left perfect; but by this the Venetions know that the forentimes now as much undervalued them, as they had done Florence force months before. hethe height of thefe foures Broderick the Third Frederick Emperour came into dealy, to his Coronation the Third nd on the 30 January 3451, entred into Flor comes to two with 1400 Horse and was by that Senate Florence, enourably receiv'd the flated in that City till the fixth of February, and then continued on his Journey to Rome, where he was faleranly cowned and celebrated his Nuptials with the Empress, who came to meet him by Sea, and so returning into Garmany in May, he again past through Florence, and had the same honours paid him on his return as before. In his way ome to recompence fome Services done him by the Marquis of Ferrara he granted him Mathe and Reggio. The Florentiner all this while emisted no preparations for the impendent the Fir-War, and to gain themfelves more reputation, review and terrific their Enemies, they and the Duke League of Milan entred into an Offensive and Defen- with

- 100

The Ventwith the Duke.

five league with the King of France, with great Magnineence and Joythey publish throughout Italy. In the month of May LA the War the beginning of the War with the Duke, b with 14000 Horfe and 6000 Foot invaded Dominions, entring by the way of Ledi'y at at the same time the Marquis of Monsfers led by his own Ambition of feron by the Ven tions affailed him on the connes towards if lexandria. On the other hide the Duke h brought together an Army of 18000 Horfear ood Footland having par frong garrifons to Alexandria and Lode and fortified all place where the Enemy could offend him, with hi Army enters the Territories of Brefeia, who daire beri budT on he did the Venerians Infinite damage on a hides footling the Country, and Sacking the Of earting Einens weaker Towns: And the Atorquis of Montfern being defeated at Alexandria by the Dukes for ces he could afterwards with more ftrength op pole the Wenetians, and affail their County Whillithe War was this maringed in Lumber dy with various, but incomiderable accidents In Toleany likewife began the War between King attebonfo and the blarentines, which we profested with no more Valour nor dange then that in Lambardy Perraudo Natural Sont Alphanfa came into Tofvan with 12000 Men under the Command of Brederick Lord of Vi bin whose hirst enterprize was to beliege Faians in the Valent Chiana; for the Sanchi being their friends they entred on that fide into the Flor rentine Territories. This was but a finall Callle,

The Rings Army en ser: To cony.

Troppend

Septier

PERCOST. countida

and the Walls theomiderable; The Garrisons in those times; for their whole force was but soo fent thither from the Senate, and yet before this mighty Caftle Ferrand encamps with is whole Army and either through the Excels of Courage in those within, or want of it it in the befregers, he was 36 daies before he won it. which loss of time gave the Senate leffure to provide for other places of more moment, reinforce their Army and put themselves in a better posture of defence then before. The Enemy possessed of this Castle, marched forward into Chianti, where they were from two finall Country-towns repulfed : fo leaving themethey hid Siege to Caftelma, a Caftle placed on the Confines of Chianti, within ten miles of Siena, weak by Art, and weaker by Nature; yet were not these two weaknesses Superior to the weakness of the Army that affailed it, for after 46 daies Seige they departed with shame. So mormidable were these Armies, and so dangerous these Wars, that those Castles and Towns which now are flighted, as impossible to be defended, were then efteemed as places impregnable. Whilft Ferrando lay in the Country of Chianti, he made many inroads and incurtions into the Florentine Territory, and entred within 6 miles of the City, to the great fear and Damage of the Florentine Subjects, who lay now with their Army confifting of about 8000 Men under the Command of Aftorre de Farnza, and Gifmond Malatefia, towards the Caffle of Colle, keeping at a distance from the Enemy, least they should

de bland and bland
Sephen Porcari difturbs Zome,

48

5207

be forced to come to a Barrailsfor they were Opinion whilst they kept intire, they could the lofe the War; for the little Caftles that were loft would again by Peace be recovered, and the great Towns were fecure because the Ene my durft not affail them. Belides all this th King had an Armada of about twenty Foiffs an Gallies, in the Sea of Pifa, and whilft he laid fin to Caffellina they attempted the Fort of Van which by the Negligence of the Governor they took by which meanes the Enemy much molefied the adjacent Country, but that mol fation was foon prevented by forme Souldie which the Florentines fent to Campiglia, whi pen'd up the Enemy to the Sea-shore. Th Pope concerned not himfelf in thefe Wars him ther, then endeavouring a reconciliation of all parties: but though he medled not with Wa abroad he had like to have found danger home. There was living in these times Mr. 811. phen Percari, ennobled by Blood and Learning but much more famous for the Excellency his Ingenuity. He had a mighty defire as mol men have that are Covetous of Glory, to do of at least attempt something memorable: And thought nothing nobler, than to redeem his Country out of the hands of the Prelates, and reflore it to its prittine Effate; hoping if he effected it to be filled at least the new Founder or fecond father of the City: The wicked live of the prelates and discontents of the Barons of Rome, made him hope for a happy iffue; but that which most encouraged him were those Verses of Petrarchs, in that Song which begins Spirits

m

fre

the fin

20

m.

pi

or the state of th

rh.

N RE

Su-

ing

y of

noli

o of

And

his

and

don

YE

19 of

but

hole

irito

where be fales, where he fales,

Sapra il monto Tarpeio Canzon vedrai Vu Cavalier ch'Italia, sutes Honora Penfojo pui d'aterne che di fe feufo.

Meller Stephen knew that Poets were outines filled with a divine and Prophetick [pi-Knight, it, and therefore thought what Petrarch prothefied of in that Song must necessarily come to pais, and that he must needs be the in to put in Execution those glorious Exploits, believing himfelf for Eloquence, Learnne Favour and Friends, superiour to any other times; and having possessed himself with this rapture, could not govern himself with any caution, but by Words, Conversation, and manner of Living discovered himself; so that the Pope grew jealous of him, and to hinder him from doing milchief, Confined him to Bilania, giving order to the Governour of that City, to fee and speak with him once a day. This first shock did not at all startle Messer Stephen, but rather with more diligence he purfued his defign, and, in the most wary manner he could, he held Treaties with his Friends, and oftentimes went and returned from Rome with fuch celerity, that he Rill hewed himself to the Governour at the time limited: but at laft, thinking he had drawn in

thow to fecond him, he resolved no longer to

delay the trial, but gave order to his Friends

in Rome. That at a let time they foould pro-

vide a splendid Supper, whither all the Con-

pirators were invited; with order, That every

The Poet feems to forerel fomegreat Exploits of a Zaman Knight.

Stepie

A Sept

Service W.

בות לפנה

To a corps

es o Roman

לפים: פול

one should bring with him his most tru Friends, promiting to be with them by the time Supper was done. All was provide according to his directions, and Messer Sta phen came amongst them into the House when they Supt: So that as foon as they had do in Cloth of Gold, and with Chains and other Ornaments, to give him more Majerry and Reputation and having kindly embraced them he, with a long Oration, exhorted them to of good Courage, and dispose themselves to so glorious an Enterprize: Then he or dered how the Delign should be performed directing one Party, next Morning early, feize the Popes Palace, and the other, through the City, to call the People to Arms. But the matter came to the Popes Ear that Nigh (some affirm by the infidelity of the Contrators; others say, he knew Messer Stephan was in Rome) however it was, that very Supper Night the Pope caused Messer Stephen, and most of his Company to be apprehended, and afterwards, according to their deferts and follies, put to death. This disastrous end had he Delign, and certainly, however his intention may be commended, none but will blame his judgment; for though such Enterprizes may till the imagination with some shadow of Glory, they have alwaies certain loss attends their execution. The War had now held in Tolcany almost a year, and the Spring 1453, and Season for Armies drawing into the Field being pretty well advanced, the Lord Alexander Sforms

Mr. Stephe put to death,

1443.

Brother to the Duke, comes to affift the Greatines with 2000 Horse; with which the central Army being well recruited; they bely upon regaining what they had loft, with little trouble retook all their Towns hen they went to beliege Folano, which for ant of care in the Commissaries was facke that the Inhabitants being difperfed, they with great difficulty brought back to heir Habitations, till upon the grant of large d. The Fort of Vada was likewife regained, the Enemy, feeing they could not keep it, fook and burnt it. And whill thefe things are doing in the Florentine Army , the Ard Forces, not having the confidence to w nigh their Enemies, were retreated to-Lands of the Florentines, committing The King fail to make trial of other water affail the Enemy, by making them divide this Forces, and by new Troubles and AP Caribatorti was Lord of the Vale of Bagne, who alwaies, either out of Friendship or Obgation, had, together with his Ancestors, Souldiers or Pentioners to the Ploren This man held a private Corresponce with King Alphonfo, for the exchangin his Efface for another, to be given him by te King, in the Kingdom of Naples. This fign was revealed to the Florentines, who, and his intentions, fent a Messenger to ember him both of his, and his Predeceffors

68 J

d

nay lo-

icir lojind cld ceffors Obligations and to exhort him to continue faithful to the Commonwealth. Ge rando seemed to atlimire at it, and with deep Oaths and Excerations protested, so treaches rous a Thought never came in his mind, an that he would have gone himself to Florence, to remain there as a pledge of his Faith; but being himself indisposed, what he could not do himself he would make his Son do; whom he presently configns to the Ambassadour to carry as a Holtage to Florence. These words and these demonstrations, made the Florens tines believe Gerardo in the Truth and his Accusers vain Fellows and Lyars whereupon they remained fully fatistied. But Gerard with more instance continues his Treaty with the King, and having foon concluded it, the King fends Frier Puceio, a Knight of Ferufa lem, with sufficient Force to take possession of the Castle and Lands of Gerrardo. But the People of Bagna, being faithful to the Flores tines, very unwillingly promifed obedience to the Kings Officers. Frier Puccio had already taken possession of the whole Vale of Bagna fave only the Cafile of Corzano. There hap pened to be with Gerardo, at the time of his making this Relignation, one Anthony Gualandi a Pifan, both young and Couragious who was highly displeased at this Treason of Gerardo's, and having confidered the scituation on of the Fortress, and the countenance of the Garrison, whom he perceived diffatished and discontented, feeing Gerardo standing at the Gate of the Caltle to let in the Kings People! flips between him and the Gate, and with

The Vale of Bagno betrayed to the King.

A Tifan's fidelity to the Floren-

both

di Geria

otn

C CO

ds

CHE

his

pos

4

n of

the dill

e to

ady

EHS.

ap his

Ma-

PUS

n of

atil

the

ard

the

ple!

vith

ooth

oth his hands thrusts Gerards out, and comfinds the Guards to thut the Fortrels against The Report of which being heard in ingno, and other adjacent places all the People took Arms against the Arragonians, and ereting the Standards of Florence, drove them thence. As foon as this matter was heard at Herence, they imprisoned Gerardo's Son, that was delivered them as Hoftage ; and fending forces to defend that Country, reduced it from Principality to a Lieutenancy. But Gerardo Traytour both to his Lords and to his own son) though with difficulty escaped , leaving his Wife, Family, and all his Substance in his Enemies hands. This forces was much vaand in Florence; for, had the King had the betune to become Lord of it, he might with full expence at his pleasure have made incurins into the Vale of Tevere and Cafentino, and annoyed the Republick, that they could not he kept their Forces entire to oppole the Arragon Army, then lying near Siena. The Placentines, belides the preparations made in bely, to suppress the force of the adverse rentines League had fent Meffer Agnolo Acciaivolo their fend an Ambassador to the King of France, to Treat dour to with him, to give leave to Renate of Arjon to France. come into Italy, in favour of the Duke and them; whereby he might both defend his Friends, and being in Italy, watch some opprtunity to regain his Kingdom of Naples: towards which, they promited him affiltance of Men and Mony: So that whilft the War was managed, in the manner we have related,

in Lambardy and Tofener the Amballades made an Agreement with Renate, that he should, by the latter end of Juney come will 2400 Horse into Italy, and that at his arrive 20000 Florins, and afterwards, during th War, 10000 Florius a Month, Purfuant to th accord, he being about to pass into Italy w hopt by the Duke of Suvoy , and Marquis d Montferret, who, being Friends to the Vens tians, denyed him paffage. Whereupon the King was by the Florentine Ambaffadour ad vised, that, to add to his Friends Reputation he should return back to Florence, and by Se carry some of his Forces into Italy, and in the mean time, endeavour to perfivade the Kin of France, to Mediate with the Duke of San to grant passage to the rest: According to h Advice it was done; for Renate came by S into Italy, and his Forces at the King of France's instance were admitted into Sans King Renate was most honourably received Dake Francis, and the French and Italia Troops being joyned, affailed the Venetia with fo much vigour, that in a thort time the recovered all the Towns taken in the Territo ry of Cremona; and not therewith content possessed themselves of the greater part of the Brescian Country ; and the Venetian Armyno thinking it secure to keep the Field, was draw under the Walls of Brefcia. But Winter approaching the Duke thought hit to draw the Army into Quarters, affigning Piacenza for the Kings, Thus they day all the Winter 7453 without doing any thing, and when Spring

Renate of Anjou comes in-

O

出版を信が

dik

20

2000年至1000年至1000

th

を言葉

Sa gai

lia ion

they site out the

神事を

für

153

was come and "twas thought the Duke would into the Field, and drive the Venevian on of all their Territories on the Main, the hing let the Duke understand, that he must of meetity return to France. This determinaion feem'd as strange, as it was unlooks for by be Duke, and very lentibly it afflicted him; Rings departure, he could neither by Prayers gain for a Promises prevail, only he offered to leave part of his Forces, and send John his Son to serve the League in his stead. This going away of Renates did not at all displease the Plerentines, for having secovered their Caftles they stood no longer in fear of the King; and on the other fide, they defired the Duke hould recover no more than his own Lands Lombardy. Renate, after his departure, fent Son Jobn into Italy, who ftay'd not long in Lombardy, but came to Florence, where he was honourably received. The Kings departure made the Duke very inclinable to Peace, and the Venetians . Alphonfo, and the Florentines. being all weary, were extream willing to it; befides, the Pope had with all earnettness preffed, and did ftill press it: for this same year Milhomet, the Great Turk, had taken Confrantherple, and made himfelf Lord of all Greece, which extreamly frightned all Christians, and especially the Venerians and the Pope, who both thought they already felt his Arms inlealy, Wherefore the Pope prayed the Italian Powers to fend their Ambaffadors with authority to confirm an universal Peace: they all obeyed, and coming to dispute the merits of the Cause, 6 E 3 there

there was found some difficulty in the Treat the Venetians demanded from the Duke Co mons, and the Duke from them Bergamo, Brefa and Crema; fo that it was thought impossib to refolve this difficulty. But what at Rome in ny thought fo hard to be done at Milan and K nice proved ealie; for whill they were it treating Peace at Rome, the Duke and Veneria on the of April 1454 concluded it by vist of which, each was to be mutually restored the Towns and Lands they had before the War and the Duke had liberty to recover the Tow raken from him by the Duke of Savey, the Mar. quis of Montferrat, and other Italian Princes and a Months, time was allowed to ratife The Pope, Florentines, and with them the S Heff, and other leffer Potentates, ratified it wit in the time; and not content therewith, a Pere was concluded between the Florentines Dow and Venerians for 25 years. King Alphanlow the only Prince of Italy that feem'd diffatished with this Peace, thinking it formewhat entue ched upon his Reputation, being received into it not as a principal but as an adherent; when fore he kept long in suspence, and could not let his intentions be understood. But the Pope and other Princes having fent him many le lemn Embassies, he suffered himself to be per fwaded by them and especially by the Poperan together with his Son, entred into this League for 30 years and the Duke and King contracted double affiance, by intermariage of their Daugh ters to each others Son. Notwithstanding, that there might yet remain some seeds of War in Italy he would not confent to the Peace till the Col

Peace fully concluded:

Colleagues had granted him leave, that he inho without in mary to them, make War upon Genovefo, Gifmond Malatelta, and Aftorre rince of Kanasa. And now the accord comated Ferrand his Son who was still at Siera. nurned into the Kingdom, having by his Exdition into Tofcany gained no Dominion, bur a great many Men. This universal Peace ng thus brought to an iffue, all the fear reining was lead King Alphonfo's enmity to the Genous of hould diffurb it. The Venerians (according to their cultom when Peace is made) aving discharged Jacob Piccinine, one of their come be Leaders, he joyning hunfelf with leveral other gins fieth Captains out of employment, came to Romania, and from thence into the Country of Siena, where Jacob litting down, began a War, and took many Towns from the Sanef. In the becinning of these Troubles, and commencement of the year 1455 died Pope Nicholas, and to him succeeded Calistus the Third. This Pope to suppress the new and neighbouring War, under John Ventimiglia his General drew together as great a Power as fo fuddenly he could(and joyning with the Dukes and Florentine Forces, who were likewife brought on foot to suppress these disorders) fent them against Jacob Piecinine; and the two Armies engaging near Bolfena, though Ventimiglia was taken Prisoner, yet Jacob lost the day, making a flying Jacob motretreat to Castiglione in Pefcaia, and had not fere King Alphanfo supplied him with Mony, he had been utterly undone, which made many think this Attempt of Jacobs was made by the Kings Orders. Whereupon Al phonso supporting him-

felf

学区第 至 9 6 5

felf discovered to reconcile himself to the Co by this feeble War to have alienated himfe ordered things fo, that Jacob thould reflere the Sanefi their Towns; and they give hi 20000 Florins; and this Agreement made, I received Jacob into the Kingdom In thefe tim though the Pope bulied himself in bridling cobr Violencies, yet he was not warring to the order for the Support of Christianity, which beheld fadly oppressed by the Tack : when fore he fent into all Christian Provinces An baffadors and Preachers, to perfivade the Prin ces and People to Arm themselves in defend of their Religion, and with their Entres in Persons encourage an Expedition against the common Enemy: Whereupon in Florence great Alms were gathered, and mini wore the fire of the Crois as a badge, that they were read to ferve in Person: Many selenin Procession were likewise made; nor was there any thin wanting, either in the publick or private Per fons, to demonstrate, They would be of the first rank of Christians both for Counsel, Men and Mony, to forward fuch an Enterprize. But the heat of this Crossado was cooled by a new Accident which intervened. The Turk being with his Army at the Siege of Belgrade, Town scituate in Hungary on the River De nube, was by the Christian Arrhy routed, and himself wounded : So that the Pope and other Christians having outworn their Fears, conce

ved for the loss of Constantinople, the preparations for War became lukewarm, and by the death of John, the Vaived General in that

The Pope endeavors a War againft .he Turk

Victory

The special states

need Piccinine being put an en among Men Were quite la ared as if God half taken diem up the happened fuch productions Story before, and the effects of them will feel mirable to, and allowith future Generations. harbe 26 of August, an bour before day, f Adriatick Sea, opposite to Ancona, there and the face of two nailer, which croffing he See opposite to Pila, forced by superious po (whether natural or Supermitteral) was to nder and divided, and the broken pieces maly aritated, will forming to fight and b other, Sometimes mounting up to Heaten ad then again with great fury descending, and ten whirl'd about with violent motion, fill finding before them a most temper would Wind with suge and monstrous flashes and flames of fire and from shefe broken and confused Clouds the furious Winds, and frequent Lightnings, iffued a beadful note, more terrible than ever any Earthnake or Thunder that had ever been beard to the trous and amaxement of all Bebolders, w ould think nothing but that the World was at the End, and that Pire Mir, Earth and Water, wett returning into their first Chaos. Wherever the prodiction Storm reached, it produced frange and monstrom effects; but the most notable of all baysened about the Caffle of St. Caxiano. This Catills that part the Vals of Pila and Greve : This

Stronge Storms Tofear

This foreign Tempell palling between that Ca and the Borough of St. Androw, feated pun Same Hill souched ups St. Andrews, and only the passing threw down Jone Turrets and Chica new in St. Casciano; but about in much forman at it between one of those Towns and the other many Houses were levelled with the very ground and the Roofs of the Churches of St. Martin, Bagonolo and St. Maria della Pace, whalen they frood upon them, mere carried above a mil distance: a Carryer likewise, with bin Mules in she Velley; a good distance from the Road, wer found dead All the stubbarnest Oaks, and stronge Trees, that would not bend to this violence, wen not only torn up by the roots , but carried a good distance from the place where they great. So the when the Storm mus over men were firuck mit wonder and admiration to behold the Country waste and desolate Churches and Honles mined Poor people lamenting to fee their Habitation throws dimes, and under their Ruines their Beats and Eamily buried: fo that whoever fam or beard it, me affected with birriur and compassion. Certainly by this God intended rather to threaten than chaftize Tofcany; for had this Storm entred into any City, where Houses and Inhabitants were thick, as it did among the Oaks and Trees, and finall dispersed Houses, certainly it had caused that ruine and defirm Ction can hardly be imagined. But God was pleased with this small Example to revive in mens minds the mamory of his Power. But to return where I left. King Alphonfo was , as I faid before, diffatisfied with the Peace, and time the Wat he had, by Jugob Riccinino, moved without

out any reasonable occasion; had prochace apostant effect, he would make trial who ie would produce which by the Articles of League he had power to move And there in the year 1 456, he by Sea and Land tes War on the Genovele defiremento rettore State to the Aderna, and take it from the goff who now Governed; and in the mean ne fends Jacob Piccinino against Gifmond Ma inta, but he having placed mong Garrisons his Towns, cared not much for Jacob, so that this part the King did no great matter ; but Attempt on Genova created him and his lingdom more Wanthan he had carmind to ther Fregofa was now Doge of Genera, who suful he could not support himself against the lings power, refolved at least to give what he suld not keep himself, to one that could deand him from his Enemies, and might fome ine or other, for fuch a fervice, give him ? proportionable reward s to which end he fends Ambastadors to Charles the Seventh of France offering him the Dominion of General Charles scepts the offer, and fends John of Anjon fon King Renate to take possession of that City. who fometime before having left Florence was sturned to France a and Charles perswaded himself that John having learnt many of the Italian Customs, might Govern that City betterthan any other and he was likewise in hopes he might find an opportunity to make from thence an expedition to Naples to recover that Kingdom which Alfonfo had taken from his Father. John comes therefore to Genova, where he was received as Prince and all the Forces of

Ring Application of the Games o

The Pope deligns that Kingdom for

bus dies

THE STATE OF THE S

Di

that City and State delivered into his pollette This accident much displeased Alfans, who doubted he had engaged a too important E env spaint himfelf ; yet not at all difmayed he courageously purfues his enterprize and h "already brought his Armado under Wills Me ne to Perte Fine; where feized with a fulde diffemper he dies. By his death, John and the Generale were delivered from this War Farned who forceded his Father in the King dom, grew extreamly fuspicious; for having now an Enemy of fuch reputation in Italy, a being jealous of many of his Barons, whose fide lity he doubted and whofe inclination to novel ty he knew, he was not without cause fearfi least they hould take part with the French he likewife feared the Pope (whose ambition he was fentible of) least whilit he was yet un fetled in his Kingdom, he should endeavour deprive him of it: All his hopes was in the Duke of Milan, who was no less concerned for the Kingdom, then Ferrand himself; for he was jealous thould the French become mafters of it, they might likewife grasp at his estates, to which he very well knew they laid a claim Wherefore no fooner was Atphonfo dead, but that Duke fent Letters and Forces to Ferrand these to give him aid and reputation, those to exhort him to be couragious; affuring himbe would not in any necessity forfake him. The Pope after the death of Alphonfo, deligned to give that Kingdom to Peter Ladowick Bergi his Nephew: but to give his delign a mon

specious pretence, he declared, that he intend

ed to reduce it under that empire of the Church

The Pope defigns that Kingdom for his Nephro but dies,

and

--

Singapi Singapi Soins Bi

LABCANT

gain Na

25534

to that purpose personated the Dake at ive any incomagement to Percand one in thole Towns he was already pollen of Kingdom. But in the height of thefe oughts, and contrivances of new troubles, feeond, a Sanefe, of the Family of the Pical sing, and called Enem: this Pope imploying his thoughts for the good of Christendom of the honour of the Church, fetting afide all alvate interest and passion, at the intreaty of the Duke of Milan, crowns Perrand King, deing he might rather preferve the peace of by by maintaining him in his possession, than ther by favouring the French claim or ultirothat Kingdom (as Calianu would have lone) to himself: in requital of which favour rand makes Anthony, the Popes Nepher Prince of Malphi, and gives him his natural tinghter to wife, he likewife reflores Beneven ham and Terracina to that Church. And now haly feemed in perfect quiet, and the Pope difpoled himself to promote an expedition against the Turks, as Culium had begun to do, when there happened a diffention, between the Free fund John Lord of Genova; which kindled a more important War, then any had bin before. Petrino Frigofi was retired to a Cattle of his upon the Riviera; not thinking himfelf recompenied by John of Amou in any proportion to edeferts of himfelf or his family, who had bin the only influments to make him Prince of that City, fo that at last they came to open entirity This was very pleasant to Ferrand, as the only meanes and part to his fecurity; wherefore he **Supplied**

The Fregof astempts to feize Go-

13 6 5 6

de de la companya de

rsd

in.

e to

nh

Chi

d to

and

Expediti-OR to regain Na-

implied Petrim with Men and Mony, hoping by him to drive John from that Stateswhere John having intelligence, fends into France in aid with which he marches to encounter Pend so, but found him by the great affiltance give him to ftrong he thought it best to retreat, and guard the City: Into which Petrino one night enters, and takes possession of some places but day appearing, he was by Johns forces en countred, and flain, and most of his People kill'd or taken. This Victory encouraged Jak to venture an Expedition against the King dom; and in October, in the year 1459, with great Armado he fails to Baia, and thence proceeds to Sella, where he was by that Duke received. The Prince of Terranto, the Aquilan and many other Cities and Princes joyned will Tobn; so that the whole Kingdom was in con fusion; which Ferrand seeing, had recourse to the Pope and Duke; and that he might have the fewer Enemies, makes Peace with Gifmon de Makatesta; at which Jacob Piccinino was to angry, being a profest Enemy of Gifmonds, the deferting his Service he joyns with John. Ferrand therefore lends Mony to Frederick Lord of Urban, and with as much speed as he could gathers together (for those times) a good Ar my, and on the River Sarni faces his Enemy leige Gee but in the ingagement Ferrand was routed and most of his best Captains taken: After the defeat, the City of Naples and some few Prin ces and Towns, continued faithful to Ferrand but the greatest part yielded to John. Jaco Piccinino would have had John immediately upon this Victory, have marched directly up to ballach)

the interest

tha

2.344

Naples, and possess himself of the Fleat of the ingomentur John would not saying; Fleat and it possess by himself of all the other part of the Deons, and then affault binsy thinking, that if were Mafter of all the other Towns, Naples would foon be gained. But raking this courle he not away Victory from himfelf for he did not maider, that the Members more easily follow the Head, than the Head the Members. After is defeat, King Ferrand had faved himself in Moples; whither those of his Subjects, that were driven from their Estates, fled to him for helter; and, in the gentlest manner he could, e gathers Mony and makes a little head of an army: he fends affeth for Aid to the Pope nd Duke, who both supplyed him in a larger minner, and with more expedition than behre. So that now grown firong, he marches our of Naples, and having begun to recover Reputation, recovers fome of the left Towns. Whilf War raged thusin the Kingdom, hapmedan Accident, which took from John both grown is Reputation and Power to overcome. The from John Generales weary of the coverous and infolent of some Government of the French, took Arms against the Kings Governour, and forced him to fly nto the little Cafele: In this Attempt the Adrini and Fregofi were agreed, and supplied by the Duke of Milan with Men and Mony, as well to recover the State as defend it. So that King Renate, who was coming with a Fleet to the affiltance of his Son, hoping he might remin Genova, by means of the little Cattle, as he was landing his Forces, was fo totally rented. that he was forced with thame to return to If derie sed to had ad Province

to

ple control of the co

Book V

Previous The News coming to the King of Monter quies daniered John of Anjan's he would not give steen, but for forne to maintained the War, saided by shore Bare who for their Rebellion against Ferror thought they should find no pardon. At le affect sundry, Assidents, a pitche Battle four het ween the two Royal Armies , in the year 14634 near Trojan whotein John was de feated wes was not the loss of the Battle of that confequence as the loss of Jacob Pineinia who deferted him and joyned with Ferrend to the having no Forces to rely upon, he'm France, This War lafted four years and he hi that by his own Neglect, which the Valour his Souddiers had feveral times wen. In the War the Florentines were not at all concern though two it is, King John of Arragon, new ly saided to that Kingdom, by the death Alphonfe, did by his Ambaffador request the to affifthis Nephew Ferrand; as they were of liged by the League made with Alphonfi h Father. To which the Florentines answere They were not bound to holp the Son in a Wa the Father had brought upon bimself; and the as it was begun without their Counsel, fa it how he continued and ordered without their Aid Whereupon the Ambaffadors, on their King behalf, protested the penalty of the Obligation and Damages, and in a rage departed the City So that the Florentines were all the time of this War as to Borreign A ffairs, in peace ; but they enjoyed not that quiet within , as in the next Book thalf be fully doctared on a set set The End of the Sinth Book

Jahn driven out of the Kingdom,

es I mozi

SW SILL MON

Florentine History

Written by

CHOLAS MACHIAVEL

BOOK VII.



Hole who read the former Books may perhaps imagine that a writer of the Florentines Affairs, may have extended too largely the relations of things done in Lombardy, and the

angdom; yet, neither hitherto have I for shall I for the surre avoid such Narratures, for though I never promised a History of Italy, yet I judge it proper to make a station of the most notable things happened in that Province, because the omitting tem would render our History more observe, and consequently much less delighted, especially since from the actions of over people and Princes of Italy offentimes tole those wars, in which the Florenties are forced to concern themselves, thus

2

from the war between John of Aujon, and King Ferdinand, proceeded that enmity and implacable hat red, which enfued afterwards between Firthbund and the Florentines, and particularly between Ferdinand and the Family of the Medici, for the King complained not only, that himself was not affifted in that war, but that his Enemies were by the Florentines favoured, and his displeasure therefore conceived against them was the occasion of exceeding many inconveniences, as shall beteafter be declared; and because I have written at large fuch matters as have happened without the City, till the year 1463, 'twill be requisite for the better relating those troubles, which in that time happened within the City to look forme year backwards. But first, according to my custom let me by way of discourse say, that who ever thinks any Republick can be nited, flatters himself with a vain hope; true it is that some divisions are prejudicial and others again beneficial to a Commonwealth. Those are attended with prejudice and damage, which are with Factions and Followers accompanied, and those produce benefit and advantage which without Factions and Followers are maintained. Since then no Founder of a Common-weal can To establish it that no enmities arise in it, he ought at least to provide, that no Factions get head, to which end he is to confider that in all Cities, Citizens gain themselves reputation either by publick or private means:

L

nd nd in-

ed by

the es, use or the service of the se

pe ; ial, on-

ons

10-

out not can be

ons

det

VÖ

ate

ns:

means: publick Renown is attained to by victory in the field, by the taking of Towns. by the careful and discreet discharging of embaffies, or by the giving to the State prudent and fuccessful Counfels: private means by which reputation is attained to, are gratifying particular Citizens, defendng them from punishment, supplying them with money, advancing them undefervedly to honour and employment, and entertainand pleafing the Commonalty with ports and gifts; and from hence arifes parties, followers and factions. And though reputation thus attained may offend, yet may likewise be useful, when not incumbred with factious followers, because it is aly founded on private good; for though is impossible by the wildom of man to revent animolities from arising among such Citizens, yet having no followers, that for their private ends adhere to them, they cannot prejudice the Common-wealth, but may well advantage it, for in aspiring to their own ends, they must necessarily advance the interest of the State, and by being contirually watchful over one anothers actions, they take care that no Law nor civil Conditutions be infringed. The enmittees of Florence were always accompanied with factions and followers, and were therefore always prejudicial, nor was any victorious faction longer united than the adverse party continued in some power, but as soon as their enemies were quite extinct, then they 7 A 3 divided 4

divided among themselves, having no fears to restrain, nor rule nor order to bridle them. The Faction of Cofmo de Medici go in the year 1434 the Superiority, and because the oppressed party had still some life, and was supported by many mighty men they through fear continued united and tolerably quiet, fo long as they lived free from errour and foundal, nor had by finister dealings incurred the hate of the people; fo that whenever the Government had occasion of the people to re-establish their Authority. they found them always ready to give unto the chief of that Faction the Balia, or what ever Authority they defired, and thus from the year 1434 to 1455, being one and twenty years, they were fix times confirmed in the Balia by the usual election of the Councils. There were in Florence (as we have feveral times before mentioned) two mighty Citizens Cosmo de Medici and Nen Capponi, of which Neri was one who had by publick means attained his reputation, to that he had many Friends, but few Followers; on the other fide Cosmo having both by publick and private ways aspired to his greatness, had Friends and Followers in abundance. These two during their lives continuing united, eafily obtained of the people what ever they defired, because they had love mixed with their Authority, but in the year 1455 Neri being dead, the Fa-Ction found it difficult to be confirmed in their Authority, and Cosmo's particular Friends bolivib

Cosmo de Medici, Neri Capponi.

t

T

O

5

Friends (and those of the most powerful in the State) were the occasion of it, for flanding no more in awe of the adverse pary now quite extinct, they had a defire to diminish his Authority, which proved the beginning of those divisions that afterwards in the year 1466 happened, for those to whom the Government appertained, in the Councils (where they freely debated the publick administrations) advised, that it was convenient the Balia should not be reaffumed, but that the purses should be filled up, and the Magistrates chosen by lot according to the favour and method of the former imburfations. To allay this humour Cosmo had but one of these two remedies to choose, either with those Followers which still adhered to him to seize the Government by force, and compel all the reft to submit, or else to let matters proceed, and in time let his Friends know, that they deprived not him, but themselves of their Reputation and Government; of which two remedies he chose this last, for he knew that by this way of choice, the purfes being full of his Friends, he could not run any hazard, and might at pleasure resume the Government. The City thus again reduced to the choofing Magistrates by lot, the universality of the Citizens believed they had regained their Liberty, and that the Offices fould no more be supplied according to the will of the mighty men, but as they themfelves thought fit; fo that now one great 7 A 3

die

got ule

ınd

ney

auc

m

of ity,

un-

the

en

by fo

by

n•

0-

ney

auc

2

10

lar

ds

mans followers, and then anothers were beaten, and they who used to behold their houses full of fuitors and presents, now be held them empty both of men and gifts they likewife faw themselves become equal with those which had been accounted far inferiour to them, and their equals were become their Superiours; neither were they respected nor honoured, but many times laugh'd at and derided , and in the Street and Market places the people took a freedom to discourse what they pleased, either of them, or the Common-wealth, fo that they foon became sensible not Cosmo, but they had had loft the Authority; all which Colmo diffembled, and when ever any think pleasing to the people was debated, he was the first to promote it : but that which most of all tettified the great men, and gave Cofthe an opportunity of being again fought after, was the reviving of the Catafto of 1427. whereby Taxes were to be imposed by rule of Law, and not by the will of men, This Law paffed, and Commmissioners to put it in execution elected, made all the great Citizens affemble together, and going to Cosmo, intreat him that he would be pleased to rescue both them and himself from the hands of the people, and reftore the State to that reputation which might increase his power, and recover their henour, to which Cofmo made answer, that he was content, provided the Law were made orderly by confent of the people, and not

C

4

O

D

3

6

G

8

2

h

1

1

b

1

Ü

1

震

very

hei

be

ifts

ual in-be-

biev

mes

eed

ree-

her

bat but

icz

Was Bon

of

CII.

to he

ng

bé

380

ht

o-

nd nd

t

not by any force, for otherwise he would ave no concern in it, nor faould it once be moved; they therefore attempted the Councils by a Law to estabilh a new Balia, but obtained it not, whereupon all the great men returned to Cosmo, and in most numble manner befought him to confent to 1 Parliament, which Cofmo atterly denyed out of defign to make them fensible of the errour they had committed, and because Donato Cochi then Gonfaloniere of Justice, would without his confent have furnmoned a Parliament, Cofmo procured him to be to Coffed and Corned at by the Senators that fate with him in Office, that growing mad upon it, he was fent home to his house for a Lunatick, nevertheless left he should at length suffer things to run fo far out of order that they would not so easily when he had a mind to it, be retrieved : Luke Pitti Luke Pitti (a felf-willed daring man) being elected Gonjaloni Goufaloniere of Justice, he judged it convenient to leave the whole management of the affair to his discretion a that if there happened any miscarriage, the fault might be imputed to Luke, and not to him; Luke at his entrance into the Magistracy, made feveral propositions to the people for xeviving the Bolia, and being refuled it, threatened those which sate in the Councils with haughty and injurious words, and foon after proceeded to deeds, for in August 1453, on the vigils of S. Laurence having filled the Palace with armed men, and fummonin g 7 A 4

Girolamo Machiavel confined.

moning the people into the Piazza, he made them by force confent to that, which voluntarily they would never have agreed to: the Government thus reassumed, and the Balia created, the chiefest of the Magistraey (by the advice of a few) to begin that Government with terror, which they had gotten by violence, confined Meffer Girola. mo Machiavel with some others, and many they deprived of their Offices; Girolamo for not obeying his confinement was proclaimed Rebel, and going up and down I taly, stirring up all Princes and States against his Countrey, was in Lunigiana by the treachery of one of the Senators there, taken, and brought to Florence where he died in prison. This kind of Government for eight years that it lasted, was most violent and insupportable, for Cosmo through age and diffemper grown weak and indisposed not being able to give that attendance he was wont on the publick Affairs, a few Citizens at their pleasure prey'd upon, and spoiled the City: Luke Pitti as a reward of his good service done to the Commonwealth, was knighted, and he to testifie no less gratitude to the State, than the State had done to him, would have those formerly called Priors of the Trades (that at least they might referve the Title of what they had lost possession of) now to be called Priors of the Liberty, and whereas the Gonfalonieres used formerly to be seated on the right hand of the Rectors or Governours he

(ee

lic

be

rat

be

ly Ci

bri

po

100

Di

of

ve

fid

中面面

mi

211

から

the

w

ha

öf

韻

th

ch

cd

he

2-

iat

ad

al

my O-

L

nft

he

2

cd or

nt

ge d.

he

H

nd

of

n-10

te

rel

ft

y

e SL

d

he ordered they should hereafter take place in the midft of them; and that God might fem to be a partaker in these actions, publiek procession and prayers were ordered to be made with thanklgivings for the reftoration of their Honours. Meffer Luke had been both by the Senate and Colmo very richly presented, and after their examples the Citizens were even at strife who should first bring his gift, fo that it was generally suppoled the whole value of his presents could not amount to less than twenty thousand Duckats, which raifed him to fuch a heighth of reputation, that not Cofmo but Lake go- Luke Pini's verned the City, & fwelled him to that con-fately builfidence, that he began to erect two Princely and magnificent Palaces, one in Florence, the other at Rucciano about a mile distant fom the City: but that in Florence was much larger and more stately than ever till that time had been attempted to be built by my private Citizen; and to bring it to perfection he was thrifty of all advantages, and fored not to make use of any extraordinary means, for not only particular Citizens and private persons presented him, and supplyed him with necessaries for the building but the whole Commonalty and people laid their hands to the work; and besides every Bandito, Thief, or Affaffinate, or any other offender that flood in fear of punishment, if he were any way useful to the work might in these Fabricks find a secure Sanctuary; though the other Citizens built not like him

yet were they no less tyrannical and rapa-

War in the Lingdom &

Romania.

no enemy from abroad to oppose it, it was destroyed and wasted by its own Citizens. During these Transactions, happened as hath been faid before, the war in the Kingdom, and the Pope in Romania had fome skirmishes with the Family of the Malatefti, from whom he had a great mind to take Rimini and Celens, then in their possessions to that in this enterprise, and in studying how to carry on a war against the Turks Pope Pin spent his Papacy: whilest Fla rence continued in its troubles and divisions. The first breach in Cofmo's party began in the year 1455 upon the occasion before recited, which by his prudence as we have declared, was for that time composed. but in the year 1464 Cosmo's Distempers and weakness increased so violently that he doparted this life; both his friends and ene mies lamented his death, for those who for reasons of State loved him not, beholding the extortion of the Citizens, whileft he yet lived (out of reverence to whom the were fornewhat 'restrained) feared now that he was gone they should be utterly reined and destroyed, for in Peter his for they had little confidence, who though he was a good man, yet being both fickly and unfetled and raw in the Government, he was forced to bear respect to others, who now run on in a full carriere of rapine and oppression, having no reins to curb or seftrain

Death of

th

gr

on of

the bui

for

Ma

ď.

Ger

in t

of .

Gun

Ch

ing

orn

wh

ma

arc

1 re

a-

25 15.

8-

ne ti

.

ng ks,

los

BS

in Off

we ed.

and

do

ne for

ing

her

10

114 Con

he

and he

and

101 rain frain them. Cofmo was the most famous and renowned Citizen (not being a man war) that ever had lived in the memory of mankind, either in Florence or any other City what ever, not only exceeding all oher Citizens of his time in Riches and Auhority, but likewise in Liberality and Prudence; for that which among many other admirable qualities, entitled him most of all to the being effeemed the prinripal person of his Countrey, was his being liberal and magnificent, there scarce being a Citizen that lived in any repute, but he had lene great fums of money to, and oftentimes upon information of the necessities of persons ofquality without being asked, he supplyed their occasions; nor were his magnificent buildings less evidences of the greatness of is mind, for besides his reparations he founded the Convents and Churches of & Thefamptu Mark, and S. Laurence, and the Monastery ing of Cofof S. Verdiano in Florence, the Church of mode Mileici. Gerolamo, and the Abbey thereto belonging the mountains of Fiefole, and a Church of Friars Minors in Magello, and moreover in the Abbeys of the Holy Crofs of the Servi of Agnoli and S. Ninuato, he erected many sumptuous Altars and Chappels, all which Churches and Chappels, belides the erecting them he endowed and furnished with all ornaments necessary for Divine Service, to which facred Buildings and Dedications may be added his private Fabricks, whereof are fill extant one Palace in the City more than

than becoming a person of his quality, and four in the Countrey at Careggio, Fiefoli, Cafaggivolo and Febrio, all houses fitter for Princes than private Citizens, and leaft his magnificent edifices in Florence should no give him fufficient Renown, he built in 76 rufalem an Hospital for poor and disease Pilgrims, in which work he expended van fums of money, yet though these Palaces and all his actions and works were forms ieffical, and he lived in Florence like Prince, yet all his deportments were tempered with fo much Prudence, that he ne ver exceeded the bounds of common medefly and civil order, for in his convertation on, house-keeping, attendance, and marrying his children, he furpaffed not any other discreet and civil Citizen, for he knew that an extraordinary pomp and train, which is dayly viewed and gazed at, contracts more envy than folid actions covered with hone modely; when therefore he was to match any of his fons, he fought not the alliance of Princes, but married John to Cornelis of the Family of the Alexandri, and Pen to Lucretia of the Family of the Tornabuon, and of his Grandchildren by Peter, he married Bianca to William Pazzi and Anne to Bernard Ruffelai; and as to intrigues of State, the affairs of neighbouring Princes, and civil Government at home, none of his time were equal to him for intelligence, by which means only, in fo great variety a Fortune, in fo giddy a City, and fuch in REGI constant

th

ti di

m w di

ñ

ne to

to th

an

and

for his

not Ja alo

vaf

aces ma-

ce d

em

ne.

me

fati-

m-

the

that

hB

OT

neft

rtdi

nce

elis

eter

ont,

nar

s of

ces,

of

nce.

y of

ant

14

confrant Citizens, he preserved himself in he Government for one and thirty years. for his Wildom gave him forelight, and difcerning inconveniences afar off, he either prevented them, or if they grew upon him, made fuch preparation they could not offend him, whereby he not only suppressed domestical and civil ambition, but prevaild over many Princes with fuch happy prudence and success, that who ever joined in league with him and his Countrey, became it least equal, if not superjour to their enemies, and who ever opposed them, lost either their time, money or estate; which the Venetians can sufficiently tellifie, who when united with him against Philip had always the better, but disunited were first by Philip ind afterwards by Francis oppressed and wercome; and when they joined with Allonfo against the Common-wealth of Florence. Cosmo by his sole credit reduced both Naples and Venice to fuch straits for want of money, that they were forced to accept what peace he pleased: and indeed all the difficulties Cosmo encountred with, both without and within the City had iffues glorious to himself, and disgraceful to his enemies, so that civil discords always added to his Authority at home, and war without to his renown and reputation abroad, for to the Dominions of the Common-wealth he annexed Borgo a Sando Sepulchro, Montidoglio, Cafentino and Valdibagna. Thus by his virtue and fortune he oppressed his enemies.

は他のなからからかんか

Se

for asi

to it it is

to his wind in

322

mies, and advanced his friends. He was born in the year 1389 on the feat of S. Colmo and Damian, the beginning of his la was full of troubles, as appears by his banishment, imprisonment and danger of death. After the ruine of Pope John with whom he went to the Council of Confiance he was forced to lave his life by flying in disquise; but from forty years of age he lived very happily, fo that not only those who adhered to him in publick administrations, but all they who managed his monies throughout Europe were partakers of his felicity, whereby many Family lies in Florence were raised to great riches, as the Tornabuoni, Benci, Portinari and Safleti, and indeed every one depending on his counfel and fortune enriched themselves but though in building Churches, and distributing of Alms, and doing good Offices he was at a continual expence, yet he would oft-times lament to his friends, that he could never spend so much to the honour of God, but he still found himself in his books a debtor. He was but mean of stature, and brown of complexion, yet of a very venerable presence, not learned, but very eloquent and of excellent natural parts, officious to his friends, charitable to the poor, edifying in conversation, wary in counsel, speedy in execution, and in his speeches and replyes witty, yet grave. In his first banishment Rinaldo sending to tell him that the Hen was fet, he replyed, That (he d-ar-ni-

4 S P. 2

hat ho-in

t of

but

rts.

the in

his

In

tell

bat

he

de could batch but ill fo far out of ber neft; and to fome other Rebels, who told in they could not fleep, he faid, he believed it fince they bad rob'd themselves of their reft, of Pope Pius perswading Princes to take Arms against the Turk, he faid, an ald man undertakes a young emerprize, To the Venetian Ambaffadours who with thefe of King Alphonfo carne to Florence to make their complaints against the Republick, he newed his bare head, and having asked mem what colour It was off, they answered white, to which he replyed, Ere long your Senators will have heads as white as mine: fome few hours before his death, his wife sking him why he thut his eyes, to afe them wit, replyed he: forme Citizens after his return from Banishment, telling him that e spoiled the City, and offended God by banishing so many honest men, he replyed better a City Spoiled, than lost, and that the gards of shorn cloth made an bough man, and that Estates were not defended with Beads in mens bands: which fayings gave occasion to his enemies to afperfe him, that he loved himself more than his Countrey, and this world more than the other: many other of his fayings might be recorded, which as innecessary I omit. Cosmo was moreover great lover and advancer of learned men. and therefore brought Argiropolo the Gretien, one of the learnedst men of those times to Florence, that he might instruct the Florentine youth in the Greek Tongue, and other

Machiavel's Hiftory Book VII

other friences he was skilled in he enter tained in his own house Marsilius Fiein that second Father of the Platonick Philoso-phy, whom he intirely loved, and to the end he might with better conveniency apply himself to his study, and Cosmo have him always ready at hand, he gave him a dwelling house near his own Palace of Carreggie. This, his Wildom, these his Riches, this manner of Living and this Fortune were the causes that in Florence he was both love and feared by his Fellow-Citizens, and hi the Princes not only of Italy, but of all En rape marvellously esteemed, leaving four dations to his Posterity that they might virtue equal him, and in Fortune far exce him, and attain to as great Authority and Reputation as himself had enjoyed in Fla rence, por only in that City, but in Christendon. However towards the latter end of his life he underwent fome very len fible afflictions, for of his two fons Penn and John, the last in whom he placed all his confidence dyed, and the other was infirm and unapt to manage either publick or private affairs; whereupon cauling himfelf a ter his lons death to be carried about his house he washeard fighing to fay, This boule is too great for fo Small a Fantily. His generous mind was likewise troubled, that he had not as he thought fufficiently enlarged the Florenine Dominions with fome honourable conquest, and it grieved him the more, be caule he perceived himfelf to have been de CELVE

center

VIL

Francis Sforza, who and him while he was yet Earl, that all on as he had made himself Duke of Mi-, he would win Luces for the Florestines the failed him, for having got the Dukem, his mind changed, and he thought best to enjoy that Dominion in quiet, and erefore performed not his promile, either Cosmo or any other, nor waged any wars ce, which fretted Cosmo exceedingly that should have taken so much pains, and en at so much charge to advance an insteful and perfidious man, he likewile nd that the infirmities of his body made n incapable of following either publick of vate affairs with that vigour and diliice he was wont, so that he beheld both and the other go to ruine, the City filed by its own Citizens, and his efface le accidents disquieted him towards his ter end, yet he dyed full of Glory, and the heighth of Renown both at home and road, all the Citizens, and all Christian oces condoling his death with his fon He was buried with great folemnithe whole City attending his Herle to Church of S. Laurence, where he was med, and by publick command in Sculover his Tomb he was filled THE THER OF HIS COUNTRY. in recording the Virtues and Actions of I have imitated those who write 7 B

France Duke of Milan becomes Lor

erlad the be

of the second of

ははずいかのかん

it fa

2.60分的

at We

4664646

the lives of Princes, and not those wh write general Histories, let none admire it. for having been to extraordinary a man he deferves to be mentioned with extraords pary Honour. Whilest Florence and Ital were in this state and condition, Lewis King of France was affaulted with sierce an powerful war raised by his Barons, win affiffance of Francis Duke of Britan and Charles Duke of Burgundy, which kee him to employed, that he could afford a affiftance to John Duke of Anjon in his ex pedition against Genous and the Kingdon yet judging he flood in need of some one help, the City of Savona remaining in the power of the French, he makes France Duke of Milan Lord of that City, with letting him know that if he pleased he mig with his free lieve possess himself of Genon which Francis willingly hearkens to, an either by the reputation of the Kings frient thip, or by the favour of the Adorni make himself Lord of Genoua, and that he migh not appear ingrateful to the King for h kindnels, he fends into France his elde fon Galeazzo with fifteen hundred horse to his affiftance. Thus Ferdinand of Are gon and Francis Sforza became the one Du of Lombardy and Prince of Genova, and fl other King of all the Kingdom of Naples, and having contracted an alliance together they begun to confult how they might to tifie then felves in their estates, so as the might live, and securely enjoy them, and afte

Duke of
Milan becomes Lord
of Genova.

fter their deaths leave them peaceably to heir Heirs; and upon the point they judgd it necessary that the King should secure himself of those Barons, who in the wars with John of Anjon had fought against him, and that the Duke should endeavour to exirpate the Braccefebi his natural and implacable enemies, and who under Jacob Picciwere grown into great reputation, for he was now the greatest Captain remaining altaly, and having no setled Dominion. was requifite for those who had Estates to land upon their Guard, and especially the Duke who from example given by himself, dged he could neither securely enjoy his Dominions himself, nor leave them peacebly to his fons so long as Jacob lived; herefore the King fought an accomodaion with his Barons, and to affure himfelf them, managed things so politickly that had happy fuccess in it, for the Princes tho yet waged war with the King faw their manifest ruine, if they longer held out, and they came to an agreement must be left a discretion, so that though at first they were somewhat doubtful, yet because men aways strive to avoid certain mischiefs, it follows that Princes may the easier deceive those of leffer power, so these Princes seeing the manifest danger of the war, trusted to the Kings word, and yielding themselves into his hands, were afterwards by him in andry wayes, and upon various occasions at off, which to terrified Facob Piccinino,

in

W

hi

w:

ing

go by dir for

dea

of

the

vin

exp

ho whi

pro beg

pur

who then lay with his Forces at Solmons that to fecure himself, and take from the King all opportunities of oppressing him by the mediation of his friends he treated reconciliation with the Duke, who having made him fuch offers that he could not expect greater; Jacob throws himself into his hands, and accompanied only with one hundred Horse goes to Milan to present himself to Duke Francis. Facob had long time been a Soldier under his Father and with his Brother first for Duke Philip. and afterwards for the people of Milas fo that by long converse he had gained many friends in that City, and a general good will, which his present condition increased. for the prosperous Fortune, and the present power of the Sforzeschi had begotten them envy, and the advertity and long ablence of Facob had created in the peoples minds compassion towards him, and a longing fair defire to see him, all which appeared at his pro coming, for few of the Nobles but went to meet him, & the streets where he passed were thronged with people defirous to fee him, fet and the fame of his Arms was every where Prin discoursed of, which Honours hastened his Man ruine, for they blew the coals of the Dukes Dul jealousie, and instamed his desire of getting and rid of him, which the more covertly to do, Exp he declared his pleasure to have the mar-tiage solemnized with *Drussana* his natural Daughter, to whom *Jacob* had been long since contracted, and then agrees with *Fer*dinand foor

m. da

ng

X-

nte one

cnt

er,

lip.

las.

maboo.

nce

nds ging

his

dinand to entertain him as his Captain Geperal with one hundred thousand Florins imprest: after which conclusion faceb with an Ambaffadour from the Duke and his wife Drusiana goes to Naples where he was joyfully and honourably received, and for many days entertained with much feafting and jollity; but having asked lieve to to to Solmona where his Forces lay, he was by the King invited into the Castle, and dinner ended, together with Francis his for made prisoner, and shortly after put to death. Thus our Princes of Italy jealous of that virtue in others, they had not in fed themselves, strove to extirpate it, till hafent ving utterly rooted out all feeds of it, they exposed this Province to that ruine, which hortly wasted and destroyed it. Mean while Pope Pius having composed the af-firs of Lombardy, seeing the time was Pope Pius proper for it, there being an universal peace, an Expedibegan to promote a war against the Turks, tion against the Turks, tion against the Turks.

Turks, tion against the Turks, the Turks.

Turks, tion against the Turks, the Turks.

Turks, the Turks, the Turks, the Turks. here Princes promised either money or men, and This Matthew King of Hungary, and Charles lakes Duke of Eurgundy offered to go in person, ting and were by the Pope made Generals of the Expedition; and so far the Pope proceeded, that he left Rome and went to Ancona, where he had ordered the general Rendezing, the Venetians having promised Shipting to transport the Army into Sclavonia; soon after the Popes arrival at Ancona there 7 B 3 affembled

affembled thither fuch multitudes of people that all the provisions of that and the neighbouring Countrey would not suffice, but hunger began to oppress the Army, belide there wanted money to buy things necessary, and weapons to arm the naked, and Matthe and Charles neither of them appeared, and the Venetians fent only one of their Captain with some Gallies, rather to show the Pomp, or to boast they had kept their faith than to transport such an Army. Here the Pope being old and weak, in the hear these troubles and disorders dyed, after whole death every one returned home This Pope dead, in the year 1465 Pa the second a Venetian born, was elected the Papacy: and to the end other Prince palities of Italy might likewife change the Government, the year following die Francis Sforza Duke of Milan, after has Sforms Duke ing been fixteen years Lord of that Duke dome, and Galeago his fon was clared Duke. The death of this Prince made the divisions of Florence increase. Cooner come to effect. After Cosmo's des his fon Peter remaining Heir both of hi Riches and Honours, called unto him Di tifalvi Neroni a man of great Authority a Reputation among the chiefest of the Co zens, and in whom Cofmo reposed so mus trust, that at his death he ordained Peter ! have recourse to him for advice in the m nagement both of his private and public affairs: Peter acquaints Diotifalvi with h father

Death of E Milan. l

ti ć

8

ai

2

Бi

m

K

fic

an

CO bo

he

Ĝi

of

Re

wa ord

OH CH

Fi

ber

VC

ple

ide

art ber

tains

thei

aith

e the

1 (afte

OTT

Pan d t

rinci the

dyd har-tuke

ring

Chi

Die

y 20 Cit

mnd

er t

919

tha

fathers bequeft, and the confidence he had in him; and that he might be obedient to his father as well dead as living, craves his counfel as well to the management of his eltate, as to the Government of the City; and to begin with his own private affairs, he made all his Factors and Ministers give in unto him the state of their Accounts, to the end feeing the order and differder of every thing, he might as his prudence Mould dictate, advile him ; Meffer Diotifalvi promised his utmost diligence, but having viewed and well examined all the Accounts. and finding in them great diforders; like man that had more respect to his own ambinon, than to the love of Peter, or gratitude to his father, he imagined that he might eafily rob Peter of his Reputafion, and cheat him of that inheritance and power his father had left him; to which purpose he comes to Peter with a counsel that seemed very just and reasonable. but under which his ruine lay concealed: he declared to him the diforder of his afof necessity provide to uphold his Credit and Reputation in the State, telling him there was no honester way to remedy those dif-orders than by calling in the monies were owing to his father, as well by ffrangers as Citizens; for Cofmo to gain Followers in Florence, and Friends abroad was very liberal in lending his money, fo that by that very means he became creditor to fums of

24

Confpiracy against the Medici.;

no small importance: Peter thinks the counfel good and honest, willing to repair himfelf with his own, but no fooner did he cause these moneys to be demanded, but the Citizens refented it, as if he had not asked his own, but demanded what was theirs reviling him as ingrateful and covetous and without any respect railing against him. whereupon Diotifalvi feeing Peter by his advice fallen into this universal and popular difgrace, joined himself with Luke Pini Agnolo Acciavolo and Nicholas Soderini, determining to take from Peter both Reputation and Authority. These men were by divers respects moved to this Design: Lake defired to succeed in Cosmo's stead, being already grown fo great, that he scorned to be observant to Peter; Diotisalvi who knew Luke unfit to be the head of the Government, imagined if Peter were removed, the whole reputation might in a fhort time fall upon him; Nicholas Soderini was defirous that the City should live more at freedom. and the Magistrates govern without controul; Meffer Agnolo bore a particular hate to the Medici, upon this account : Rafael his fon had sometime before taken to wife Aleffandra of the Bardi with a very great portion, the whether through her own peevishness or their malice, received very ill usage from her husband and father in Law; whereupon Lorenzo Harione her Kinfman, out of compassion to the young Lady, went one night with many armed men

TE

un-

m-

he the

ced irs,

us.

m;

adllar

tti

de-

tadi-

ake al-

be

cw

m-

the fall

0115

m,

רם כ

ate his

A-

on the first of the

and rescued her out of Aprolo's house; the Accioveli made complaint of this injury done them by the Bardi, the cause was referred to Cosmo, who gave sentence that the Acciavoli (hould restore Alesandra her portion, and then her return to her husband should be left at her own arbitriment; Agnoto thought Cofms did not deal friendly with him in this fentence, but fince he could not be revenged on him, he now determined to be revenged on his fon: but how different soever the occasions were, these conspirators all declared one and the fame intention, affirming they would have the City governed by the Magistrates, and not by counsels of a few. The hatred of Peter. and ill will towards him very much increafed, by many Merchants becoming bankrupt, who laid all the fault upon Peter, his unexpected calling in his money, having thereby stretched their Credit, and to the great difgrace and prejudice of the City. forced them to fail; to which may be added his treating a marriage with Clarice of the Family of the Orfini, and his eldeft fon Laurênce, which gave every one full scope to revile him, publickly venting abroad that he disdained to match his son with a Florentine, nor could contain himself longer as a private Citizen, and therefore prepared to usurp the principality, for he that scorns to have his fellow Citizens of his kindred. had a mind to make them his fervants, and therefore 'twas unreasonable he should ex-BORTE.

pect them to be his friends. And now the leaders of this conspiracy concluded they had the victory in their hands, for the greatest part of the Citizens cheated with the name of Liberty, wherein those engaged against him had cloathed their delign, adhered to them. These humours thus set a boiling in mens hearts, it was thought convenient by those who liked not these civil discords to endeavour by some new found feast or joslity to settle, or at least divert the minds of men, for generally the idle people are the inflruments of all alterations. To remove this idleness a little out of the way, and turn mens minds upon other thoughts than that of the Government, the year being gone round fince Cofmo's death they took occasion to give the City some divertisement, appointing two folement Shows, as has been usual in other Cities; one was a representation of the three Mari following the Star of the Nativity from the East, which was done with so much Pomp and Magnificence, that in the contriving ordering and acting it, it found the whole City near five months employment. The other was a Tournament where the choice youth of the City exercifed their skill and valour against the most famous Cavaliers of Italy, and among the Florentine youth Lanrence the eldest son of Peter Medici gained the most Honour, for not by favour, but by his own valour he won the richest prize. These Triumphs ended, the Citizens returned

he ey the

eď

d-

1

n-

il

br

'n

1e

is.

cr

he

th

nii

s;

gin up sole

ce id of of day e.

nimed to their former discontents, and every one with more eagerness than before arged his own opinion, from whence many differences and troubles arole, which by two accidents were mightily increased; one was that the Authority of the Balis was expired, and the other the death of Francis Duke of Milan, whole fon Galeage the new Duke, having fent Ambaffadors to confirm the Articles made between his father and this City, which among other things concluded that there should be a yearly fum of money paid to the Duke. The leaders of the Faction averse to the Medica took occasion from this demand, and publickly in the Councils opposed the confenting to it, alleadging that League was made with Francis, and not with Galeazo, fo that by Francis his death, the obligation dyed, nor was there any reason to revive it, for that there was not in Galeago that virtue had been in Francis, and by consequence they could not, nor ought not to expect those advantages from him, and though they got but little by Francis, from him they must look for less, but if any Citizen had a mind to entertain him to maintain his own private power, it was a thing opposite to civil order and the Liberty of the City: Feter on the other fide urged that it was imprudence, out of avarice to lofe to neceffary a friend, and that nothing could conduce more to the security of this Common-wealth and all Italy, than a firm league with

with the Duke, that the Venetians feeing them united, might not entertain any hopes. either through feigned friendship, or open war to oppress that Dukedom: for no fooner should they hear that the Florentines were alienated from him, but they would have their arms in their hands, and finding, him young and raw in the Government, either by force or fraud fubdue his Country, the confequences of which must needs be the ruine of Florence. These reasons were not accepted, and the enmities and heartburnings began to appear, and of both fa-Gions several parties met every night, the friends of the Medici in the Monastery of the Little Cross or Croceta, and the Adverfaries at La Pieta, who follicitous for Peters ruine had made several Citizens subscribe themselves favourers of the delign. And among other times, being one night met together, they held a particular Council about their manner of proceeding, and every one was willing and ready to abase the power of the Medici, but they differed in the way; those who were most temperate and modest, advised, that since the Authoty of the Balia was expired, they should find means to oppose its being revived, and that done, it was their intention, that the Counfels and Magistrates should govern the City, whereby in a short time Peters power would come to nothing, and with his loss of reputation in the Government, he would likewise lose his credit in Merchandife,

Open divi-

2

5

0

đ

c

e

ė

ŕ

dife; for his Estate lay fo, that if he were reftrained from making use of publick monies, he must certainly be ruined, and then there would be no more danger of him, but the City without blood or banishment would have regained its Liberty, which every good Citizen ought to defire; but if they went about to act by force, infinite dangers must be hazarded, for whoever is falling, if he be thrust forward by others, will catch hold to support himself; besides when nothing extraordinary is acted against him, he would have no occasion or pretence of arming himself, or engaging friends; or if he did, it would turn to his greater reproach, and breed suspition in every man, thereby contributing to his own ruine, and giving others advantages to oppress him: others of the affembly difliked this delay, affirming time would prove his and not their friend, for if they consented to be fatisfied with an ordinary proceeding, Peter run no hazard at all, and they a great one; for the Magistrates, though his enemies, would permit him to live in the City, and his friends, as it happened, in 58 would make him Prince: That indeed the preceding Counsel was good, but it was not wife, and therefore it was best utterly to mine him, whilft the minds of men were incensed against him, and the means to effect it, was by arming themfelves within, and entertaining in their pay the Marquis of Ferrara without, to prevent their being difarmed :

· life Varlante .borered.

> Nickeiss. derteit Gon.

baloniere.

racy a-gainst Peter Medici difcovered.

differend and then when there chanced Senate for their purpose make fure work. upon this they concluded, expecting the entrance of the next Senate, by which they meant to govern themselves. Among these The Confoi- Confoirators was Nicholas Fidino, who officiated as their feribe, he withdrawn by more certain hope, discovered all the debates of his enemies to Peter, and produced a lift of the Conspirators and Subscribers. Peter was startled to see the number and quality of the Citizens engaged against him, and advising with his friends determined likewife to get subscriptions on his fide, giving the charge of it to some of his most trusty friends, and fuch levity and inconfrancy found he in the minds of the Cltizens, that many subscribed in his favour who had before subscribed against him Whilft all things were in this perplexity, the time came for the new Election of the Sapreme Magistracy, and Nieholas Soderini was chosen Gonfaloniere of Justice : It was a Miracle to fee with what concourse, not only of worthy Citizens, but of all forts of people he was accompanied to the Palaces and by the way they put a Garland of Olive upon his head, to fignifie that on him depended the Safety and Liberty of his Country. By this and many other experiences, it may appear how difadvantageous it is to enter into any Office or Power with the general voice and opinion of the World. For men not being able to perform what is expected

Nicholas Soderini Gonfaloniere.

an

tc

k.

he

cy

かかか

ed as de

桶

113

of

nđ

1

11,

ŲÜ,

inti

125

ot

of

e s

of

m

ri-

113

th

d.

18

ed

expected from them, the generality having formed in their imaginations things impolfible to be executed; they fall from that reight of their effern to a depth of contempt and infamy, Thomas and Nicholas Soderini were brothers. Nicholas was more daring and couragious, but Thomas much the wifer, who preferving an intire friendthip for Peter Medici and knowing his brothers humour how he only defired the Liberty of the City, and that the State might be fetled without damage to any one, perfwaded him to a new imburfation, whereby the purses might be filled with fuch Citizens as loved to live in freedom, by which means the Government would according to his defires be confirmed and fetled without any tumult or injury to any person. Nicholas readily gave ear to his brothers counsels and employed himself in these vain imaginations, during the whole time of his Magiftracy, and by his own friends, the heads of the Conspiracy, he was suffered so to confume it, for envy would not fuffer them to let Nicholas have the honour of refforing the Government, hoping they might some other time, under some other Gonfaloniere effect it their own way. Thus Nicholas his Magistracy expired, who begun many things, but finished none, and went out with as much dishonour as he had entred with applause. This accident gave courage to Peters Faction, confirming his friends in their hopes of fueces, and making those who

who before flood Neuters adhere to him; fo that the ballance feeming even on both fides. both parties for fome months without any turnult temporifed : Notwithstanding Peters party every day gained ftrength, which his enemies growing fentible of, they confulted together, and imagined they might eafily do that by force, which either they knew not how to do, or would no more attempt by the Power of the Magistrate; the therefore concluded to kill Peter, who now lay fick at Carreggi, and to that purpole fent to the Marquis of Ferrara to advance with his forces towards the City, and Pe ter once flain; they determined to run arm ed into the Piazza, and make the Senate establish such a Government as should be most to their liking; for though all the Lords were not their friends, yet they hoped to make those, who were not, give their confent for fear, Meffer Diotifalvi, the better to diffemble his intention often visited Peter reasoning with him about uniting the City. and giving him his advice. All these pra-Crices had been discovered to Peter, and befides Meffer Dominico Martegli gave him intelligence how Francisco Neroni, brother to Meffer Diotifalvi, had folicited him to be of their party, affuring him of certain victory and happy faccels. Whereupon Peter determined to be the first in arms, taking occasion from his enemies practices, with the Marquis of Ferrara. He pretended therefore to have received a Letter from John Bentivoglio,

Peter de Medici arms -

inter int

Bac

4 3

OWC

enco

doul

ot i

acff ally

00 I

e T

if

9 d

entitoglio, Prince of Bolonia, acquainting んちいいかいけい in that the Marquils of Ferrara was near River Albo with his Forces, and pubekly declared he was defigned for Flo-And thus upon these advertisements took Arms, and in the midft of a great altitude of armed men comes into Flowhereupon all the followers of his my likewise armed themselves, and their verfaries did the like, but not in fo good KR 4 8 8 8 8 4 8 oder as Peter's party; for thele were prered, and had their instructions what to but the other had no warning at all of it, Meffer Diotifalve's house standing near Peshe thought himself not secure there, and herefore ran up and down, sometimes to he Palace, to perfwade the Lords to make he ed her lay down his Arms, fometimes to find Luke to keep him firm to their party. it he that shewed most courage was Nichoto T, a Soderini , who taking Arms , was followed by all the common people of his marter; and going to Meffer Lake's house incouraged him to mount on horse-back, and go into the Piazza in favour of the re-nlords; who were on their fide, and where doubtless the victory would be certain, and not stay in his house, either to be basely opto 9.49 effed by his armed enemies, or diffraceally deceived by the unarmed, otherwise would come to repent it when it was he to late; for now, if he defired War with he ruine of Peter, he might eafily have it CH. bn if he would have peace, it was much 102

Luke Pitti fides with Peter.

better to be in a condition to give than re-Lake Pitti, whole resolution was taken, and his mind quite turned by the fair promile new alliances, and new conditions ma him by Peter; for he had already many his Niece to John Tornahuoni; infomuci that he exhorted Nicholas, likewife to down his Arms, and return to his house for all he aimed at, was that the City thou be governed by Magistrates, and so it would be, and every man would lay down the Arms; and the Senate, in which they ha the greater party, would be Judge of the differences. Nicholas therefore, seeing could not otherwise perswade him, return ed to his house, having first told him, I a not alone establish the welfare of my City, be I can prognosticate the mischiefs must of may the street of the street which you take may be the cause of loss of Liberty to our Country ter bonour to your felf of wealth and estate and " u their Country it felf so others. The Senate in the "ci Tumult had thut the Palace gates, and with all the Magistrates kept themselves within not seeming to favour either party. The Citizens (and especially those who had side with Luke) feeing Peter in Arms, and the adverfaries difarmed began to bethink them "t how best to become his friends: When upon the prime Leaders of the Fasting went into the Palace, and in the prefer of the Senate, debated many things about

46

.

46

W W

4h 46

4 C

40

4 C

" 6

the present State of the City, and the means of reconciling all differences, and fince Peter. scause of his weakness; could not come to them, they all with one actions determined go to his House, excepting only Nicholds derini, who having first recommended his children and affairs to his brother Thomas, suired to his Country-House, there to atand the event of thele things, accounting tinfelf unfortunate, and his Country miletable. The other Citizens being come beeft. " complained of the Tumults raifed The com-"in the City, declaring them to be in the plaint of the fault, who had first taken up arms, and Peer Me not knowing what Peter (who was the "first that had done it) defired, they were some to know his pleasure, and if it appeared to be for the good of the City, they were ready to fecond him . To which Peter replyed " " That not he who first took poer's Ah up Arms was the cause of these Commo- fwer. tions, but those who administred the occasion of their taking up : and if they "would well confider in what manner they had proceeded against him, they would find no cause of wonder, that for his own "fafety he had acted as he had done; for "then they would perceive, that their "nocturnal conventions, their fubleriptions, "their conspiracies to take from him the City and his life, made him arm. But "fince with these arms he had not moved from his house, it was evidence enough 7 G 2

tr

CO

W

n Lo

30

m

Pic

167 82

ne he

Ve

00

ger

W

4

" that his whole defign was to defend him " felf, and not offend others. Nor had he "any other aim, or defired any thing elle "but his own fecurity and quiet; nor ha "ever given the leaft occasion to make " them believe he fought for more : for "fince the authority of the Balia was ex-"pired, he had not contrived by any ex-"traordinary way to revive it, and was er very well fatisfied the Magistrates should " govern the City, whilft they were con-" tent with it; for they ought to remem-"ber that Cofmo and his Children know " how to live honourably in Florence, both " with and without the Balia, and that is "the year 1458, 'twas not by his house, but "by themselves renewed. And if now the " had no defire to have it again established "neither had he: but this compliance with "them, was not enough, for he perceived "they believed they could not live in Fl rence, whilft he was in it. A thing h "never could have fo much as thought or "believed, that his Fathers friends and his " should fear to live in Florence with him "having never given the least cause to be "thought other than a quiet and peaceable "man. Then addressing his Speech to Meffer Diotifalvi, and his brethren there prefent, he reproached them in words grave but full of anger, with the kindnesses the had received from his Father, the truff k reposed in them, and their barbarous ingra titude. And his words had fuch force and effect

ake for ex-ex-was ald

m

OW oth

ti but

hed

ved FI

i in

l bi

im

) k

ett

pre

ave the

A R

gra

cot.

effect that had not Peter prevented some of the standers by, they had been knock'd down : In conclusion Peter affured them he was ready to approve what ever they or the Senate should determine, and for his part defired nothing more, but to live quiet and fecure. After this many things were debated, but nothing concluded, unless in general terms, that it was necessary the City should be reformed, and new orders made in the State. Bernardo Lotti fate at this time Gonfaloniere of Justice, a man not trufty to Peter, therefore he thought it not convenient to attempt any thing in his times which delay he thought of little importance to his affairs, his Magistracy being almost expired; but at the election of the Lords, who were to fit for September and October in the year 1464, Robert Lioni was Anew Balis elected chief Magistrate, who affoon as he the Medici entred upon his office (all things elfe being Faction prepared) furnmoned the people into the Piazza, and created a new Balia all of Paters party, who foon after elected Magigaiftrates according to the humour of the new Government, which fo terrified the heads of the adverse faction, that Meffer Aprolo Acciavoli fled to Naples, and Meffer Distifalvi Neroni and Nicholas Soderini to Venice, Meffer Luke Pitti Staid in Florence, confiding in the promifes made him by Peand his new alliance. Those which fled were declared Rebels, and all the Family of the Neroni dispersed, and Messer John Ne-7 C 3

rent, then Archbishop of Florence, to avoid worfe mischief chose a voluntary extle Runte b many other Citizens who foon after were away; were confined to fundry places not did this fuffice, but a publick proceffice was ordained, to return thanks to God for the prefervation of the State, and the reuniting of the City. In the foleranizing which many Gitizens were taken and to mented, and fome of them afterwards po to death, and others banished; but in this change, of affairs nothing was more in markable or exemplary, than the fall of Luke Pitti, who in one and the fame inflan felt the difference between victory and los Honour and dishonout. His house we now a perpetual folitude, which was won to be throughd with the numerous en course of Civents; his relations were afral not only of accompanying him, but eve of faluting him in the titters; for fome d them had been deprived of their Office fome of their Effates, and all were threat ened the like utage : those stately Fabrick he had begun, were deferted by the work men; the Flatteries he was used to hear were turned into revilings, and his honor into reproach; and many who to obtain in grace and favour had made him prefents palue, now rodemanded them as thing lent, and those who used to exalt him to the skies, publickly foundatized him as violent and ingrateful man . To that he now too late indeed repented his not giving credit

The fall of Luke Pitti.

A new Folls

techarassa

roids? Inch.

the district

由我由身行所以即所即即即於始始的五五

eredit to Niebolas Soderini, withing he ad dyed an honourable Death | Those who were banished, studyed feveral City they had loth : but Meffer Agnolo Acstavolo, before he would attempt any innovation, thought best to make trial how w flood with Perer, and whether there was any hopes of reconciliation, and to that end wrote him the following Letter. I cannot but laugh at the foots of Fortune, and how of Agrees be takes delight to make enemies friends; and Acciavali friends enemier si you may remember in your dici. fabers benishment (more concerned for his ithery, than my own danger) I loft my Comby, and had like to have loft my life , nor was I our wanting while Cofino lived to bonour and favour your house inter fince bis death bad ever amy design to offend you; 'tis true, your sichly con-Intition, and the tender years of your children, created thefe fears in me, made me conceive the Government ought to be put in fuch a methat after your death our Country might we be ruined : upon which consideration, what laded was done, not against you, but for the good of my Countrey , which, if it he a fault, deferves both for my good intension-fake, and my former good deeds to be cancelled : nor can I believe (fince your Family has for fo long witime found me fo faithful) but I may from you find compassion, and that all my deferts will not for one fault alone be now bletand our. Peter having received this Letter, dichis Anthus teturned his Answer; Tour laughing fiver. 7 C 4

to Peter Me-

5 1317, 3898 WELLING TO

A Working

1.000

ch

1

でをおり

W

there occasions my not meeping here; for if we return to Florence, I must go meep at Naples: I confess you bore some good will to my father, but you may as well confess you have been recompensed for it, so that your obligation is fo much greater than ours, as deeds are more esteemable than words : fince then for your good deeds you have been rewarded, why should you wonder if for your evil you be justly punished? Nor is the love of your Countrey to be allow as an excuse, for no man living will believe this City to have been less beloved, or cherished by the Medici, than the Acciavoli: live therefore there in difgrace, fince you know not han to live bere with Honour. Whereupon Meffer Agnolo despairing of ever procuring his pardon, comes to Rome, and confederates himself with the Archbishop and other Exiles, endeavouring by all bitter ways they could imagine, to blaft the credit of the Factory of the Medici reliding in Rome; which Peter could hardly prevent, yet by the affiftance of his friends, their devices were defeated; on the other fide Meller Diotifalvi and Nicholas Soderini fought with all industry imaginable to incense the Venetians against their Countrey, supposing that if Florence were affaulted from abroad the Government being new, and generally hated, they would not be able to support it. There lived in these times in Ferrare John Francisco, the son of Meffer Palle Strozzi, who in the change of Government in 1438 was with his father driven out

Diotifatoi
and Nicholas
Soderini
ftir up the
Venetians
gainst flopence.

500

are conditions of the conditio

ys

of

by

はいはいる。明めいないないのは、

the Vener

lo soluce of

Suntary 5

Tiorance.

out of Florence. These new Rebels declared to John Francisco how casily they might be reflored to their Countrey, if the Venetians would undertake a war, which they believed they would be ready to do. if they could contrive any way how to contribute to part of the expence, or otherwife they doubted it. John Francisco, who was defirous to be revenged of the injuries he had received, gave cafe car to their counsels, and promised to be affistant in the attempt with his whole effate; Whereupon they went all to the Duke. lamenting their exile, and protesting they were driven out for no other crime, but endeavouring that their Countrey should live according to its Laws, and that the Magistrates, and not a few Citizens only, should be honoured and respected; whereupon Peter de Medici and his Followers, accustomed to live tyrannically, had deceitfully taken Arms, deceitfully made them lay down theirs, and afterwards as deceitfully driven them from their Countrey; and not content therewith, but they had made Devotion to God a pretence and colour to oppress others, who under their faith given them still remained in the City; for in the midft of those publick and facred Ceremonies, and folemn supplications (that they might make God a partaker in their treasons) they had imprisoned and put to death many Citizens, an example of great impiety

a piety and horror; to revenge this, they have not where better to have recounte, " than to that Senate which enjoying its "Liberty, ought to have compassion of those which had lost theirs. They therea fore begg'd the affiltance of Free-men aa gainst Tyrants, of good men against the wicked remembring them how the faa of their long the Dominion of Lombar-" dy, who in contradiction of the other "Citizens had favoured and supported Earl " Francis against their Senate; fo that if the juffice of their cause could not move them, they ought to be threed up by a just hatred and define of revenge for their own injuries. These last words moved the whole senate, and they determined that Bartholoniero Coglione their General thould invade the Florentine Territories, who with all speed drew together the Army, and with him joined Hercules d'Efte fent from Borfo Duke of Ferrara. They at their first entrance (the Florentines not being yet in order) burnt the Burrough of Decadala, and made some spoil in the adjacent Country: but the Florentines hatter they had driven out the enemies of the Medter) had entred into a new League with King Ferentertained for their General Frederick Earl of Urbin; to that having fuch good Friends, they valued their enemies the less: for Ferdinand fent his eldest fon Atphonto, and Galeaza

The Venetians and Duke of Ferrara war with Florence. すらながらないない。

4

hē

VĊ

eir ed

nat ild

ich

nd

rft

la.

it ad a t a a ds

er-

.

120

peint Forces, and all rendezvoured of Cotracase a Cafile of the Florestines Tested at the foot of the Alps, between Tufany and Romaguta ! mean while the enemies were retreated towards Imola, fo according to the cuftom of those fifthes. Tome light skittmifhes happened, but no general affault was made, no towns befleged, hor flewed they any disposition of engaging each other; but lying, laving in their Tents, with beminable cowardize managed the war. This tediousness much displeased the Flamilines, who beliefu theinfelves dobreifed with a war in which they frest much, and gould hope to gam but little ; and the Maunitates blamed those they had appointed Commissioners of the War, who gave them in account that Duke Caleago was in the fault; for he having the greatest Authority. and but flender Experience, knew not how to take advantages, not would be fulled by those that did, and that it was impossible To long as he flaid in the Army, that any thing should be undertaken to their Honour or profit. Whereupon the Florenmes represented to the Duke. That It "did much redound to their credit and restopheation, that he was perforally come to affin them, for his prefence only was " enough to terrific their enemies, yet they availed the lafery of his person and Do-" minion above their own advantage; for whileft he was in fafety, they hoped for

anomal A

all prosperous success, but if he should " fail, they had reason to fear the worst of advertities. They were therefore of opinion it was not very fecure for him to be long ablent from Milan, being new-" ly entred into the Government, and having many powerful enemies he ought to be jealous of, who whilest he was away might contrive many mischiefs against him; wherefore they advised him to return to his Countrey, leaving some part of his Forces for their defence. The counsel pleased Galeazo well, and without farther consideration he returned to Milan This impediment thus removed, the Florentine Captains to thew he was indeed the true occasion of the former neglect, made their approaches to the enemy, fo that they came to a fet Battle, which continued half the day, neither party giving ground to the other, yet there was not one flain, only fome few horses wounded, and some prisoners taken on both fides : the winter now approached, and the feafon wherein Armies use to draw into quarters; wherefore Meffer Bartbolomem retreats towards Ravenna, and the Florestine Forces into Tufcany, and those of the King and Duke home to their own Countries. But fince by this affault there had happened no commotion in Florence, as the Florentine Rebels had promised there would, the Soldiers beginning to want their pay, a peace was treated, and after very few debates concluded; whereupon the Florentine

A famous Battle

Peace con-

Mo o to the to and the part of the control of the c

ies ler nd ofe wa

as ere cir ry the socistabil

Plorentine Rebels, loft to all hope; departed leveral ways, Meffer Distifator went to Ferears, where he was by Duke Borfo received and kindly entertained; Niebolas Sodering retired to Ravenna, where with a fmall penfion allowed him by the Venetiant, he grew old and dyed: he was accounted an honest and valiant man, but in refolving upon any thing doubtful and flow, which made him when he was Gonfaloniere tole the opporfunity of overcoming, and afterwards when he was a private man strive to regain it, and could not. Peace concluded, those Citizens that remained superiour in Florence. could not perswade themselves to have overcome, if they did not with all manner of injuries afflict not only their enemies, but those they suspected averse to their party; wherefore they perswaded Bardo Alsoviti then Gonfaloniere of Juffice, to remove many Citizens from their offices, and to banish others, which increased their power, and terrified their adversaries, and the power they had got they exercised without any moderation, as if God and fortune had given them the City for a prey; of which Peter knew but little, and that litthe he did could not remedy, by reason of the infirmity of his body: for the Gout fo tormented him, that he could use no member but his tongue, nor apply any other remedy to their disorders but good admonithments, intreating them to live more civilly, and rather possess their Countrey

46

Marriage of Lorenzo Medici with Clarice Orfini.

with fafety, than be driven out with its destruction; and to divert the City principally, he determined on that magnifihis fon Lorenzo, and Glarice of the Family of the Orfue; which wedding was performe ed with all that pomp and (plendor became the magnificence of to great a man and many days were spent in feathing, Balls and Malques and to compleat the greatness of the Family, two military Shows were exhibited to the people, one the reprefertation of a Battle on Horse-back, and the other whe florming of a Town, in both which all things were marthalled in excellent order, and performed with admirable Dexterity. Whileft thefe things were doing in Florence, the reft of lealy lived likewile in quiet, but in great jealonies of the Turbs greatness, who purfued his victories against the Christians, and had now taken Negro ponte, to the infamy and dishonour of the Christian name. In these times dyed Berse Marquis of Ferrara, to whom succeeded Hercules his fon; likewife dyed Gifmondo of Rimini profest enemy to the Church, and Rebert his fon remained Heir to his Estates, who afterwards gained the reputation of being one of the prime Captains of Italy, There also dyed Pape Paul, and to him fueceeded Sixtus the Fourth, called before his creation Francis of Savona, a man of bale and most vile condition; yet for his appearances of Vertue, made first General of the Order

Pope Sixtus the Fourth ts

9

his ale

he

or condi-

Order of S. Francis, and afterwards Garlinal. This Pope was the first char began oenly to thow what a Pope could do, and ow many things before called errors might e covered under the Pontifical Authority. There were of his Family Peren and Girale who as every one believed were his lons, yet he pulliated that foundal under the more civil name of Nephews : Peter because he was a Friar, he raised to the Dignity of Cardinal, with the title of S. Sifto; to Girolamo he gave the City of Fori taking it from Antonio Ordelaffi, whose Ancestors had a long time been Princes of that City: yet this strange and ambitious way of proceeding made the Princes of Italy pay him the more effects, and every one fought his alliance; fo that the Duke of Milangave Catherine his natural daughter to Girolamo for wife, and with her the City of Intole (which he had taken from Taddeo Alidefi)in Dowers between this Duke likewife and King Fordimand, an alliance was likewife contracted, for Elizabella daughter to Alphonfo the Kings eldeft fon, was married to John Galeago eldeft fon to the Duke. Italy lived now in a profound quiet, and the only care of these Princes was to have a watch one upon another, and by new Alliances, Leagues and Friendthips to fecure themselves; yet in fo great a calm of peace Florence was still in a storm, coffed and tormented by its own Citizens, and Peter violently afflicted with his diffemper, could not frand at Helm, nor make any provision 40

Peter de Mediei his speech to the Florestins.

provision against the violent gusts of their ambition; yet to disburthen his own Confcience and make them if he could a shamed of their courses, he called before him the chief Florentines, and thus reproved and advised them : I once never believed ! (hould have feen the time that the manners and behaviour of my Friends should make me rather love and defire the prosperity of my enemies; and that my villory had proved a defeat for I thought I had confederated with men. whose Appenite might have been bounded, and who would have been content, if not with living quiet and fecure themselves, yet at least with being revenged on their enemies : but now I fee bow strangely I am deceived, and bow ignorant I was of the natural Ambition of men in general, and much more of yours for you are not content to be Princes in fa mighty a City to share among a few of you those Honours, Dignities and Profits were wont to be in common to the whole body, and to bave the eftates of your enemies divided amont you nor are you fatisfied to load others with all publick charges, whileft your felves, freed from all payments, enjoy the profit, but to your adventages you must adde the Tyranny of afficiing them with all manner of injuries : you rob your neighbours of their Goods, you fell Justice, and flie from civil Judgment, oppresfing the innocent, and promoting the infolent; nor do I believe there is in all Italy fo many examples of violence and injustice, as in thu City , why should we take life from our Countrey

and by C

Ŧ

ten

ed c

hon

min

ofh

tau

by I

live

and

near

and

the left

治いるにはまたはいい、はめ様ははのい

月月 中地

11

ゆとうはり

F

mourey that his given a being to in? or why they those that have made in victorious? why Grace and fearn those have given us Hoare? I promise you by the faith which all. men onght to give and receive, if a continue to behave your selves so, that I forced to repent that I was victorisms, I fhall ary my felf in that manner you shall likerepent of your abuse of the Victory. Those Citizens returned an Answer fuitble and agreeable to the occasion, but rehimed not themselves from their violence and oppression: whereupon Peter privatey caused Messer Agnolo Acciavoli to come to Caffagivolo, and had a long discourse with him about the State of the City, nor it to be doubted but (had not death pretented him) he had recalled all the banished to curb the insolence of those that were within, but death put a stop to these his lonest intentions, for grievously afflicted with diseases of body, and torments of mind, he dyed in the three and fiftieth year Deathoffe of his age, whose worth and virtue could to de Mes never be truly known to his Countrey, betruse most of his time he lived accompanied by his father, and those few years he outlived him, were confumed in civil discords, and infirmity of body. Peter was buried near his father in the Church of S. Laurence, and his Funeral was olemnized with all the pomp becoming to great a Citizen. He left behind him two fons Lorenzo and Guilien, who though they gave great hopes

Thomas Soderini the most principal Citizen.

they would prove beneficial & ferviceable their Countrey, yet their youth made all m doubtful. Among other principal men State in Florence, and who much excelled the reft was Thomas Soderini, whose wild & Authority was not only reverenced in F rence, but by all the Princes of Italy, on b after Peters death did the whole City their eyes, & many Citizens vifited & m Princes complimented him as the chief of the State, but he being prudent, & havin fore-fight of his own fortune, and that of Family of the Medici, answered none of Princes Letters, & told the Citizens that to his, but to the house of the Medici th ought to pay their visits: And to perfect deeds what he had perswaded in words affembled all the prime Noble Families in convent of S. Antonio, whither he likew canfed Lorenzo and Julian Medici to come after a long and grave Oration of the prefer State of that City, of all Italy, and of theh mours of Princes, concluding, that if they de fired the union and peace of Florence, and a fecure it from civil diffention & foreign was it was of all thingsmost necessary they should honour those two young men, and maintain the reputation of their house, for men seldon repine to submit to things they are accustomed too, but new Lords as they are easily set up, are easy thrown down, an it was ever more facile to maintain the power, which by long continuance had outworn envy, than crect a new, which

ort

etu

whie

m will be watching opportunities to op-After Meffer Ibomafe, Spoke Lo-, and notwithstanding his youth aded with to much Gravity, Prudence Modelly, that he put all men in hopes would prove, what he afterwards did before they departed that place, those Curens swore to cherish them as their ildren, and they to own them as their thers i upon which conclusion Lorenzo d Giulian were honoured as Princes of City, and they again never declined Samin's countel. And thus living at reft, othat home and abroad, and no appearke of-war to diffus the publick quiet unlooked for tumult happened as prefage of future troubles. Among the milies ruined by the faction of Luke Pitti, s that of the Nardin for Sylvester and his of the Nardin other, heads of that Family were first bawhed, and afterwards in that war, moved by Bartholomen Coglione declared Rebels. among whom was Bernard brother of Julby reason of his poverty, less able to support banishment; and by reason of the conclusion of the peace, feeing no hopes of sturn, determined to attempt fomething, which might occasion the renewing of the war; for oftentimes of weak beginnings, heat effects enfue, provided men are more diligent in the profecution, than the befinning of an enterprise. Bernard had great Equaintance in Frate, and more in the 7 D 2 Countrey a Cryst

Countrey of Piftoia, especially with the hou of the Palandri, a Family though bred in Countrey, yet very numerous, and those li the other Piftoiefi, nurft in Arms & Blood; very well knew they were discontented. ving been in some differences of theirs a lin Severely treated by the Florentine Magistra and besides he was well vers'd in the humo of the Pratefi, who believed themselves verned with too much avarice and pride had particular knowledge of some mens version to the State: all which things him hopes he might kindle a fire in Tufes by firring up Prate to Rebellion, to whi fo much fuel would foon be added, that would be found a hard matter to quench These his thoughts he communicates Meffer Diotifalvi, asking him, that suppos his defign on Prate succeeded, what aff ance he might by his means expect from ther Princes; the undertaking to Mr. Di Salvi seemed very dangerous, and almost in pollible to effect; yet feeing he might now a the hazard of others, make a new tryal of h fortune, he encouraged him to proceed, pro miling him certain affiltance from Ferra and Bolonia, if he fo far succeeded as to defen Prato but fifteen days. Bernardo by these pro mifes heightned with hopes of happy fue cels, privately conveys himself to Prato, at communicates the matter to feveral, who he finds readily difpoled to it; of the like temper he finds the Family of the Palan dri, and having agreed upon the time as

with for the

Pete

eir

nto

left. Berr

nmer of execution, they fent advice of to Meffer Diotifalvi. Cafar Petrucci was this time Podefta of Prate for the Floren-Those Governours of the town have n usual custom to keep themselves the keys the Gates, and when any of the City (especally in unsuspected times) comes by night delire to go out, or to have any let in, he ands the Keys. Bernardo who knew this cultom comes a little before day, together with the Palandri, and about a hundred med men, and prefents himself before the Gate that leads to Pistoia, and those within who knew of the conspiracy, were likewise ready armed, one of whom went to the Pooffs to defire the Keys, feigning there was Townsman defired entrance; the Podesta the could not have the least suspicion of y fuch accident, fends one of his fervants with them, from whom before he was far from the Palace, the Reys were taken by the conspirators, the Gates opened, and Peter and his armed followers let in, and eing all now together, they again divided into two bodies, one of which led by Sylufter a Pratese surprised the Cittadel, and Bernardo with the other seized the Palace, committing Cafar with all his Family to the cultody of some of his followers, then they et up their cry throughout all the Town, proclaiming Liberty, Liberty. Day now egan to appear, and at the noise, many of the people ran into the Market place: and hearing how the Cittadel and Palace was **furprised** 7 D 3

wat f lis

fer

pro fuc forprised, and the Podesta with his Family imprisoned, they stood amazed how this accident should happen. The eight Citizens, to whom the administration of affairs is there committed, affembled in their Palace to consult what was best to be done: While Bernardo and his company having marche up and down the Town, and getting none to follow them, hearing the eight were affem bled came to them, and told them the re-fon of his enterprise was to free them an their Country from servitude, and her much glory they would gain, if taking arm they accompanied him in fo brave an a tempt, by which they would gain perpetua quict and eternal fame, putting them in min of their ancient liberty and present condition, declaring what fure affiftance they would have, if but for a few days they held out affirming he had a party in Florence, who would thew themselves as foon as the had intelligence that Town would unanimoully follow him. The eight not moved at his words, replyed, "That "they knew not whether Florence lived "in Liberty or Bondage, as a thing they were not concerned to enquire into but this they knew, they would peer ver defire any other Liberty than to ober "those Magistrates that governed Florence, from whom they had received no injury to doblige them to take arms against them "wherefore they advised him to release the " Podesta, and march as fast as he could ec with

highing according to

ind itiuld bey

with his people out of the Town thereby with speed freeing himself from that danger, whereinto he had unadvisedly thrown himself. Bernardo not at all daunted, with these words resolved to try if threats would ove the Pratefi, whom he could not move with intreaties, and to terrifie them he thought the best way to put the Podesta to death, whom taking out of prison, he commanded to be hanged at the Palace Winlows, Cafar was brought almost to the rindow with the halter about his neck. then he faw Bernardo, who commanded his death, to whom turning about he faid. Bernardo thou putteft me to death, believing then to be followed by the Pratch, but thou it find the quite contrary, for the Reverence thefe people bear to the governours, feut them from the Florentines is fo great, that when they fee this injury done to me, they will conceive fuch a batred against thee, as will procure thy raine; for not my death, but my life may be the occasion of victory to thee, for if I command them to fulfill your pleasure, possibly they may do it and by my following your directions, you may perhaps accomplish your design. Berwho had not now much choice to make thought this counsel very reasonaand therefore orders him to go to the Window, and command the people to yield him obedience; which when Cafar had done, he was fent back into cuftody. The weakness of the Conspirators was by this time discovered, and many Florentines who 5D4 inhabited

inhabited the Town, had gathered themselves together, among whom was Meffer George Ginori, a Knight of Rhodes, he was the first made any opposition, and affaulted Bernardo, who was running up and down the Market-place, sometimes intreating, and fornetimes threatning, if they did not obey and follow him : but Meffer George and his party charging him, he was wounded and token ; which done, it was an easie matter to release the Podefts, and overcome the refl who being but few, were most of them to ken or flain. Mean while the news of the accident was brought to Florence, and made fo much more than the truth, that the first Relations told, that Prate was taken, the Podefta with his Family all flain, and the Town full of enemies; Piltoia in arms, and many of its Citizens in this Conspiracie whereupon the Palace was immediately full of Citizens, who came to confult with the Senate. There happened to be in Fla rence Robert of San Severmo, accounted very able Leader, him they determined to fend with as many forces as could on fuch a fudden be got together to march to wards the Town, and give them a parties lar account of the matter, applying fuch remedies, as in his judgement should feet meet. Robert had gone little farther thun the Castle of Campi, but he was met by Meffenger fent from Cafer to fignific that Bernarde was taken, his conforts flain or fled. and the Tumult quieted; whereupon he returned

the

nd

ar.

ta-

A.

the

in ic.

rith de

ıcı

いのなるののかはのか

seturned to Florence, whither foon after Berrde was brought, whom the Magistrate frictly examining to know the full Truth of the delign, and finding it a very weak Plot, asked him why he would attempt fo unlikely a thing, to which he made answer. he did it, because he had rather dve in Floreace than live in exile, and was defirous his death might be accompanied with fomething memorable. This Tumult dead as foon as it was born, the Citizens returned to their accustomed manner of living thinking they might without any moderation or respect enjoy that Government they had themselves setled and established: whence arose here those disorders, which like insects are usually generated from peace and idlenels, for the youth grew more extravagant, than they were wont in their apparel, feafting, and other lascivious Vanities, fetting no bounds to their expences but being wasteful and idle consumed their time and effates in play and women, and all their findy was who dreft fineft, who had the richest garnitures, and who had most of the words in fashion, or could talk after the prettieft and newest method, but that man that gave the sharpest, and most biting reparties, he was the wit of the times. These bleffed Customs, and weighty endowments were by the Courtiers of Miles much added to and refined, for that Duke with The Duke of his Dutchess and whole Court to perform Plante a vow (as it was given out) were come to

Philastyn,

Florence, where he was received with all that pomp and splendor, requisite for the entertainment of fo great a Prince, and fo true's friend to the City: And now there was one thing to be feen; which our City had never beheld before; for it being the holy time of Lent, during which the Church commands abstinence from sieth, his Court without any respect either to God or the Church, would feed on nothing elfe. There were many publick spectacles exhibited for his Honour, among the rest in the Church of Sande Spirite, they represented the Holy Ghoff descending upon the Apofiles; and many fires being afed in fuch folermities, that Church by fome or other took fire, and was quite burnt down, which most looke upon, as an evident fign of Gods anger against us, for our Sins and Follies. In thert, if the Duke of Milan found the City of Florence full of Curtizans, De licacies Debaucheries and Customs quite opposite to well ordered Civility, he left's much more fo, whereupon good Citizens though it requifite to bridle thefe Vanities, and by a Law reftram the excellive expends in apparely feating and buriels. In the midft of this profound peace happened new and unlookt for Tumult in Tuftang There was found in the Country of Vi terra by forme of the Citizens of that place Mine of Alturn, who knowing what ad vantages were to be made of it, that the might be affifted with money, and defend

Tomnits in

The Duke of Miles in Levente II.

all the for the

he

ch

in

the

ere

the contract of the contract o

with authority, they addressed themselves to fome Citizens of Florence to be partners with them. This in the beginning (as gonerally all new undertakings are) was by the people of Volterra flighted, but at length when they faw what profit others made of them, they strove too late and in vain to fatch out of their hands, what at first they might with eafe have had; they began first in their Councils to argue the matter, affirming it was not convenient that a commodity found in publick grounds should be converted to private use. They fent thereupon their Amballadors to Flerence; and the matter was referred to a Committee of Citizens, who either bribed, or because twas indeed their judgement, reported. That the people of Volteres were unjust in defiring to deprive other Citizens of the fruits of their pains and industry and that those Allums belonged to the private perfons, and not to them, however it was convenient they should yearly pay a sum of money to the City, as an acknowledgement of their Superiority: This sentence instead of extinguithing, inflamed the discontents and tumults in Volterta, and nothing elfe, not only in their Councils, but through the whole City was discoursed of the People requiring what was unjuffly taken from them might be reflered, and the private poffeffors firiving to keep, what they had been at charge and pains to fet on work, and by fentence of the Florentines was confirm-

ed to them. Infornuch, that in thefe dif putes Pecorino, a Citizen of quality was killed, and after him many others of his party, and their houses fackt and burnt, and with much ado were the people in this fury refrained from killing the Florentine Governours : But this first Tumult past, they determined ere they proceeded farther to fend Ambassadors to Florence, who informed the Senate, if they would maintain their ancient Rights and Charters, they would continue in their ancient obedience The answer was long debated. Meffer Themas Soderini was of opinion, it was convenient to accept of the Volterrans fubmiffion on what terms foever, it being dangerous to raise a flame so near, that it may burn our own houses, for he was fearful how the Pepe was inclined, knew the King to be potent, and was confident neither in the Venetians nor Dukes friendship, because he could not tell how much fidelity might be found in the one, nor how little courage in the other, remembring them of that known proverb, Better a lean peace than a fat vidary. 2) On the other fide Lorenzo de Medici thinking now, he had an opportunity to give a value to his counsels and prudence, and especially set on by those who envyed Soderini's authority, advised the chaftifing the infolency of the Volterrans by arms, alfirming; if they were not made a memorable example, other Cities would never flick

Filterea

Zini?

h

S

2

50

to

10

in

7

C.

0-

e.

ON

us

ul

ng

in

ıfe

be

in

VD

7i-

ici

to

ce,

ng af-

0-

cr

d

flick at doing the like upon the least and flightest occasion. This resolution taken. the Volterrans were answered . That they could not require the observance of those conditions themselves had broken, and that therefore they must submit themselves to the judgement of the Senate, or expect a War. The Volterrans returned with this answer, prepared for their defence, fortifying their Town, and fending to all the Princes of Italy for aid, but were hearkened to by few, only the Sanefi, and the Lord of Prombino promifed them some affistance. The Florentines on the other fide thinking hafte in attaining it, of almost as much importance as victory it felf, drew together ten thousand foot, and two thousand horfe, whom under the command of Frederick, Lord of Urbin, they fent into the Country of Volterra, and cafily becoming Master of that, he lays siege to the City, which being feated upon an afcent, could no way be battered but on that fide where the Church of St. Alexander stands. The Volterrans had hired about a thousand Soldiers for their defence, who feeing how bravely the Florentines affailed them, distruftful of being able to defend the Town, grew flow in the service, but in affronting the Volterrans ready enough; to that those poor Citizens were forced to endure the affaults of their enemies without, and the abuses of their friends within, till in the end defpair-

ing of any fafety, they began to treat, and

for

Politeria

for want of better terms were forced to fub mit to the discretion of the Florentine Comiffaries who canting the Gates to be o pened went to the Palace where their Priors were fitting, whom they commanded to return to their houses, and in the way one of them was by fome of the Soldiers in desifion stript, from this beginning (as men are still readier to do mischief than good grew the deftruction and lack of this City which for a whole day was robbed, spoile and plundered, neither did the women nor facred places escape, but the Soldiers (a well those trad so cowardly defended it, as those had fought against it) divided all their wealth and riches. The news of this victoty was with great joy received at Florence and because the enterprize was wholly Lo renzo's it gained him very great reputation; Whereupon one of his familiar friends re proaching Thomas Soderini for his counsels faid, And what fay you now that Volterra is taken? to whom Thamas answered, I ra ther think it is lost, for had you taken it up on composition, you might have expelled from it both advantage and fecurity; but baving taken it by force, in time of war it will wear hen and annoy you, and in time of prace b both a charge and trouble, In their times the Pope defirous to keep in obedience the Towns belonging to the Church had caused Spalemento be lackt, which by the procurement of factions, within had rebelled, and after wards because the Gity of Castello was fallen into

The Pope facks Spoletto, and belieges Ca. 上のではなが、中にと、大きのは、おいけのと

からからなるという

T.

63

into the fame contumacy had belieged it Niedas Vitelli was Prince of that Town, had contracted a very intimate friendfhi with Lorenzo de Medici, who was not wanting now to give him affiftance, though not mough to defend him, yet sufficient, to fow those feeds of diffention between Pope Sinand the Medici which afterwards brought forth very ill fruit. Nor had they een fo long breaking forth, had not the death of Peter Cardinal of Sifte intervened. for this Cardinal travelling all about Italy and particularly to Milan and Venice (under pretence to honour the Nuptials of Hercules Marquis of Ferrara) had been founding the minds of Princes to find how they flood inclined to the Florentines; but being returned to Rome, he dyed not without suspition of having been poisoned by the Venetians, for they feared the power of Sixtus, when it had the courage and counfel of Peter to back it; for though nature had produced him of mean and abject blood, and that afterwards he was educated within the walls of a Convent, yet as foon as he came to be Cardinal, he was filled with fuch pride and ambition, a Cardinals cap was fo much too little, that the triple Crown would scarce have fatisfied him: for he made a feast in Rome, might have been judged a prodigality in a King, and which cost him at least twenty thousand Floring Sixtus deprived thus of this great Minister of State, his affairs went on much flower. 19100 However

However the Florentines, Duke and Veneral m, having renewed the League, and left place for the Pope and King to enter, if they pleafed. They made another contract between themselves with invitations to other Princes of Italy to joyn with them, if they thought fit; fo that now Italy was divided into two factions, for every day something happened, begetting hatred and animoliti between these two leagues, but particularly the affair of Cyprus, which Island the Kin laid clam to, but the Venetians poffesse themselves of whereupon the Pope and King obliged each other to stricter terms of mutual affiftance. Frederick Prince of Urbin was at this time accounted one of the prime Captains of Italy, who had long been employed by the Florentines : him, that the League might want fo valiant a head, the King and Pope strove to gain, and the King invited and the Pope advised him to go to Naples, which to the great wonder and displeasure of the Florentines he did, who believed he exposed himself to the fate of Jacob Pie eining, though the contrary happened, for Frederick returned both from Naples and Rome with much honour, and still continued General of the League: Mean while the King and Pope were not wanting to found the minds of the Lords of Romagnia, and the Sanefi, by means of whose friendfhip they might more fecurely offend the Florentimes, who perceiving their intent, by all convenient ways armed themselves to encounter

Wat

Bra

fam

Oda

and

the

than Veni and ther the won

H.

the core with the deal at preside the cond

÷

le

to de he my

cr

comter their ambition , and having loft rederick of Urbin, entertained Robert of Rmini, renewed their League with the longians, and made a new one with the Lunds of Faenza, the reason allendged by the King and Pope for their hatred to the Phrentines was, because they fought to withdraw the Venetians from them, and on them to their own fide; and the Pope bought that whilft the Venetians and Flomaines were united, it would be impollifor him to maintain the reputation of the Church, or Count Girolamo, his Estates in Romania. On the other fide the Flauntines feared that they would fet them at amity with the Venetians, not for their friendship sake, but to be the better enabled to injure them. And in these doubts and palousies lived Italy two years before any Var or Tumult broke forth. The first, though a little one happened in Tufcany. Braccio a man (as we have before related) amous in war, left behind him two fons, Oddo and Charles: This last very young, and the other flain by the inhabitants of the Vale of Lamond. Charles being come to mans Estate, and fit for action, was by the Venetians for the memory of his Father, nd hopes of himself, entertained among other Leaders employed by the Republicks the time of his entertainment expired, he would not renew it, determining to try, if by his own valour, and the reputation of his Father, he could recover his Estates of

7 E

Person

fro

on

La

Wa

tio

the

the

Be

DC

fir

de

Du

tu

-

m

lic

ni

th

th

fe

Charles the fon of Brec

Peragis, to which the Venetians readily con fented, they being wont amidft other eio affails the troubles to increase their own dominion Charles therefore comes into Infcany; finding the affairs of Perugis somewhat hard because the Florentines were in leas with them, yet refolving, fince he hade ken arms, to do fomething memorable, faults the Sanefi, alledging they were h debtors for fervices done that State by his Father, which he required fatisfaction for and therewithall so briskly fell on , t he almost quite overthrew that Domini The Citizens of Siena feeing themselve fo furiously affaulted, being apt to believe any ill of the Florentines, perswaded the felves that by their consent the attempt w made, heavily complaining thereof to he Pope and King, and fending withall As baffadors to Florence, to expostulate t matter, and privately infinuating Charles (without hopes of their affiftance, durft not so bodily have injured them. I Florentines excused themselves, affirming they were ready to shew their 'endeavous to prevent Charles his doing them wrong, and to that purpose would in such terms, as the Ambaffadors thought fit, command him to forbear offending the San which Charles thought hard measure, montrating that the Florentines , by 10 backing him, had loft a confiderable con queft, and rob'd him of a proportionable go Ty, for he could in a short time have mi

de

y his

cly

lie

he

Т

of

CIA.

nce

T

mi

OUI

micd them the possession of that Town, ach, it was impossible they could long hold out. But now being forced to leave off, he returned into the Venetians pay, and the Sanefi (though freed by the Florentines from fo many damages) continued their grudge against them, not thinking they bught any obligation to a people, who had only delivered them from andinjury they had first occasioned. Whilst affairs stood thus between the King, Pope and Tufcany, an accident of greater moment happened in Lombardy, as the prefage of future evils: There was one Cola of Mantona a learned but ambitious man, who taught the Latine tongue to the youth of principal quality in Milan. In these (whether out of hate to the bad maners of the Duke, or moved by some other occasion) by all the discourses he made, he hrove to beget an abhorrence of living under an evil Prince, pronouncing them glorious and happy, to whom Fortune and Nature had granted the favour of living in Common-wealth, declaring how all famous men had been brought up in Republicks, and not under Princes, for those chernih virtuous men, and these destroy them, the one reaping benefit and advantage from their virtue, and the other standing in fear of it : those youths he had entertained the strictest familiarity with, were John Andrea Lampognano, Charles Visconti, and Girolamo Olgiato, with these he often 7E 3 discoursed

discoursed about the corrupt nature of the Prince, and the infelicity of those lived under him and fuch a confidence had he in these young men, that at last he made then fwear when age should enable them, they would free their Countrey from the tyranny of that Prince, this defire thus instilled into them, increased with their years, and the Dukes ill manners and customs, and particular injuries done to themselves hastened the Execution of it. Galean was luftful and cruel, which two que lities had with their circumstances mad him utterly odious, for he was not content only to vitiate and debauch Ladies of qualty, but took delight to publish it; nor would the death of men fatisfie him, unles they were in some cruel manner tormented; he lived likewise under the infamy of he ving murdered his mother; for not thinking himself absolute Prince while she was prefent, he had so far wrought with her, that the was content to retire to her jointure-feat at Cremona, in which journey she fell suddenly fick and dyed; which made many think her son the cause of her death. This Duke in some concerns with the Female Sex had dishonoured Charles and Girolamo, and denyed John Andrea the possession of the Abbey of Miramondo, which upon are lations relignation had been granted him b the Pope. These private injuries spurred on the young men to revenge and deliver their Countrey from to many milchief, hoping

Wo

Sol wo

yea bec Po Ch

hem

ranildi and and ivo

punnade tent nor nales ted; haking

this Can

fudany This

nale

of of

10

by

ricd

ive icis, ping

booing that whenever they had the good brune to kill the Duke, they should not only be followed by the chief of the Nobles. but by the whole people, being therefore des termined upon the matter, they met often rogether, which because of their ancient amiliarity, was nothing wondred at; and to keep their minds staid and resolved, they were always discoursing of the business, and practifing with their dagger theaths to hit me another on the breft, belly and in other mortal places: then they advised about the place and time; in the Castle they judged could not be securely done, whilest he was a hunting uncertain and dangerous. his walks of pleasure they gueffed it would prove hard and unfuccefsful, and at Featts doubtful; wherefore they determind to fall on him at some publick Pomp and Solemnity, where they were certain he would be present, and they with least supicion might affemble their Friends, conduding that if any of them were in the exeention taken, the rest should kill him in the midft of their enemies, It was now the year 1476, and nigh unto Christmass, and because the Prince was accustomed in great Pomp upon S. Stephens day, to wifit the Church of that Martyr, they resolved that the time and place for putting their delign nexecution; and on the morning of that Saints day, caused several of their trusty friends and fervants to arm themselves, preending to go and affift John Andrea, who against

against the mind of some envious neigh bours, had a defire to carry water into hi lands, and them thus armed they brough to the Church, alleadging that before the departure, they would take leave of the Prince; they likewise affembled thither un der divers pretences, feveral other of the friends and relations, hoping the principal deed being once done, every one would be ready to join in what remained, and the intent was affoon as the Prince was flain to join with those armed men, and go to that place of the City, where they might with most ease raise the people, and per-Swade them to arm themselves against Dutchels, and the chiefest of the Court hoping the people by reason of the famile wherewith they were oppressed, would ready to follow them; refolving for an en couragement to give them the spoil of the houses of Cecco Simonetta, John Botti an Francis Luconi chief Ministers of State This determination made, and the execution firmly resolved in their minds, 70 Andrea with his companions came early to the Church, where they heard Mals toge ther; after which, John Andrea turning to wards an image of S. Ambrofe, faid ; 0 thon Guardian and Patron of our City, the knowest our intention, and the end why w adventure our felves into fo many danger be propitions to our undertakings, and by favouring inflice make it appear bow much in juftice difpleafeth thee. To the Duke on the other

œi

Ar

60

tw he he

the

lef

fro

len

An

the

C

thi

は一番を

nd to

į,

other fide before he came to Church, haproaching death, for in the morning when e role, he put on (according to his usual cuftom) his privy Armour, which prefenthafter, either because he thought it not becoming, or that it hurt his body, he put off: then he had a mind to hear Mass in the Ca-Me but his Chaplain was already gone to S. Stepbens with all the Furniture of the Chappel: then he would have had the Biffion of Come fay Mass in his stead, but he alleadged certain reasonable impediments, to that confrained as it were by necessity, he resolved to go to Church, but first he called for his two fons, John Galeazzo and Hermes whom he embraced and kiffed many times, as if he had no power to depart from them : the conspirators in the mean time, both to leffen all suspicion, and shelter themselves from the cold, which was then very violent; were refired in a chamber of the chief Priest of the Church their friend, till upon word brought, that the Duke was coming they went forth into the Church, and John Andrea and Girolamo placed themselves on the right hand, at the entrance into the Church, and Charles Vifcont on the left. those that preceded the Duke were all gone in and he just upon entrance encompassed with a great multitude, as in fuch a Ducal Pomp was convenient: the first that moved towards him were Lampognano and Girolathese pretending to make room for the

Galeazo Duke of Milan flain.

Duke came up close to him, and affaulted him with harp and hort daggers they had hid in their fleeves. Lampognano gave him two wounds, one in the Belly, and thee ther in the threat; Girolamo likewil wounded him in the throat and the breffe Charles Visconti having taken his stand new the door, to that the Duke was past him cre he was fer upon by his companions, could not reach to wound him before, but game him two flabs into the back and shoulder fo quick and fudden were thefe fix wound given, that the Duke was fallen before an man perceived it, nor could he do o fay any thing that was known, fave only as he fell, he once cryed out , O Las belp me, The Duke fallen, the noise an clamour was great, many fwords were drawn, and as it usually happens in such unlook'd for cases, many run out of the Churchy and many run towards the to mult, without knowing any certainty of the matter. But those that were neared to the Duke, and had feen him flain, knowing his murderers, purfued them; and of the conspirators John Andrea endeavouring to get out of the Church went among the women, who being many, and as the cafrom was, fet on the ground, he was forentangled by their coats, that by a Moor one of the Dukes Footmen, he was overtaken and flain : Charles was like wife flain by the standers by ; but Girolama Olgiati escaped out among the croud, and feeing his companions

II be

di be th

fto

w

in

he

111

te

ch

an

TOC

in th

mions flain, and not knowing whither to went home, where neither his father nor brothers would receive him; but his other having compassion of her son, recommended him to a Priest, an ancient friend of their Family; who putting him in his Friars weeds conveyed him to his house where he staid two days, not without hopes that there might some tumult be miled in Milan, whereby he might be laved, but that not coming to pass, and fearing to be found there, he attempted to flye in difguife, but being known he was brought before the Magistrate, where he declared the whole order of the conspiracy. Girolamo was about three and twenty years of age, nor was he less resolute in suffering, than he had been in acting; for whilest he stood naked, and the Hangman before him with his knife in his hand ready to cut him in pieces, he spoke these Latine words, for he was Tearned, Mors acerba, fama perpetus, stabit vetus memoria facti. This attempt of these unhappy young men was closely contrived, and resolutely executed; and the occasion of their ruine was their not being followed, or defended by those they trufted would have done it. Let Princes therefore learn to live in fuch a manner, and gain fo much love and reverence. that none can hope for fafety that kills them: and let private persons know how vain the imagination is, to believe the multitude, though they are discontented, will in dan-

Machiavel's Hiftery Book VII.

ger follow or accompany them. This accident amazed all Italy, but those which soon after happened in Florence did much more terrise it; by which the peace which had continued twelve years was broke; as in the next Book shall be set down, which as it begins with Blood and Horrour, so it ends with forrow and tears!

on hope, they there is explaine confiction which is wisher when he might be tavel, but ried nor follows the configuration of the total them. It is more to the indigence, but being known he wishounged to the configurate where he declared to what order of the configuration where he declared to what about the the configuration what where the declared the what where the declared the configuration of the confi

on may be lets refolute in fufferion. than he had been in acture; for while it is lood miked and the Hangman before hun with his haife in his band ready to cut his inspicers, be thoke the leating words, for May H Tearning Mars seevba; fina perpehas findit verus memoria facili. This arleast of their trebessor young men was defely contrived; and refolutely executed. ad the occasion of their mine was their not being followed, or detended by thate, iney truffed would have done in Lee lunces therefore learn to five in fach if many ner, and gain to much love and severedoes that none can hope for fafety that kills thens: and he private perfore anow how win the inappropriate to believe the multicule. though they are discontanted, will in dam-

74

And organied thems to to compile in the

Market Consider Toron

cipity over the curve to was howeld a Florentine History La Ir nir online the contended with southering consiled to

Written by Millians

MACHIAVEL. the rot returnation and to remain so the

Carvemprene was for closely aranged



on nel ad in

ad

He beginning of this eighth Book being placed in the midst of two Conspiracies, one in Milon already related, the other happening in Florence, and now to be t chime to bastold. It might frem con-

venient (purfuant to the method begun) to discourse something concerning the nature of Conspiracies, and the importance of them, which I would willingly do, if I had not before spoken concerning them, or were a matter to be briefly paffed over. But fince it both requireth great confideration, and something has already been elsewhere faid concerning it, I forbear any further mention thereof, and proceed to relate. That as the House of the Medici had overcome all those enemies, which openly 21:107

oh the

iu.

m

Machiavel's Hiftory Book VIII.

had opposed them; so to compleat to themfelves and Family, the fole and ample anthority over the City; it was likewife requifite they should oppress all those who feeretly plotted against them, for while they contended with authority equalled by any other Families, those Citizens who envied their greatness, might openly oppole them without fear of being oppressed in the beginning of their attempts; for whilef the Magistrates were free, neither Faction till they had loft the day, had any occasion of fear. But after the victory in 1466, the Government was fo closely grasped by the Medici, and they affumed fo great Authority, that if any were discontented, the were enforced either patiently to fubmit to the Government under which they lived or else privately and by way of conspirate attempt a remedy; which plots feldom fueceed, begetting for the most part ruine to those which form them, and greatness to those against whom they are contrived; so that any Prince or Lord of a City being by conspiracy' affaulted, if he be not like the Duke of Milan (which rarely happens) flain, becomes more powerful than before and oft-times from a good man turns wicked, for these private plots create occafions of fear, fear feeks fecurity, and the fearch of fecurity produces injury of others, which is the common mother of hatred, and oftentimes of his own destruction; and thus indeed treasons are the immediate defroyers

60

re kı

(p

flroyers of those that contrive them, and one way or other in conclusion offend him arainst whom they are contrived. Italy was we have before related, divided into two actions: the Pope and King of one party, Two pow and the Venetians Duke and Florentines on om in Baly the other. And though war was not yet kindled amongst them, yet every day brought forth new blafts to blow the coals. and the Pope especially in all his actions and enterprises studied to affront the State of Florence; for Philip de Medici Archbishop of Pifa, about that time dying, the Pope contrary to the will of the Senate of Florence invested Francis Salviati, whom he knew to be an enemy to the house of Mediei with that Archbishoprick, to whom the Senate refusing to give possession, there forung up new, and more grievous offences, by reason of that contest between the Pope and that State, befides in Rome his Holiness conferred many favours on the Family of the Pezzi, and upon all occasions discountenanced the Medici. The Pazzi in those times both for riches and honour, lived in as much splendor as any family in Florence; the head of whom was Meffer Jacob, who for his Riches and Nobility was by the people made Knight; he had no children, but one natural daughter, but he had many Nephews. fons of Meffer Peter and Anthony his brothers; the chief of which were William. Francis, Rinate and John, and after them, Andrew, Nicholas and Galeatto : Cofmo de Medici

111

re should by crock

left ion ion the the to to

fo

17 10) C. IS IL IC TO L. I

ed

wa

the

70

on

kn wi

¢2

22

th

ga

(e

th

OI

th

th th

d

ft h

t

Medici (observing their riches and glory) had married his Niece Biancha to William hoping by this alliance to keep the Familie more united, and remove that enmity and hatred, which are the usual products of envy and jealousie: yet (so fallacious and uncertain are the contrivances of man matters fell out quite otherwise, for those who counfelled Lorenzo, infinuated how it was dangerous and destructive to his an thority, to fuffer any Citizens to heap up Riches and Honours; whence it happened that Mr. Jacob and his Nephews were not advanced to those degrees of Honour, other Citizens thought they had deferved: and hence forung the first anger in the Parbetween the zi, and fear in the Medici, and the one in creating, afforded matter and growth to the other; for the Pazzi in all debates to which the other Citizens affembled, were not kindly hearkened to by the Magistrates: And the counsel of eight (Francis Page happening to be at Rome) upon a flight occafion, and without observing the respect usual to Citizens of his quality, constrained him to return to Florence, which made the Pazzi in all places rip up their grievances with bitter and vehement reproaches, and those increased the others jealousies, and added to their own injury. John Parzi had married the daughter of John Borromei a very rich man, whose estate, he dye-

> ing without iffue Male, fell by right to his daughter; however Charles his Nephew

Discontents Medici and Panni.

possessed

and

and

an 1 hol

now 211

OD

ned not

170

cd: 42

m

1 to

5 00

cat es:

ZZi oc-cd

in-

ide

Y-

h-

CS,

10-

nis

ory coffessed himself of part of his goods, and item the cause coming to a tryal, a Law was niles made difinheriting John Pazzi's wife, and and giving the estate to Charles, which injustice s of the Pazzi wholly imputed to the Medici's bout which Julian many times complained to his brother Lorenzo, telling him he was doubtful, least by grasping too much they should lofe all; but Lorenzo warm in youth and authority would take all things on himself, and was ambitious, men should know they were done by him. The Partie with fo great riches, and fuch nobility, incapable of fuffering fo many injuries, began to confult how they might revenge themselves: the first that made a motion against the Medici was Francis, who more fenfible, and withal more couragious than the rest, resolved to attain what he wanted. or lose what he had; and because he hated the Government of Florence, he lived for the most part in Rome, where according to the custom of the Florentine Merchants, he drove a great Trade, and had a mighty flock of money, and Earl Girolamo being his intimate Friend, they often made mutual complaints of the Medici; infomuch that after many confultations, they at length concluded that ere the one could be fecure in his estate, or the other in his City. there was an absolute necessity of changing conference the Government of Florence, which they against Locould contrive no way to effect, but by the renze and death of Lorenzo and Julian: they supposed dici.

26

the Pope and the King would cafily con Lent, if the facility of accomplishing it wer declared to them , having formed these imaginations in their heads, they communicated them to Francis Salviati Archbifle of Pifa, who being ambitious, and late injured by the Medici, readily joined with them; and examining among themselves what was fit to be done, they determined (to add the greater facility to the enterprize) to gain Meffer Jacob Pazzi to convenient that Francis Pazzi (hould to this intent go to Florence, and the Archbishon and Earl stay at Rome to sollicite the Pope when there thould be occasion. Francis being come to Florence, found Meffer Jacob more referved, and difficult to be perswaded, than he could have wished him; whereof giving advice to Rome, it was judged fit to employ some greater authority to dispose him, to which end, the Archbishop and Earl communicated the whole delign to John Battiffa of Monteseces the Popes General; he was a very famous Captain, and much obliged to the Pope and Earl, yet he disliked the plot as difficult and dangerous; which danger and difficulties the Archbishop endeavoured to remove, by telling him what affiftance the Pope and King would give to the enteprife, adding withal the hate born by the Citizens of Florence to the Medici, the numetous kindred of the Salviati and Pazzi, and the

th

an Fl

the

to.

fire

aff

the

bo

Ja mi

the

die

wi

A W

fir

¢e.

nopicely vest to this per to the
n;

725

ity

h

ole he

ous period to he control

the eafinels of killing them as they were walking the City without any guard or any suspicion, which done, the change of Government would follow of course; all which John Battifta gave no intire credit to, aving heard many Florentines affirm the contrary. Whilest they were laying these plots and contrivances, it happened that Charles Lord of Faenza fell fo fick, that there was little hopes of his recovery. The archbishop and Earl thought they had now en opportunity to fend John Battifta to Florence, and thence into Romania, under pretence of regaining certain towns poffeffed by the Lord of Faenza the Earl therefore gave Commiffion to John Barrita to confer with Lorenzo; and in his name defire his advice in the management of the affairs of Romania, and that afterwards he should confule with Franck Pages, and both together endeavour to dispose Meller faceb to their party, and to the end he might be back'd with the Popes authority. they procured him before his departure audience from his Holiness, who engaged with all his power to further the defign. John Battifta being arrived at Florence addreffed himfelf to Lorenzo, by whom he was courteoufly received, and in all his demends prudently and friendly advised; at which John Battifta was fomewhat amazed, finding him a man quite different from what he had been represented, for he perceived him to be courteops, differeet and a 8 B great

fh Re

th

er A

W file

ho

far

w

fad bif

dre

great friend of the Earls; however he would focak with Francis, but not finding him (for he was gone to Lucca) he went himself to Meffer fatob, and at first found him very averse to the defign, but before they patted (fomewhat moved with the Popes authority) he told John Battiffa that he should go to Romania, and by that time he returned Francis would be come to Fla rence, and then they would discourse the matter at large. John Battifta went and to turned, and fill continued to entertain Le menzo with his feigned Commission from the Earl, and afterwards held divers conferences with Francis and Meffer Facob, whom at length they prevailed with so far, the be conferred to the confpiracy. Then the began to consult of the execution, Melingues thought it impossible whilest both brothers were in Florence, and therefore adwhicher there was a report he was deligned lear Francis would have been glad to have he vel Lorenzo at Rome; however supposing he sail did not go, he affirmed that either at a ma wedding, at some publick sports, or in the Ber Church both brothers might be flain; and flow as to foreign aid, in his judgment the Popt oblimight draw together an Army, under pro- tho tence of affaulting the Caftle of Monta, the which he had a puft occasion to take from Earle Charler, for having raifed the tumnis To before mentioned in the Countrey of Sime with and Penigia; yet they made no farther and conclusion and 18 be

nt

nd

ire the

nat

me

the

20 Le

thi

fer

ion

chat

di

conclusion fave that Francis de Parzi and Tobic Battifta should go to Rome; and there with the Pope and Earl determine all things, the matter was afresh debated at Rome, and in the end it was concluded (an expedition sgainst Mentone being resolved) that John Francis of Tolentino, a Captain of the Popes should go into Romania, and Lorenze of Cafello into his own Country, and both keep their forces in a readiness to observe fuch orders, as they hould receive from the Archbishop Salviati, and Francis Pazzi, who together with John Battifta of Montefice should come to Florence, where they hould make provision of all things neces fary to put their defign in execution, to they which King Ferdinand had by his Ambaffador promised his affiftance. The Archbishop and Francis, being come to Florence, at drew into their party, Jacob the fon of om, Meffer Poggio, a young man of excellent ned learning, but ambitious, and defirous of Nohal velty; they likewife engaged two Jacob g ht Salviati's, the one brother, the other kinfat a man to the Archbishop, to them they added the Bernardo Bandini , and Napoleone Francefi, por sbliged by the Pazzi, of strangers (besides those before named) there were joyned with them Messer Antonio de Volterra, and one stephen a Priest, who taught the Latin nuls Tongue to Jacob de Pazzi's daughter. Re-Sire nue de Pazzi, a prudent and grave man, that and who very well knew the ill confeafion 8 B 2

XUM

quences of fuch undertakings, not only refused to joyn in the conspiracy, but de tested it, and by all honest means he could fought to prevent it. The Pope had in the University of Pifa caused to be educated in the fludy of the Cannon Laws, Raffael de Riario, Nephew to Earl Girolamo, and whilst he was yet there, had advanced him to the Dignity of Cardinal. The Conspirators thought convenient to bring this Cardinal to Florence, not only the better to conceal the Plot (as designing in his house to hide these Conspirators, they had occasion of) but likewife to gain a fitter opportunity of excuting it. The Cardinal therefore coming, wasby Meffer Jacob de Pazzi en tertained at Montugbi, his Country-house near Florence. The Conspirators by his means had defigned to get-Lorenzo and for lian together, and the first time that happened to kill them: they therefore contrived, they should invite the Cardinal to their own house at Fiefale, whither Inlian by chance, or of purpose came not, so that appointment failed; then they determined he should invite them at Florence, whither they could not chuse but both come, and appointed the feast on Sunday the 26 of April 1478, the Conspirators hoping they might find means to murther them, at this feast met together on Saturday night, and ordered all things they thought fit for the execution next day, but in the morning Francis Pazze had intelligence that Julian would

M

Sin

et

B

P

m

of

ha

w

to

BY

for

eh

W

\$01

to

th

m

th

th

in

be

和抽

H

ly let

ıld

hô

in

acl

nd

im

-00

his

te

eto

ion

rity

ort

en-

ufe

his

700

ap-

on-

to

lian

rhat

ned

ther

and

s of

hey

this

and

the

ning

dias

puld

would not come to the Feast, whereupon the Conspirators again affembled and conduded, that the execution must not be longer delayed; for that it was impossible, being known to fo many, but it would be discovered ; wherefore they resolved to murther them in the Cathedral Church of Santia Reparata, whither the Cardinal going, the two brothers would (according to euttom) attend him, they affigned to John Battifts the charge of killing Lorenzo, and Francis Pazzi, and Bernard Bandini were to murder Julian, John Battiffa refused the office: for whether the familiarity he had had with Lorenzo had foftned his mind, or whether moved by some other reason, he told them he durft not commit fuch a villaby in the Church, and add facriledge to treafon. This was the first step to the ruine of their defign; for straitened by time, they were constrained to give the charge to Antonio of Volterra, and Stephen the Prieft two whose nature and experience rendred them unfit for it; for no action requires more resolution and settled courage than this, and he who undertakes any thing of this kind, ought to be a man experienced in blood and flaughter, it having oft-times been seen that men, though trained up in arms, and at all times elfe couragious have had their hearts fail upon such attempts, However this resolution held and they at preed that the fignal to fall on hould be when the Priest at the high Altar began 8 B 3

to fing Mass, and that at the fame time the Archbishop Salviati, with Giacopo Pozgio, should feize on the publick Palace, to the intent the Senate might be brought (as foon as the two young men were flain) cither voluntarity, or by force to favour their delign. Thus determined, they went to the Church, whither the Cardinal with Larenzo Medici were already gone. The Church was full of people, and Divine Service begun ; but Julian Medici, not vet come, whereupon Francis Pazzi, together with Bernardo, who were appointed to murder him, went home to find him, and by cunning flattery, and artifices perswaded him to come to Church. It is a thing notoriously memorable how such inveterate hatred, accompanied with the thoughts of fo detestable a villany, could with fuch undauntedness of mind, and obstinacy of soirit be concealed in Francis and Barnardo, for all the way as they conducted him, and in the Church, they entertained him with pleasant and youthful discourse. Nor did Francis forbear out of a pretence of kindness and familiarity to take Julian in his arms, embracing and preffing his body to find out, if he had any privy armour. Gin-Bian and Lorenzo were both fenfible of the hate the Passi bore them, and how they defired to take away their authority in the State, but they did not fear their lives, be lieving when they did attempt any thing they would do it civily, and not with such cxtrc-

1

S

b

h

2

b

6

h

P

£

IIL

ime og+

to (25

CIneir

to Le

The ètre.

yet

urby

norate

of

un-

Spido.

end ich

did

ndhis

to

in:

the ney de la right

TC.

extremity of violence, and therefore free from any fuch mistrust, they took so little care of themselves, that they always entertained them with all manner of friendliness. The Murtherers thus prepared those appointed to affaffinate Lownes, thrust up close to him, which by reason of the croud, they might eafily do without suspicion, and the others did the like to Julian, when the time gallon Me. appointed being come, Bernardo Bandini dici flais. with a thort dagger prepared for the purpole, stabs Julian in the breft, who advancing two or three steps fell to the ground, and Francis Pazzi throwing himfelf upon him, loaded him with wounds, and was fo eager in his villany, that blinded with rage and fury, he gave himself a desperate wound in the leg : Meffer Antonio and Friar Stephen on the other fide fell upon Lorenzo, but though they made many strokes at him, they gave him only a flight wound in the throat; for either through their cowardile, or Lorenzo's courage (who feeing himself thus affaulted, bravely with his fword defended himfelf fo their attempt was frustrate, and he by the astistance of those about him faved from further harm, whereat difmayed they fled and bid themselves, but were afterwards found out, thamefully put to death, and dragged through the City. Lorenzo in the mean while retired into the Veftry of the Church with those faves himself friends he had about him, and there thut themselves in. Barnard Bandini seeing Ju-8 B 4 battira

m

2

of

始始

PT

io ha

fri

án

hi

60

hi

fo

in

w

ar

re

bil

ari pa

th

bil

Po

G

Ci

Pa

Sill

-

for

and Brief

tian dead, flew likewise Francis Neri great friend of the Medici either out of fome old grudge, or because he had ender voured to fave Julian, and not content with these two murders, he ran to seek out Lorenzo, to supply with his courage and activity, the floath and cowardise of the others ; but finding him thut up in the Veftry, failed of his intent. In the midft of this dreadful and villanous accident, the terrour of which made most men think the Church was falling on their heads, the Care dinal retired to the Altar, where with great difficulty he was faved by the Priefts, till by the Senates order (when the tumult was ceased) he was conveyed to his Palace, where in great fear he remained till his delivery. There was at this time in Florence some Perugians driven from their habitations by the factions, enemies to their Families, whom the Pazzi (upon promite to reftore them to their Country) had drawn into the conspiracy. These the Archbishop Salviati (who together with faceb Poggio, the two Salviati, and other friends, was gone to poffes himself of the Palace) took along with him, and being come to the Palace, left some of his men below with orders, that when they heard a noise they should seife on the gates, and himself with the greatest part of the Perugians, went up, where finding the Senate at dinper, for it was late he was prefently by Cafar Petrucci Gonfaloniere of Justice admitted

13

of 23

at ek

nd he

of

he

14

by as

e,

100

1 u

fè

he

is,

6)

Wei

s, le

d

mitted. Whereupon entring with a few and leaving the remainder without they of their own accord thut themselves into the Chancery, whose lock was so contrived. that without the Key, it could not be opened, neither on the infide, nor without, The Archbishop mean while being gone in with the Gonfaloniere, under pretence of having some matter to confer with him from the Pope, began to utter fome broken and discomposed words: Infomuch, that his fearful speech, and the change of his countenance bred fuch a suspition in the Gonfaloniere, that with a great cry he thrust him out; and finding there Jacob Poggio, took him by the hair, and delivered him into the hands of the Serjeants; and the whole Senate taking the alarum with fuch arms as came next to hand, felk upon the rest that were come up with the Archbishop, and (part of them being shut up; and part terrified and difmaid) foon difpatcht them all, or threw them alive out of The Archthe Palace windows : Of whom the Arch- bishop and bishop, the two Jacob Salviati's, and Jacob other confpirators Poggia were hanged. Those who remains hanged. ed below in the Palace, had forced the Guards and the Gate, and possessed themfelves of all the lower rooms; fo that the Citizens, who in this Tumult ran to the Palace, could neither with their arms affift, nor counfel advise the Senators. Mean while Francis Pazzi and Bernard Bandini feeing Lorenzo escaped, and one of themfelves, hollo

B

tu

C

bi

fe

fa

W

th

th

21

u

M

d

-

1

felves, in whom the main hopes of the enterprife lay, grievously wounded, were daunted. And Bernardo; with the fame activity of spirit, wherewith he had affaulted the Medici, begins to confider of his own fafety, and feeing all loft flees to fave himself. Francis being returned to his house, made tryal if he could fit on horse back, (for the orders were, that he with fome men at arms should ride about the Town, and call the people to liberty and arms) but he could not, so dangerous was his wound, and fo much blood he had loft; wherefore putting off his clothes, he laid himself in his naked bed, desiring Metfer Jacob to do that which he himself could not; Meffer Jacob, though old and unused to these Tumults, yet to make this last tryal of his fortune, mounted on horseback, with about an hundred armed men prepared before for that purpose, and goes into the Piazza of the Palace, calling the people to his affistance, and proclaiming liberty; but because the first were by the fortune and liberality of the Medici made deaf, and the other was no otherwise defired in Florence than enjoyed, no one anfwered him, only the Senate, who fill kept in the upper part of the Palace, faluted him with stones, and with the deepest threatnings they could devise, terrified him: And Meffer Jacob being in suspence what to do, was met by John Sorifteri his brother-in-Law, who reproving him for being the occalion ene

/cre

emė

ule-

his

rfoith

the

ind Was

he

of ald fed you

10-D-

he ig

N

d

ä

cation of these Tumults, exhorted him to return to his house, affuring him that the welfare of the people and liberty of the City concerned other Citizens as well as himself. Wherefore despairing of any help. feeing Lorenzo his enemy alive, Francis wounded, and himself not followed by any, not knowing what other course to take, he refolved, if it were possible, by flight to fave his life, and to that end with the company he had with him in the Piazza, takes his way out of Florence towards Romania: By this time all the City was up in arms, and Lorenzo de Medici was, accompanied with many armed men, come to his own house: The people had likewise recovered the Palace, and killed or taken all those that possessed it. And now the name of Mediei was proclaimed through every fireet. and the quarters of the dead, either fixed upon their weapons points, or dragged through the fireets; and every one with words full of rage and actions as cruel perfecuted the Pazzi, already had the people entred their houses, and naked as he was drawn Francis out, whom having drag'd to the Palace, they hanged up with the Archbishop, and the rest: Yet all the injuries and affronts done him, either in the way, or afterwards could not extract one word from him, but fixedly looking upon every one, without so much as a groan, he The refolute dyed. William Pazzi, as well for his own Francis innocency, as for the fake of his wife Pazzi. Bianca

Bienes, was faved in his Brother-in-law Lorenzo's Palace. There was not a Citizen in this terrible necessity, but either armed or difarmed, went to Lorenzo's house, offering him their lives and fortunes. So great was the love and favour that House had by their prudence and liberality gained. Rinato Pazzi was (when this villany was done) retired into his house in the Country, where hearing the news, he would have fled in disguise, but by the way was known, taken and brought back to Florence, Meffer Jacob was likewife taken paffing the Mountains, for those Mountaineers having notice of what was past at Florence, suspecting him because of his flight, set upon him & brought him back, nor could he obtain the favour, though he often beg'd it to to be killed by them on the way. Meffer Jacob and Rinate were adjudged to dye four days after the action, and in all those executions which in that interval happened, and which had covered the fireets with the Carcales and quarters of men, none was observed to be pittyed, or to touch any man with the least compassion, but Rinate, for he was esteemed a good and a prudent man, and not observed to be tainted with that pride which infected the rest of his Family. And now because the persecution of these Confpirators should be in all points exemplary. Meffer Jacob Pazzi was first taken out of the Tomb of his Ancestors, and as one excommunicated, buried under the City walls, and

ye ne an mila

an

pe

ali

la

th

th

po

mi

:11

ha

be

he

le

in

A

to

ce

th

000

ıs

d

15

e. le

g t-&c ne

lid

f-

ns h

es d

th

25

d

le

d

1

y.

nè

20

Ġ.

id

and being there again dug up, and with the ame halter, in which he was hanged, drag'd maked through the fireets, and fince he could not on earth find a quiet Sepulture was by those that thus drag'd him thrown into the River Arno, whose waters were then very high. A great example of the ficklenels of fortune, to fee a man of that riches and of fo happy an Estate, fall with so much infelicity ruine and difgrace. Some have reported him very vitious, as addicted to gaming and swearing, like one desperate and careless. If it were so, he recompenfed those vices with his liberality and alms, for he relieved many poor, and gave large Donatives to pious Structures. And this one good thing may be faid of him that the Saturday preceding the iday appointed for this cruel murder, (that none might be (harers in his mistortune) he paid all his debts, and all the Merchandise he had either in the Custom-house, or at home. belonging to others, with wonderful care he caused to be delivered to the owners. John Battifta de Montesecco, after many tedious examinations was beheaded. Napoleane Francesi by flight escaped punishment. William Pazzi was confined, and all his Kinfmen that remained alive imprisoned in the Dungeon of the Castle of Volterra All Tumults appealed, and the Conspirators punished, the Funerals of Julian were celebrated, which were accompanied with the tears of all the Citizens, for indeed he was

a man endowed with all that winning affability courtefie and liberality could be wished or defired in one of his degree and condition There remained of him one fon, born fome few months after his death, and called Julie, who is endowed with that virtue and fortune, which all the world at present knows, and which when I come to the occurrences of these times, shall, God granting me life fully fet forth. Those forces under Meffer Lorenzo de Castello in the Vale of Tevere, and those under John Francisco Tolentino in Remania were both advancing at the fame time towards Florence; in favour of the Pazzi till understanding how the design had mis carried, they returned back. But fince that change of Government in Florence deligned by the King and Pope had not succeeded; they determined that what they could not effect by conspiracies, they would by open war; and both one and the other with all possible speed drew together their Forces to affault the State of Florence, declaring that all they defired from that City was the removal of Lorenzo de Medici, who only of all the Florentines was their enemy. The Kings forces had already passed the Tronto, and the Popes were in the Country of Perugia, who that he might make the Florentines feel the fmart of Spiritual as well as Temporal wounds, excommunicates and curies them. Whereupon the Florentines feeing fo many feveral forces moving against them, prepared with all diligence for their defence, and

The Pope and King make war with Florence,

R

Los In

ch

m

fo

I

-

70

Spi

ex

300

Fa

for

WH

for

fo

Ci

for

23

h

180

16

IE

fa-

in

me

ie.

Mil

S

11-

me

Ter

nd

Roy

me

zi

nife

hat

ned

ed;

not

pen

all

to

hat

re-

all

ngs

the

ho

the

ral

di

INT

red

and

Los

Larenzo de Medici, fince publick fame reported the War, made only against him, afsembles in the Palace of the Lords all the Citizens of quality, to the number of above three hundred, to whom he spake in this manner. I know not (most mighty Lords and Right worshipful Citizens) whether I ought to grieve or rejoyce at what is lately bappened for when I consider with bow much frand and deceit, with how much malice and batred I was affaulted, and my brother flain, I cannot but be concerned for my felf, and with all my beart, and with all my foul grieve for bim : but when I confider with what stive readinefe. with what faithful diligence, with what intire love, and univerful confent, you have revenged my brother, and defended me, I cannot but rejoyce; nay, I find my felf enalted in my spirits, and glory in my fortune: For if this experience bas let me know I bad more onemies in this City than I thought : It bas likewife taught me, that I have more fervent and faithful friends than I believed, I must sherefore condole with you for she injuries of others. and rejoyce for your knidness: yet ought my forrow to be the greater at the injuries received, are so rare, so without example, and fo little by w deferved. Confider, most worthy Citizens to what extremities the perverfness of fortune bas reduced our boufe, that the being encompassed with friends in the midit of our kindred ; no, not the Church it felf can fecure III. Those who are in fear of death ufe to run to their friends for affiftance, to their kindred for 20565

Coli

leat

14

w th

for protestion, but we also find ours armed for our destruction. Ibase who either on publich or private accounts are perfermed, wife to flee to the Church for Sancinary, but where others are defended, me are flain. Where Pared eides and affassines are secure the Medici meet their Murderers : But God who bath bit therto never forfaken our bonse, bath now pre-Served us, and undertaken the defence of an just cause. For what injury have me ever done to create in any man for fierce a defire of revenge? thefe very men, who have perfecuted us with such mallee, we never so much as privately offended, for had me injured them, they could never have had the opportunity thus to injure us. And when they attribute to publick injuries, if ever any were done them (which I know not off) they offend you more then then us , and this Palace, and the Majetty of reve this Government, rather than our house, by imagining that you, for our sakes, undeserved you ly oppress your Citizens, which is a suggestion mag imagining that you, for our fakes, undeferved utterly alien to truth, for me, if me could, and you, if we would had never confented to it, for mboever fearches into the truth, will find that our boufe, for no other cause bas with such with general confent been advanced by you, but on-Ay that we have fill endeavoured with liberslity and kindness to overcome all men. If me then have been bonouvers of strangers , bon should me be injurers of our Kindred? If defire of rule moved them to this (as their feifing the Palace, and coming armed into the Piazza Sufficiently evidences) the more wicked ambitions

II.

fal

ick Ice

ers

di

ici

bie

reone retell oribey

ion nd

for bas

ub

019-

12

ON.

12

is and damnable the occasion is, the more it overs and condemns it felf. If out of en-na barred to our authority they had done they offend not us, but you that gave it furely that authority merits hate which usurp, not what they gain by liberality, and magnificence. And you we And you well our boufe never mounted to any degree mour, but by the order of this Magistracy, your universal consent : My Grandfather Colmo returned not from banishment by arms violence, but your general and united vote. Father when old and infirm defended not inself from fo many Enemies of the State you with your good will and authority deded bim. Nor could I after my farbers bath, (being but as it were a child) have wint ained the honour of my family, had it not en supported by your favour and counsel: ever could those of my Family have governed, is Republick bad not you with them governed you do still govern it; I cannot therefore magine mbat reason they have to bate us, w whence their Malice sprung? let them enby their own Ancestors, who with pride and warice loft that reputation, which ours with wite different qualities bave known bow to gain. But grant that we have done them mighty injuries, and they had reason to proseente our ruine: yet why should they offend this Palace? Why enter into a league with the King and Pope against the liberty of this Republick? Wby difturb the fetled peace of Italy? In this they are without excuse, for

they aught to offend those who have ofen them, and not confound private appointed publick injuries; whereby though their make flope, our miseries are revived, the P and King (upon their fole account) com to invade us: which war they say is made gainst me and my family. I wish to God were true, then the remedy were both rea and certain; for I will never be foill a Ca zeu, to value more my omn fafety, than danger; much rather should I quench y flames with my own ruine; but because injur done by the mighty, are always covered m fome more feemly presence, they have che this weil to cost over their present injustice: if you think otherprife, I am in your bon you may support, or you may suppress me, my fathers, you my defenders, for what a you shall command, I shall readily obey; will I refuse, if you shall think fit, to end the War with my own, which was begun with brothers blood. The Citizens while Leren spoke, could not refrain from tears, and with the same compassion he was heard, be was by one commissioned thereunto, TheCitizens (wered: Telling him, that City acknowledge) obliging and ledged the merits of him and his, to be fact that he might rest assured, that with the same municipalities and affection wherewith they had to the wenged his brother, and defended him, they would still preserve his life and reputation, are should be lose either, till they had lost there are Countrey. And to make their actions correspond with their words, they ordered a new respond with their words, they ordered a new respond.

free to Lerenzo's speech.

a guard

0

mit mid

of c

MET

Go Go plea

ian

ard of his body, a cortain number of ers to be maintained by the publick, to ad him against demestick testalous, then and raifing money as far as their power ther would extend; by victue of their me, they fem likewife to the Duke and slote for aid. And fince the Pose had ad himself a wolf, and not a Shepherd they might not as guilty be devoured the best declarations they could invent instified their cause, filling all Italy accounts of the treafons practifed a their State: "Setting forth the imty and injustice of the Pope, who have ne by unlawful means ularped the Paicy, with malice exercised it; for he not only fent one, by him advanced the chief prelatical Dignity, in the commy of Traitors and Parricides, to commidft of Divine Service, and at the inflant of the celebration of the most holy Sacrament, but afterwards (fince his defign of mardering their Citizens, changing their Government, and facking their City at Measure had not succeeded)he had excommunicated, and with papal maledictions dreatned and oppressed them : but if God were just, who hated violence, he would certainly manifest his displeasure atho(having no other refuge)had recourse mto him. And fo far were the Florentines 8C 1

ese Pores

from

The Flores times (light the Popes surfes,

from receiving this interdiction or ober ic that they forced the Priests to celeb Divine Service. They likewife fummon Council in Florence of all the Prelate Tufeany under their Dominion who they appealed from the unjust fentence the Pope, to the next General Cour nor did the Pope want reasons to just his cause; alleadging, "That it ap " tained to a true paftor of the Churc " extirpate Tyranny, depress the wich " and exalt the good, and that it belon "not to the fecular power to imprison of " dinals, hang Bishops, kill, quarter "drag through the streets Pricits with " any diffinction, flaying the innocent " the guilty. Notwithstanding fo in quarrels and accusations the Card whom the Flirenines had in their cuffe was delivered up to the Pope, whereu he without any fear or respect, with his and the Kings Forces affailed them : the two Armies (one under Alphonfo. eft fon of Ferdinand Duke of Calabria, the other under Frederick Earl of Urba being entred Chianti by way of Si (which fided with the enemy) took Re and feveral other Castles, and wasted the Countrey; which done, they encu ed before Castellina. The Florentines holding that herce invalion, were in g fear, being destitute of men, and held in their friends coming flowly; for tho the Duke fent fome fuecours, the Ve

The King and Pope invade the Florentines.

con Ferr

denied themselves obliged to aid the mentmer in a private quarrel, for private Micrences Were not to be publickly defend-wherefore the Florentines to dispose he Venetians to juffer thoughts, lent The Soderini Ambaffadour to that Senate, and in the mean time they hired Soldiers, making Hercules Marquis of Ferrars their General: whilest they were making these eparations, the enemies Army to clotely rightned Castellina, that the Townsmen dpairing of any relief, after forty days lege yielded. Thence the enemy turned towards Areaso, and encamped before Monte S. Sovino : by this time the Floren-Army was in a readiness, and advanwithin three miles of them, and so much scommoded them, that Frederick of Urbin mired truce for forme few days, which was antage, that thole who asked it wondred for had they flot obtained it, they must have been forced to depart with shame and Shonour, bur having to many days to put themselves in order s no sooner was the truce expired, bur they took the Castle before the Florentines faces; however winter now coming on, for the better convetiency of quarters, the enemy retreated into the Countrey of Siena, and the Florenlikewife withdrawing into the most commodious stations; the Marquis of ferrara (having done little good for him-8 C 3

Genous re-

lelf, and less for others) returned to li own Country. About this time General rebelled from the State of Miles upon the occasions. After the death of Galcazzo, Jon his fon being of an age unfit for Government there arole contention between Sforza, Len Ollavian and Aleanius his uncles, and the La dy Fona his mother, for every one of then would have the tuition of the young Du In which controversie the Lady Bona old Dutchels (by the advice of Iban Soderini then Amballador there for the State of Florence, and Cecco Simonetto who ha been Secretary to Galeanto) got the better whereupon the Sforzi flying from Mile Odawan palling the Adda was drowned the other were confined to leveral places together with Robert Lard of San Severin who during those troubles had deserted the Dutchels, and joined with them. After wards those wars happening in Talean, hoping by new accidents to meet with new fortunes, they broke their confinements and each attempted new exploits, to relien themselves to their lott honours: King ale in all their necessity, affilted only by the State of Milan, to deprive them likewife of that support, contrived to give the Dutch the could pot provide for the Florentines and by means of Professo Adors, the Long. Robert and the rebel Sforza caused General to rebel against the Duke. There remains

が出出に

8.23

d

of only faithful to him the little Caftle, rering on which, the Dutchels fent a conthing defeated, and the feeing the danger langing over her fons effates and her fell, Talcany being topfic-turvey, and the Flosentines on whom alone the relyed, in didels, the determined fince the could not ain Genous her subject, to recover it her friend, and agreed with Battifine Fregofo enemy to the Adorsti to give him the little Ciffle, and make him Prince of Genous on condition he would drive out the Aand nor favour the rebet Sforzi: Batof the help of the little Caffe, and sfaction, becomes maffer of Genova, and according to their custom thakes himself Boge, fo that the Sforzi and Lord Robert chased out of Genova; came with their adherents and followers into Lungiana; whereupon the King feeing the troubles of Limbardy were composed, took occasion from these out-cafts of Genders to disturb Tastany towards Pifa, that the Florentines dividing their Forces might be weakened, which end they gave order (winter being already part) that the Lord Robert hould with his Porces advance from Lanilater fellificrely to work, and many of the Pifan Caftles he took and fack'd, and at length made his incursions as far as the City. Whilest these things were in agitation, there arrived at Florence Ambaffadous 8C4 from

(ta

nex

nts

ore

でいる。

OMA OMA

į,

from the Emperour, the King of France and King of Hungary, all fent from their respective Princes to the Pope, who perswaded the Flarentines to send, Ambaffa, dours to his Holinels, affuring them of their utmost affifiance by a good and found peace to put an end to this war; the Florentines. refuled not tontry the experiment, to render themselves blameless, and make it appear to all men they were lovers of peace. to the Ambassadours went, but returned without any conclusions whereupon the Florentines to hopour themselves with the reputation of the King of France's Friendthip (whileft one part of Italy injured them. and the other forlook them) fent Ambaffa dour to that King Donato Acciavolo a man expert in the Greek and Latine Tongues and whole Ancestors had always held one of the prime degrees in the City, but being upon his journey he dyed at Milan, whereupon his Countrey, to recompence him in them he had left behind him, and to honour his memory, folemnized his Funeral in a most magnificent manner at the publick charges, giving pentions and advancement to his fons, and convenient marriage-portions with his daughters. In his flead was fent Ambaffadour to the King Meller Guide Antonio Vefpucci a man excellently skillful both in the civil and Carion Law. The Lord Robert's invalion of the Territory of Pifa forely afflicted (as all unexpected ac cidents do) the Florentines , for being for fiercely

cit cit

ce, ied

rereem Tal

es,

P.

100

in

三年 10年 10年 10年 10日

GO.

Ty

fiercely affaulted on Siena fide, they knew not how to turn themselves for the defence of Pifa; however with good Commanders and necessary provisions they supplyed that City, and to keep the Lucebefi faithful, that they might not furnish the enemy either with men, money or provision, they fent Peter Caponi Ambassadour thither; who was by that people received with fuch jealouse, because of the hatred that City bore the people of Flarence, ariling from old injuries and continued fears, that he was feveral times in danger of being flain by the rabble; fo that his Embaffy rather begot new regrets, than contributed to any fresh union. And now the Florentines recall'd the Marquis of Ferrara, entertained the Marquis of Mantona, and with great instance requested from the Venetians Earl Charles fon of Braccio, and Deiphobis the fon of Earl Jacob; which in the end after many trials, the Venetians granted; for having made truce with the Turks, and being left without excule, they were athamed to violate the faith of the League. to Earl Charles and Deiphobus with a confiderable force of men at Arms being come and joined with as many as they could fedirely draw off from the Army, which under the Marquis of Ferrara opposed the Duke of Calabria, they marched towards Pifa, to find out the Lord Robert, who with his Forces lay near the river of Serchio, and though he made some appearance as though

though he would have flood the encounter. yet upon better thoughts he retired to Lanigians, and took up his old quarters, where he lay before his attempt on Pifa: the towns the enemy had taken in that Countrey, and the Florentiner freed from allarms that way, rendevour'd their whole Force between Colle and S. Giminiano; but now there being in the Army by Charles his joining in it, people that had been trainup both under Sforza and Braceio, the ancient enmities foon revived, and many believed, had they continued longer together, it would have come to a muriny; wherefore to choose the least of two evils, 'twas judged best to divide them, and send one party under Earl Charles to the Territory of Peragis, and let the other flay at Paggibonzi where firongly entrenching themselves, they might prevent the enemy from entring the Florentines Countrey, they likewife had thoughts by this means to force the enemy to divide their Army; for they believed, that either Count Charles might Surprife Perugia (where they imagined they had many friends) or the Pope be comfrained to fend a firong party to defend it. they likewise gave order (to reduce the Pope into greater necessities) that Messer who had been expelled the City of Castello, where Meger Lorenzohis enemy was Governour, thould with some considerable force approach the Town, and make

make trial if he could drive out his adverfary, and refeue the Town from the Popes obedience; fortune in this beginning feemed much to favour the Florentine affairs, for Earl Charles made great progrets in the Territory of Perugia, and Nicholas Virelia (though he fail'd of getting en trance into Caftelle) yet he kept the Field, and spoil'd all the Country atmind about without any opposition, and besides the party encample at Paggibonen made indushors every day to the very walls of Signas, however in the conclusion all these hopes provid vain ... In the first place Earl Charles in the dawn of his victories dyed, yet had his death better'd the Florentine affairs; had they known how to make use of the victory occasion'd by it offer affoon as the Popes Army (who were all drawn together at Perneia) had intelligence that the Harliwas dead, they immediately ententained forme hopes, that they might the eafier oppieces the Elerentine Borces; whereupon taking the Field, they pitch'd their Camp upon the Lake within three miles of the enemy on the other fide James Guiceardina, who was Commissary of that Army by the counfel of Robert Lord of Rimini who after Charles his death was the most reputed and experienced Captain remaining, eafily conceiving the occasion of the enemies pride, scholved to fland them, and coming to an engagement near that Lake, where Hannihal the Carthaginian gave that memorable defeat Dete'

The finance

HI WAYNE

defeat to the Romans, the Popes Forces were routed, the news of which victory coming to Florence, gave great reputation to the Leaders, and univerfal joy to the people, and certainly had redounded both to their honour and advantage in the whole progress of the war, had not the disorders which happened in the Camp at Poggibonai disturbed the fuccess of it; whereby what was gained by one Army, was more than loft by the other; for they having taken a prey from the Sanefi, there happened in the dividing of it, difference between the two Marquiffes of Ferrara and Maniona; fo that, together by the ears they fell, and the muting though at last quieted, was fo great that the Florentines perceiving that they could not employ both of them, confented that the Marquis of Ferrara (hould return home, 16 Thar Army thus weakened, and withour a head lell into all manner of diforder whereupon the Duke of Calabris, who day encamped with his Army near Siena took a refolution to beat up their Quarters which was no former thought! but domes and the Plerenine Forces no Sooner heardlof the enemies approach, but trufting weither to their Arms, nor to their multitude; much superiour to their enemies, nor to the Cituation of the place, which art and nature had fortified; without fo much as flaying to fee their enemies, at the first appearance of the dust in the air, shamefully fled leaving their Amunition, Carriages and

The fhameful flight of the Florentine Camp.

and Artillery a prey to the enemy; fuch reproachful cowardife and difforder was in the Armies of those times; that the turning of one horse, either to charge or retreat, gave victory or defeat. This rout loaded the Kings Soldiers with plunder, and the Florentines with terrour; for their City was not only afflicted with the war, but miferably diffresfed with the plague, which had in a manner infected the whole City's To that the Citizens to flee from the contagion, retired to their Country towns? And that which made the defeat more dreadful, was, that those Citizens whole poffeifions lay in the Vales of Pifa and Delfa, being for fear of the plague gone this ther, were for fear of another death, forced as fuddenly with their goods and children to return to Florence; and every man flood in fear when the enemies would prefent themselves at the City gates. Those to whom the management of the war was committed, feeing these disorders, commanded those who had been victorious in the Country of Perugia, that leaving off their profection of the war in those parts, they should immediately march into the the Vale of Delfa, to oppose the enemy, who fince the late defeats made their inrodes without any controll; and though they had so straitened the City of Perugia, that every hour they expected its furrender, yet the Florentines choic rather to defend their own Towns, than feet to pollels

36

themselves of others. Thus that Army removed from the place of happy fuccels, was brought to S. Cafeiano, a Calile within eight miles of Florence, it being thought impossible they could in any more distant Post rally the remains of their broken Army. Whileft in the mean time their enemies at Perugia being left free, and without opbout Arezes and Cortond; and the other who under Alfonso Duke of Calabria had overcome at Poggibonzi, first seiled on that town, and then on Vice, and facking Certaldo, after these victories and desolations went and laid fiege to the Castle of Calle. which in those times was accounted very frong, and might if the defenders proved faithful, have kept the enemy at a bay, till the Florentines had reinforced their Army, which they having at length compleated at S. Cosciono, whilest the enemy made many furious affaults against Colle, they resolved to advance towards that place, to give the inhabitants courage to defend themselves. and by their presence somewhat allay the violence of the enemies : accordingly they diflodized from S. Casciano, and encamped at S. Giminiano, within five miles of Colle; whence with light Horfe-men, and the nimblest of their Foot they dayly molested the Dukes Camp: but this relief was not fufficient for those of Colle, who wantings all provisions and necessaries, on the thirteenth of November yielded, to the great displeasure

disoleafure of the Florentines, and joy of their enemies; especially the Sauri who belides their common hate to the City of Florence, bore a private grudge to the inhabitants of Cole. Winter was now far advanced, and the featon improper for war; whereupon the King and Pope either to give fome hopes of peace, or to have the liberty to enjoy their victories more quietmonths, and gave them ten days time to return their answer, which was presently accepted of : but as it happens to all men, that wounds grieve more when the blood grows cold, than when they were first given; so his short repose made the Flarentines more fentible of the mileries they had endured, and the Citizens freely, and without any respect accused one another. openly declaiming against the miscarriages of the war, the unnecessary and vain expences, and the Taxes unjustly imposed, which things were not only privately whilpered in the corners of the streets, but publickly declared in the Councils, where one had the boldness to turn himself towards Lor The bold renza de Medici: and tell him, This Carris Speech of a meary, and will have no longer war, and L therefore you must of necessity consult of for way for peace: Whereupon Lorenzo as fenfible as any other of the necessity, affernbled those of his friends, whom he believed most prudent and faithful; and first concluded (feeing the Venetians cold and faishlefe niehr

faithles, and the Duke a child intamelo with civil discords) that they mun with new friends leck new fortunes: then they

(1

pr C

ad m

the

the Fe

cor

Du

app

oth

ere tha

wh of

hé

the

to 1

he

juri

mis

were very doubtful into whose Arms to call themselves, the Popes or the Kings; but upon first examination of particulars. they approved the Kings friendship, as more fecure and ftable, for the thort lives of the Popes, the variety of succession, the little awe or fear the Church Rood in of Princes, and its irrefolutions in performance

A Truce for

of any undertakings, are reasons why a fecular Prince cannot have any intire confidence in a Pope, nor fecurely join fortunes with him, for whoever is the Popes friend in war and danger, shall have his company in victory, but in ruine or diffress be left alone; the Pope being defended and supported by foiritual power and reputation. They therefore resolved it best to gain the Kings friendship, which they conceived could not better, nor with more certainty be done, than by Lorenzo's prefence, for the more freedom and confidence they used towards the King, the more easily should they in his mind cancel former regrets; whereupon Lorenzo having fetled this refolution in his mind, recommends the City and State to Thomas Sodering then Gonfaloniere of Justice, and in the beginning of December departs from Florence, and being arrived at Pife, writes thence to the Senate, the occasion of his journey!; and their Lorddrips to honour him, and that he might

Citizen g

might with the more reputation treat a peace with the King, they made him Amhim ample authority to enter into fuch Leagues, as he should judge best for the good of the Republick. During these Transactions, the Lord Robert of San Seberino together with Lewis and Accasing (for their brother Sforzs was dead) made a fresh attempt on the State of Milan to re The Sforzs gain the Government; and having fur- Milan. prifed Tortona and Milan, and the whole Countrey being in Arms, the Dutchels was advised to reflore the Sforzi, and to remove all cause of civil diffention, to admit them into the Government. The Author of this Counfel was Antonio Taffino of Ferrara, of a very mean descent; who coming to Milan was first entertained by Duke Galeazzo, and afterwards by him appointed Chamberlain to his Dutchels where for the beauty of his body, or forme other fecret virtue, he after the Dukes death grew to much in favour with the Dutchels that he in a manner governed the State, which extremely angred Meffer Cecco a man of great prudence and experience, to that he strove as much as in him lay, both with the Dutchess and other Ministers of State. to leffen the Authority of Taffino; which he perceiving, in revenge of those in-juries, and to have friends at hand that might defend him from Meffer Cecco, the dvised the Dutchess to restore the Sforzi

Machiavel's Hiftory

who followed his Counfel without com municating any thing to Meffer Cercas whereupon he afterwards told her, Yo have done an aftion will deprive you of the Government, and one of my life; which not long after proved true; for Meffer Can to was by Lewis put to death, and Toffice from after driven out of the Dutchy, a which the Dutchels was so grievously dil contented, that departing from Milon, he renounced the Government of her young fon to his uncle Lemis; and thus Lemis be ine left fole Governour of Milan, became as shall afterwards be declared, the occa-6on of the ruine of Italy. Lorenzo wa proceeded on his voyage to Naples, and the truce still in force, when beyond all expedation, Lewis Fregofo having intelligence with certain Semzanefi, privately conveyed farprifed by with certain occurring, the town, and further mediane for the farmer men into that town, and further mediane for the farmer prised it, taking all the Florentines pris This accident highly displeased the heads of the Florentine State; who imagined all this done by order of King For dinand, and they fent messengers to the Duke of Calabrie, who lay with the Army at Siene in earnest manner complaining of their being thus, during the truce, affaulted the Duke gave them all possible satisfaction both by Letters and Embaffy, that it was done without his or his fathers confent or privity, which made the Florentines think their condition the worfe, feeing their treat fury was empty, the head of their State 4 05 B

Serezona

2 72

of

dp

0.9

4

ma

Fen

zhe

my

g of ted:

t on thick tree

he Kings hands, an old war with the Pope nd King, and a new one with the Gm suefe, themselves friendless; for in the petiane they had little hopes, and were fearful of the Governour of Milen, whom they knew various and inconfrant. Loe was not only by the King, but by all Medici hothat City, and with great expectations har nourably renourably received; for fuch a mighty war the King. ing railed only to oppress him, the greate sels of his enemies made him be accordingly valued; but when he came into the Kings presence, and with him began to discourse of the State of Italy, the interests of its several Princes and people, and what they might hope from peace, and fear from war, that King having heard him, how enfibly he debated things, more now admired at the greatness of his mind, the readiness of his understanding, the gravity of his judgment, than he had before wondred how he was able to fultain to great awar, infomuch that he redoubled the hohourable opinion he had of him, and began to contrive how he might gain him as a friend, rather than continue him an enemy. However upon various pretences and occasions he delayed the time from December to March, to make a double experience not of him only, but the City; for Lorenzo wanted no enemies in Florence, who would have been glad if the King had retained him, and ferved him like Jacob Piccinnio ;

abel knibelt ·srelling

and under colour of fear, least any disaster mould beside him, they vented their defires and withes through the whole City and in publick debate opposed those that favoured Lorenzo. And by thefe fly ways they had forced abroad a fame, that if the King kept him long at Naples, there would be a change of Government in Florence, which made the King spin out that time, to fee if there would happen any turnult in Florence; but feeing all things quiet, or the fixth of March 1479 he gave him lieve to depart, having first endeavoured to oblige him by all kind of civilities and demonfirations of love; so that there became contracted between them a perpetual friendship, for the mutual preservation of the estates: so that if Lorenzo departed great from Flo rence, he returned greater thither, being received by the City with all that joy and gladness, which his excellent qualities, and new defervings might justly challenge, has ving exposed his own life, to purchase his eluded with Countreys peace: two days after his arrival, were published the Articles of peace between the King and Common-wealth of Florence, by which they mutually obliged themselves in a league offensive and detenfive; and that as for the towns taken from the Florentines in the late war, they should be left to the Kings discretion, that the Pazzi should be released out of the Castle of Volterra, and that for a certain time a certain furn of money thould be paid to the Duke

Peace conthe King.

Rei

de-ity, hat ays the

uld ter, to

evi ob-

om ild

the

file

ke

26 billiones

short sheet

Duke of Calabria. This peace as foon as it was published, fretted both the Perpe and the Venetians, for the Pope thought the King thewed him but little respect, and the Venetians thought the like of the Flaremines; for both one and the other being concerned in the war, they believed it civil and just, they should at least have And no been taken notice of in the peace. looner was their indignation reported and believed in Florence, but all men grew calous that the making of this peace would produce a greater war; whereupon the Heads of the States thought to limit the Government, and that important affairs should be managed by leffer numbers; to which end they constituted a Council of LXX Citizens, to whom they gave ample authority to determine matters of the highest concern. This new Council stopt the proceedings of those sought after novelties, and to gain themselves reputation, they in the first place allowed the peace made by Lorenzo with the King, they designed likewise Meffer Antonio Ridolfi, and Peter Nafi, Ambaladors to the Pope. Nevertheless not withlanding this peace Alphonfo, Duke of Calabria departed not with his Army from Siena, pretending he was staid there by the discords between those Citizens, which were to high that whereas before he was lodged without the City, they called him and made him Umpire of their diffeences; which opportunity the Duke lay-

ing hold off, fined many Cittzens in large he banished, and some he put to death : b which proceedings he raifed a fulpicion, no only in the Sanefi but in the Florenines like Wife that he deligned to make himself Prince of that City. Nor knew they which was the Kings friendship, and at enmity with the Pope and Venetians, which lufpicion ap beared not only in the generality of the people, (those fabtle interpreters of things) but in the heads of the Florenti State, and every one affirmed that the Cit was never in more danger of looling it liberty. But God who in all extremits hoped for accident, which employed the thoughts, both of the King, Pope and Vi Merians, upon higher concerns than the af fairs of Tufcany. Mabomet the great Turk had with a mighty Army invaded Rhodes and for many months closely believed that Town, and though his Forces were great his obstinacy and sury greater; yet he found the courage of the defendants greatest of all who with to much valour detended their felves against his numerous affaults, that Me homes was forced to raife his frege with di grace. Leaving therefore Rhodes, part d his Armado, under Achomet Baffa, coming towards Velona, whether tempred by the facility of the enterprize, or to command ed by his Lord, he on a Rodden Lands for thou-

Mahomet repulsed at Rhodes,

Achomes Beffe lands in Italy.

mouland men, and florming the City of Orrano, takes and facks it, putting all the inhabitants to the fword. And then in the best manner he could fortifying hunter in the City, and haven, and lending for a frong party of horse, makes inroades far-her, spoiling and wasting all the adjacen Country. The King having notice of this invalion, and knowing well how great prince had undertaken it, dispatches away his Envoys to all places to demand affiliance against the common enemy, and with great instance recalls the Duke of Colabria with his forces from Siena. This affault though it afflicted the Duke and all the rest of Ifaly, yet gave fome comfort to Florence and Siena; these thinking they had regained their liberty, and those to have escaped the dangers, made them fear the loss of it; which increased the Dukes grief at his departure from Siena, who is faid to have blamed fortune, that by fo unexpected and irrational an accident had rob d him of the Empire of Tufcany. This accident likewife made the Pope change his Counfels, and whereas before he would hearken to no Florentine Ambaffador; he was now grown to mild, that he willingly litined to al peace. Whereupon the Florentines were advertised, that whenever they were inmight have it granted; and they who thought not fit to let flip the occasion, fent 8 D.4 rwelve

The Florer

Jadn A Kins

60 12 40 08

A mbalader

fictors adgired Acdien's byabe Pope.

Both bio and the birth b

Machiavel's Hiftery Book VIII.

The Florentine Ambasfadors admitted Audience by the Pope. twelve Ambaffadors to his Holinels, who after they arrived at Rome, were entertained with feveral debates and delays before they could get audience. At last all things were concluded between all parties, how they were to govern themselves for the future, and how much in peace and war they were to contribute. Then were the Ambaffadors admitted to kils the Popes feet, who attended them, leated in the midft of his Cardinals in great pomp and frate, "They excused themselves for what was pall, sometimes laying the blame up-on necessity, and the malignity of others. "fometimes upon the peoples fury, and their just anger, lamenting their condition, as men confirain'd to fight or dye; "for that they had undergone the war, the excommunication, and all those incon-" veniencies that attended them only to pre-Rerved their City from flavery, which is a civil death. Notwithstanding (though they had only done what they were forced to) yet if they had committed any fault, they were ready to make amends, throwing "themselves upon his mercy and clemency; "hoping, after the Example of the great Redeemer, he would be ready to receive them into the arms of his compassion. To all which fubmiffion the Pope in terms full of pride and indignation returned an-fwer. "Reproaching them with all they "had in times past done against the Church, however in observance to Gods com-

The Popes answer to | Ambassadors

mands, he was content to grant them that: pasdon they defixed, but they were to understand then, they ought likewise to " obey; and when ever they forfeited that "obedience, that liberty they had so lately hazarded, should then be quite taken a-"way, and that justly ; for they only de-" lerve to be free that are good, not they who employ themselves in wicked ex-"ercifes; liberty abused, being destructive to it felf and others, and to have a light "effeem of God, and a less of his Church was not the part of a Free-man, but of a diffolute person whose inclination was bent rather to mischief than goodness. whom it is not only a Princes duty to correct, but every Christians; wherefore for what was palt they must blame them. "who by ill actions gave being to the War, and by worse nourished it, and if they "were now freed from it, it was more by "the goodness of others, than their de-Then the Articles of peace, and the benediction was read, to which the Pope added beyond what had been agreed on and figned, that if the Florentines would enjoy the fruit of that benediction, they mult maintain fifteen armed Gallies at their proper expense while the Turks made War in the Kingdom. The Ambaliadors made heavy complaints against so great a burthen impoled beyond the agreement, but by no favour to others, or address made by themkives, could they get any alleviation of WORDS.

Machiavel's Hiftory Book VIII.

it, but to ratific this peace, the Senate fent Ambaffador Meffer Guillo Antonio Veffacci, fometimes before returned from France who by his prudent management brought things to terms more supportable, and ob-Canied many favours of the Pope, as a tefilmony of his full reconciliation. The therentimes having thus letted their affairs with the Pope, and Siena remaining free, and they out of fear of the King by the withdrawing of the Duke of Calabria's artity out of Tufcany to purfue the war against the Tarks, they pressed the King vewhich the Duke of Calabria at his departure had left in the frands of the Sanefi, which the King confented to out of fear, left otherwife the Ptorentines thould in this necessity defert him, or effe by commencing a new War with the Sanefi hinder him from those aids which he hoped to have from the Pope and other Princes of ledly; and fe by a fresh obligation he engaged, the Florentines to him whereby it appears, that necessity and neither Articles not Oaths make Princes honest. These Castles restored, and this new confederacy ratified Lorenzo de Medie regained all that reputation, which both during the war, and by the peace (while it hung doubtfut) he had like to have foll for in those times forme men fruch not to foundative him publickly, by faying that to fave himself he had fould his Country, and that in the war they had lost their 444 to 45 4 Twons.

wi bos

Towns, and by the peace thould look their liberty; but those Towns reliated, at hos neurable peace confirmed with the King. and the City returned to its fermer fples der now thrombout all Florence (a tatell City, and age to confure things by their fi sels, and not by their Countel) the Bory mindist was quite changed; for new Lorenze was enalted to the skies, and all the difcounte days a ski was, bow that by his prodence he had segained what the ill fortune of war had made them lofe of and that his counted and judgement was more prevalent that the power and arms of the Energy The invalion of the Tarke had deferr'd that war, which the Pope and Ventians anger was yet to bring forth; but as the beginning of that affault was unhoped for, and the cause of much good, for the end was unlooked for, and the occasion of much mischief, for Mehomes the great Turk, when it was leaft expected dying, and discord happening b tween his Children, those Turks in Paglia feeing thenifelves abandoned by their Lord apon Articles furrendred Oreante to the oreine fin King. So the fear being removed, which rendred by kept the Pope and Venetides minds fated, the Fate every man was apprehentive of new temp tions. On one fide were in League the agestows Pope and Veneziant, and joyned with them were the Genousie, Santh, and other leffer Princes: On the other fide were the Floreasines King and Duke to whom adhered the Beloneft, and many other Lords. The Venetians

ı

the second

1

5,0

e

ė

Y

4

\$

2

ż

SHAN

Venetions had a great defire to become Lords of Fewers, and they though they had a reasonable pretence to attempt it and certain hope to accomplish it : The occation they rook was because the Marquir affirmed he was no longer obliged to re-

or the De puties of that Republick,

Pvidomine, ceive the Vildomine + and their falt for that the contract was, that after feventy years the City Bould be released of both those burthens; to which the Venetians made anfwer, That as long as he held the Polefine to long he was to receive the Vildomine and the Sales to which the Marquis refuling to yield The Venerious thought they had just cause of a war, and a fit feafon to begin it in feeing the Pope incenfed against the King and Ploventines, whom to ingratiate themselves the more with Count Girolame at his being at Venice; was by them very honourably received, and made a Gentlegreat hopon where-ever they bestow it. In order to preparing for this war, they had impoled a new fubfidy, and chosen the Lord Robert of San Severino their General. who offended with Lewis Governour of Milan had fled to Tottona and thence (having first raised some Tumults) protwo Leagues. ceeded to Genova, where now refiding he was invited by the Venetions to accept of the command of their Armies. These preparations to new combustions being obferved by the adverse League, made them alfo provide for War, and the Duke of

Provilions for War in Italy by the

Ortanto firm

ed bethost

t

56

1

Ò

ttee

Milan choic Frederick Earl of Urbin for his General, and the Florentines Conflance Lord of Pefaro for theirs. And to found the Popes inclination, and fatisfie themselves whether the Venetians made war upon Ferrara by his confent, King Ferdinand fent Alphonfo Duke of Calabria to the Tronto, to demand the Popes lieve to pass into Lonbardy to aid the Marquis, which was by the Pope utterly denyed. Whereby the King and the Florentines understanding his mind, resolved to straiten him with their Forces, and conftrain him to become their friend; or at least prevent him from giving the Venetians any affiltance; for thefe were already in the field, and had begun the war with the Marquis, having first wasted the Country, and then laid fiege to Figerold, a Caftle of great importance. The King and the Florentines having thus refolved upon a war with the Pope, Alphonfo Duke of Calabria made incurtions towards Rome and by the ailitarice of the Colomes (who were joyned with him as the Orfini were with the Pope) made great spoil in the Country. And on the other fide the Florentines with Nicholas Vitelli affaulted the City of Caftello, driving thence Meffer Larenzo, who held it for the Pope, and making Nicholas Prince of it, the Pope, though in these great perplexities: The City of Rome in diforder within, and the Country wafted without; yet like a flout man, who would overcome and not yield

55

to his enemies, entertained the Magnificent Robers of Rimini for his General, and his being some so Rome, where all the Church forces were drawn together; the Pope declared to him how much it would re-Kings Forces he could deliver the Church from the troubles it was involved in, which would be an obligation, not only binding so him, but to all his fuccessors; nay, not only to men, but to God himfelf: The benificent Robert of Rimini having first takena view of all the Popes men at Arms and other warlike furniture, adviced him to ife as many Foot as he could, which with all speed and diligence was put in execution The Duke of Calabria lay then fo near Rome that every day he made incursions to the very Gates of the City, which so incenfed the Roman people, that they willingfor the delivery of the City, and were all by him received with thanks and praise The Duke hearing of these great preparations, drew a little farther off, thinking the Lord of Rimini would not venture too far to find him out, and befides he expected his Brother Frederick with new recruits from his Fathers Robert feeing his men at Arms near equalled the Dukes, and that in foot he was much fuperiour, marches upon a fudden out of Rome, and pitches his Camp within two miles of the Enemy; the Duke freink the enemy on the back of him fo con-

contrary to his expectation, found there was no other way now but to fight or fice. And that he might not do any thing unworthy the fon of a King, refelving to insworthy the ton or a sung, and both As. The Kings fight, he faces the enemy; and both As. Force defight, he faces the enemy; and both As. The Kings times was usual, advanced to the Battail which lasted from morning till noon. This day there was more valour flowed th had been in any encounter for fifty years paid in Italy, for on both fides, there was about a thouland men flatu, and the iffue was glo rious for the Church, for the multitudes of the Popes foot did to gall the Dukes horse that they were forced to give ground, as the Duke himself had been caken prisone had he not been faved by those Took, who being left at Owaste Served now und him. The Magnificent Robert having pent of gained this Victory, seturned in triumpl to Rome, but he enjoyed it but a thort time, r for having in the heat of the Battail drunk ral. too much water, it put him into a flux. of which in fews days he dyed, whose body was by the Pope interred with all extraordinary circumstances of honour. The Pope having obtained this Victory, immediately dispatches away the Earl towards the City of Catelle, to endeavour the raflauration of that City to Lorenze and partly indeed to try the City of Raminis for Robert his late General having left behind him only a young Infant under the tuition of his Mother; the Pope thought it an cafic

to disect

Autobar a

to troot Ash C

2011 2/49

Mar Alle

B

n

¢

n

e .0

th

ħ

de

at

th

L

ge

fta

th

Po

FI

th

aff

rol

Le

wi

the

th

no

ga

be

bu

féa

he

w

th

bunill od

Mobile trade sels inim

The Pope joyns with the League.

calle matter to fnatch his inheritance from him, which he had certainly done, had not the Florentines defended the Lady, and in fuch manner opposed his forces, that he could do no good, neither against Rimbil, nor Caftello. Whilst these troubles were the total at Rome and in Romagnia, the Venetians having taken Figorola, and with their forces paffed the Po; and the Duke of Milan, and the Marquis his Camp were both in diforder For Frederick Lord of Urbin falling fick, caused himself to be carryed to Bolomia, where he dved ! So that the Marquis his affairs every day declined, and the Venetians hourly encreased their hopes of gaining Ferrara. On the other fide, the King and Florentines used all their endeavours to gain the Pope to their will, and fince they To the could not do it by force, they threatned him with a general Council, which the Empesour had declared should be held at Basil. Whereupon by mediation of the Emperours Ambaffadors, and intercession of the principal Cardinals who defired peace, the Pope was partly forced, and partly perfwaded to confider of peace, and the union of Italy: So that both for fear and out of confideration, that the greatness of the Venetians was the ruine of the Church and of Italy, he consented to agree with the League, and fent his Ambassadors to Naples, where a League for five years was concluded between the King, Pope, Duke of Milan, and Florentines, referving a place for the

it, to sid

5

6

the Venetians, if they pleased to accept it's which perfected, the Pope fignified to the Venetians that they should defish from the War with Ferrara. To which the Venetiour refused to confent, but with greater forces prepared for the War a and having defeated the Dukes and Marquis his forces at Argenta, were approached so near Ferrara, that they had pitche their Camp in the Marquis his Park. Whereupon the League thought it not convenient any Ionger to delay giving more powerful affifrance to that Lord, and to that end caused the Duke of Calabria with his and the Popes forces to march towards Fereara, the Florentines fent their Troops likewife; and the better to dispense Orders of War, the League held a Council at Cremona, where affembled the Popes Legate, the Earl Girolamo, the Duke of Calabria, the Lord Lewis of Milan, and Lorenzo de Medici, with many other Italian Princes, where they fettled the measures, and deviled the Order of the future War. And because they were of opinion that Ferrara could not be better relieved, than by making a gallant diversion, they would have the Lord Lewis declare war against the Venetians in behalf of the Estates of the Duke of Milan, but that Lord would not give his confent, fearing to bring a war upon his own head, he could not, when he pleased, get rid off; whereupon they resolved to advance with their whole Army to Ferrara, and drawing together

1

4

4

a

d

1

1

9

d

7

,1

1

together four thousand men at arms, and eight thousand foot, they went to feek the Venetians, who had two thousand and two hundred men at arms, and fix thousand foot. The League thought it convenient in the first place to affail the Fleet, which the Venetians had on the Po, which they did, giving the affault at Bondeno, to the destruction of two hundred Vessels, where Meffer Antonio Justianiano, Providitor General was taken prisoner. The Venetiani feeing all Italy combined to ruine them, to add to their reputation, entertained the Duke of the Rhene, with two hundred men at arms into their fervice; whom (now their Fleet was destroyed) they sent with part of their Army to keep the enemy at a Bay, caufing the Lord Robert of San Severino to pass the Adds, with the remainder of the Army, and marching up to the Walls of Milan, proclaim the Duke and the Lady Bona his Mother: for they thought by this way to work some change in Milan, thinking the Lord Lewis and his Government were hated by the Millanefi. This allarm occasioned at first some disorder, and made the City arm. But in the conclusion, produced an effect quite contrary to the Venerian defign; for what the Lord Lewis would not before agree to, this affront makes him eager to perform: and therefore leaving the Marquis of Ferrara to defend himself with four thousand horse, and two thousand foot; the Duke of Calabria with twelve thousand horfe,

H.

nd

he

10

nd

ent

ich

ney

the

ere

300

ans

to

the

nen

WO

rith

at a

20

der

alls

ady

his

nk-

ent

rm

ade

10-

Mr-

old

im

the

ith

ot;

md

fe,

horse, and five thousand foot entred Bergamafco, and thence paffed into the Country of Brefeie, and fo to Verone, spoiling, raining and defroying the whole Country adjacent to those three Cities, in the spite of the Vemerians, who could no way help it; for the Lord Robert with all his forces could hardly fave the Cities themselves. On the other fide, the Marquis of Ferrara had retovered many places, formerly his; for the Duke of the Rhene, who was left to attend him, durst not oppose him, having but two thousand horse, and a thousand foot : and thus all that Summer of the year 1483, the affairs of the league prospered. In the following Spring (for the Winter was past without any action) both Armies drew into the Field, and the League that they might the better oppress the Venetians, had drawn all their Army together, and might (easily had the war been maintained as it was the year before) have driven the Venetians quite out of Lombardy; for they were reduced to fix thousand horse, and five thousand foot (the Duke of Rhene his year expired being gone home) and the enemy had thirteen thousand horfe, and fix thousand foot: but as it often happens, where there are many Rivals in Authority, their piques and jealousies give victory to the enemy; fo Frederick Gonzaga, Marquis of Mantona being dead, (who with his Authority kept the Duke of Colabria, and the Lord Lewis united) there hap-8 E 2

XUM

happened several differences between them which created jealousies and suspicions; for

John Galeanno Duke of Milan being now at age to govern and having married the Daughter of the Duke of Calabria, defired

a private peace with the Veneti-

that his father in Law, rather than Lewis might manage affairs of State. And Lemis, za concludes fensible of this his desire, resolved to deprive him of the power of executing it. This heart-burning of Lewis's was known to the Venetians, who laid hold on the opportunity, judging they might, as always they had done, gain more by peace, than they had loff by war : and privately treating with the Lord Lewis, came to an agreement August 1484. Which when the other confederates knew, they were much displeased; especially when they perceived the Venetians were to have all the towns taken from them restored, and still possels Rovigo and Polis Sene, which they had taken from the Marquis of Ferrara; and besides, enjoy all those preheminencies they formerly did over that City; for every one was now fenfible they had begun a war with vast expence, and in the profecution of it had gained honour, but in the end . shame; fince they were to restore the towns taken, and had not recovered those lost; but the Colleagues were conftrained to accept it, both because they were weary of the expence, and because they would no farther try their fortune with deceitful and ambitious men. Whilest affairs were in this posture

i

r

6

b

0

b

ť

L

1

t

ıt

d

re.

is

ne

C\$

e-

ns

m

li.

T-

all

0-

n.

X-

ad

¢;

n,

he

it,

X-

ner

bi-

his

ire

on quality

- 12 Y C

posture in Lambardy, the Pope by his Forces commanded by Meffer Lorenzo , belieged the City of Castello, to drive thence Nicholas : Vitelli, whom the League to bring the Pope to a compliance had deferted; whilst he lay before the town, the Garrison which kept it for Nicholas, made a fally and quite routed the enemy; whereupon the Pope recalled Earl Girolamo from Lombardy to Rome, to recruit his Forces, and renew the fieges but upon maturer deliberation, thinking it better to gain Mr. Nicholas by peace, than again provoke him by war, he made the best agreement he could for himself, and reconciliation between Nicholas and his adversary Lorenzo, to which fear of new tumults, and not love of peace disposed him; for he faw ill humonrs growing to a head between the Colonness and Orfini. The King of Naples had taken from the Orfini in the war between him and the Pope the County of Tagliacazzo, and given it to the Colonness who adhered to him: afterwards peace being made between the Pope and King the Orfini by virtue of the Articles demand. ed it; the Pope often fignified to the Co+ lonness, that they should restore it, but they would not condescend to a restoration either at the Orfine's demand, or the Popes threatning, but invaded the Orfini afresh with depredations, and other like injuries; which the Pope no longer able to fuffer, tailed all his Forces, and joined them with the Orfini to reduce them, and those houses 8 E 3 they

The Archbishop of Genous makes himfelf Prince.

The Pepe dy es.

they had in Rome fack'd, killing or taking those that strove to defend them, and seizing most of their Towns and Castles; so that on one fide these tumults ended, not by defire of peace, but by reason of their being too heavily oppressed and afflicted. Things were not yet quiet in Genous and Tufcany, for the Flow rentines kept the Earl Antonio de Marciano with his Forces on the Frontiers of Serezana; and whilft the war was in Lombardy with incursions and other light skirmishes molefted the Serezanel; and in Genous Battiftino Fregofo Doge of that City, trufting in Paul Fregolo Archbishop, was with his wife and family taken by him, who made himfelf Prince; likewife the Venetians invaded the Kingdom by Sea, took Gallipoli, and infested the adjacent Country; but peace made in Lombardy, all war ceafed, fave the tumults in Tufcany and Rome; for five days after the peace made, the Pope dyed, whether his natural term of life were expired, or whether grief for the peace, to which he was a profest enemy, broke his heart. However that Pope left Italy in peace, which all his life time he had kept in war. No fooner was he dead, but all Rome was in arms, the Earl Girolamo retired with his men into the Caftle, and the Orfini were fearful leaft the Colonneli thould revenge their late injuries ; the Colomel demanded reflicution of their Houses and Castles; whereupon in few days succeeded Slaughter, Robberies and Burnings in ma-721 7

t

5

ŝ

ny places of the City but the Cardinals having perswaded the Earl to restore the Caftle into the hands of the Conclave, and to retire into his own estates, and remove his Forces from Rome, he, to gratifie the Pope that should next succeed, obeyed, and furrendring the Cafile to the Conclave, went to Imola; whereby the Cardinals delivered from this fear, and the Barons from the hopes they had of his affiftance in their differences, they proceeded to the election of a new Pope, and after much dispute chose John Battifta Cibo Cardinal of Malfetta a Genouele, who called himself Inno- Pope Innocent the Eighth, who by fair and gentle cent the means (for he was a kind and quiet man) made all parties lay down Arms, and for a while pacified Rome. The Florentines after the peace of Lombardy could not be quiet, effeeming it a base and shameful thing that a private Gentleman should take from them the Castle of Serezana; and because by the Articles of peace, they were not only to demand things loft, but by force constrain those impeded or denyed their restoration. they presently leavied men and money to regain that Castle; whereupon Augustine Fregofo, supposing with his private power he should not be able to defend it, gave that town to S. George: but because S. George of Genous has often been mentioned, The original I think it not amis to thew the orders and of S. G orge rules of that City, being one of the principal of Italy. When the Genouefi had made

peace with the Venetians after that important war, which long fince happened between them, the City not able to fatishe those vast sums of money they had borrowed from feveral Citizens, configned to them the receits of the Customs, that acu cording to their feveral, fums lent, they might divide that Revenue amongst them, till they were fully fatisfied, and that they might meet together, they affigned them the Palace over the Custom-house. These Creditors fettled a rule and order among themselves, making a Council of a hundred of them, who were to debate all publick matters, and a Magistracy of eight, who as heads were to execute; and their Credits they divided into parts, which they called Lunghi or shares, and their whole body they entituled S. George. Their Government thus ordered, it happened that the City in general again stood in need; whereupon they had recourse to S. George, which being rich, and their flock well mamanaged could supply them, and the Commonalty as they had at first granted the Custom, began now in pawn of the money to grant their lands; and fo far proceeded it by reason of the common necessities, and the Supplies of S. George, that that order had most of the Towns and Lands formerly fubject to the Genouese submitted to them, and they governed and defended them ; and every year by publick vote fent their Retiors, and the Commonalty of the City was

ti

fo

m

OL

an

lo

ch

ou

an

be

ru

tha

cie

per

Ge

Re

63

30 75 34

T stoom's

pur some

was no way concerned. Whence it comes that these Citizens have taken away their love to the rules of the Commonalty as a thing usurped, and tyrannized, and placed it on S. George, as a rule well and equally administred; whence arrives the frequent and easie change of Government, and that fometimes they obey a Citizen, fometimes a stranger; for not S. George, but the Commonalty changes Government: wherefore when the Fregofi and Adorni contended for the principality, because they fought for the Government in common, the greatest part of the City stood neutral, & left it a prey to the Conquerour: all the office of S. George does, is, when any one has gained the Government, to make him swear observation of their Laws, which from the first institution till now, were never altered; for having the Arms, Money and Government in their possession, they cannot without certain danger of a Rebellion be altered; an example indeed rare, and which Philosophers with all their imaginations and chimera's of Common-wealths never found out to hold within the same circle, and among the same number of Citizens, Liberty and Tyranny, civil Order and Corruption, Justice and Licentiousness; for that order alone maintains the City in its ancient and venerable customs. And if it happens, as in time certainly it will, that S. George is possessed of the whole City, that Republick will be more memorable than the

e

til

e

c

e

War between Florence and Genous.

the Venetian. To this order of S. George, Augustine Fregofo gave the City of Serezans, who willingly received it, and undertaking its defence, presently fitted out a Fleet to Sea, and fent a Garrison to Pietra Sanda, to hinder any passage to the Florentine Camp, which already lay near Serezana: the Florentines on the other fide were defirous to have Pietra Santa; for whilft that Town was out of their poffession, the gaining of Serezana would not be fo advantagious, Pietra Sancia being placed between that and Pifa, but they could not reasonbly lay siege to it, unless first they were by those of Pietra Sanda impeached in the reducing Serezana: and that this might happen, they fent from Pifa to the Camp great stores of Provision and Ammunition with a very weak convoy, that the greatness of the prey, and slenderness of the Guard, might make those of Pietra Sanda less fearful to seise it; the plot succeeded to their wiffe for those in Pietra Sancia seeing before their eyes so great a prize, took it, and gave the Florentines the occasion they defired to affault them; wherefore leaving PietraSantia Serezana they belieged Pietra Santia which was well manned and bravely defended: the Florentines having their Artillery at first on the plain, raised after a Bulwark on the hill, hoping from thence to batter them; James Guiccardine was now Commissary of the Army, and whilft he befieged Pietrs Sanda, the Genouese Fleet took and burnt

belieged.

tl

t

ir

in

W

te

ar

fu

de

of

an

W TIL! 10

13

Ł

£

t

•

is

ie

1-

31

10

ta

to

ig

it,

ng

ch

1:

rft he

n;

of

176

mt

he

the Fortress of Vada, and landing some of their men, robbed and spoiled the Country; against whom with a party of Horse and Foot Meffer Buongianni Gianfiglianzi was fent, who in part checked their pride, that they could not fo freely forrage. But the Genouese Navy continuing to melest the Floremines went to Legborne, and with great broad bridges and other Engines approached the new Tower, which for many days they battered with their Artillery, but feeing they could do no good, went away with fhame. In the mean time they purfued the fiege at Pietra Sancia fo coldly, that the belieged taking heart, formed their Bulwark, and took it, so much to their own reputation, and terror of the Florentine Army, that they were ready to disband of themselves; insomuch that being drawn four miles off from the Town, the chief Commanders feeing it was already Ottober, thought it best to draw the Army into winter Quarters, and defer the fiege till Spring. When this disorder was heard at Florence, the heads of the State were filled with indignation & prefently(to restore the Camp to its credit and power,) chofe for new Commissaries Antonio Pucci and Bernardo del Nero, who with a great fum of money went to the Camp, and declared to the Captains the anger of the whole Senate, the Magistrates and City, and how much more they would be incensed, if they returned not to the

the walls of the Town, and what an infamy it would be to them, that fo many Captains, and fo great an Army having no more but a small Garrison to withstand them, could not take so poor and pitiful a town; they fet forth likewise the present advantage, and what in the future they might hope from the taking of it : with these perswasions they heartned them to return to the walls, and first of all resolved to form the Bulwark. In the gaining of which, it was observable how much courtefie, affability, kind and obliging words will work upon Soldiers, for Antonio Pucci by encouraging one, promising another, and embracing a third, made them with fuch fury from the Bulwark, that in a moment they took it; yet was it not got without loss, for Count Antonio Marciano was flain with a piece of Artillery. However this victory struck such a terror into those of the town, that they began to treat Pietra Santia of a surrender; whereupon, that the matter might be concluded with more reputation, Lorenzo de Medici came to the Camp, not many days after whose arrival, the Castle was gained. 'Twas now Winter, and therefore the Commanders of the Army thought not fit to proceed farther, but retire to Quarters till Spring, especially since that Autumns unwholfome air had much wasted the Army, many of the Captains being grievously fick, among whom Antonio Pucci and Bongianni

taken.

t

C

b

h

h

L

le

1

t

d

£

13

S

ci

r,

h

)-

ot

20

20

to

at

t-

u-

ne

r#

W

TS

0-

ill

n-

17,

fly

nd

in

Buongianni Gianfigliazzi not only fickened, but dyed, to the great grief of all men; fo much love had Antonio Pucci gained by his carriage at Pietra Santia. The Lucebeff. now the Florentines had taken Pietra Santa, fent their Ambaffadours to Florence, to demand it as a Town formerly. belonging to their State; for they alleadged by the Articles of the late peace, they were obliged to restore to their first Lord all those Towns were recovered of another. The Florentines did not deny the Article, but answered that in the treaty of peace between them and the Genouefe, they did not know, but they must be bound to restore it to them, and therefore, till then could determine nothing, and if they were to reflore it, yet the Lucchest would do well to confider how to fatisfie the charge they had been at, and the damage they had sustained by the death of fo many of their Citizens; and when that was done they might be in fome hopes of the Town. All this Winter was spent in a treaty of peace between the Florentines and Genouest, which the Pope had fet on foot, but nothing being concluded, the Florentines had in the Spring belieged Serezana, had not the fickness of Lorenzo de Medici, and the war between the Pope and King Ferdinand hindred them: for not only the Gout which he had hereditary from his father afflicted Lorenzo, but he was tormented with violent pains in the stomach, so that he was forced

forced to go to the waters for a cure. But

Agnila rebels from the King of Naples,

the most important hindrance was the war, of which this was the original cause. The City of Aquils was in such a degree subject to the King of Naples, that they in a manner lived free; the Earl of Montario was in great reputation there. The Duke of Calabria being with his men at Arms near the Tronto, under pretence of quieting some tumults, raised among the Country-people, and defigning to reduce Aquila under the Kings absolute obedience, sent for the Earl of Montorio, as though he would employ him about what he had then in hand. The Earl without any fuspicion obeyed and came, and was immediately by the Duke made prisoner, and fent to Naples. This was no fooner heard at Aquila, but the whole City was incenfed at it, and turnultuously flew Antonio Coneinello the King's Commiffary, and with him feveral other Citizens, known favourers of the Kings; and that the Aquilani might have a defender in their Rebellion, they fet up the banners of the Church, and fent Ambassadours to the Pope, to give him their City and themselves, entreating him as his own to defend them against the Kings tyranny. The Pope gladly and resolutely undertook their defence, for both upon publick and private accounts he hated the King: and Lord Robert of San Sevenino enemy to the State of Milan being out of pay, he chose him his General, and fent 2023962 for

1

6

1

at

r,

e.

œ

rio

ke

ns

et-

mila

ent

he

ad

fu-

m-

ind

ard

on-

nim

of

ght

fet

ent

nim

nim

ngs

ate-

pon

TERO

t of

for

for him in all hafte to Rome, and befides follicited all Count Mentorio's friends and relations to rebel against the King, so that the Princes of Altemura Salerno and Bifguano took Arms. The King feeing himfelf affaulted with fo fudden a war, fends for aid to the Duke and Florentines : the Florentines stood in doubt what to do, for they thought it hard to leave off their own affairs to follow others, and again to take up Arms against the Church, they thought dangerous, yet being in a League they valued their word and faith above interest or danger, and therefore entertained the Orfini in their pay, and befides fent the Earl of Pitigliana with all their Forces towards Rome to affift the King: wherefore the King raised two Armies, one under the Duke of Calabria, which he fent towards Rome, who joining with the Florentine Forces were to oppose the Church, and with the other under his Command, he marched towards his Barons; in both places the accidents of war were various, but in the conclusion the King remaining victor in all parts; in August 1486 by mediation of the Ambaffadours of Spain, a peace was concluded; to which the Pope (who would no longer encounter his adverte fortune) consented: by this peace all the potentates of Italy were united, except the Genouele who were left out as Rebels against the State of Milan, and usurpers of the Florentine towns. The Lord Robert of San Severino

rino, when this peace was concluded (having been during the War, a faithless friend to the Pope, and to the others no formidable enemy) driven away by the Pope, marching from Rome, and being purfued by the Dukes and Florentine Forces, feeing himfelf, as he was paffed Cefena, overtaken, fled, and with fewer than one hundred horse recovered Bolonia, and of his other forces part were received by the Duke, and the remainder routed and plundered by the Country. The King having concluded the peace, and reconciled himself with the Barons, put to death John Coppola, and Ansonella of Anversa with his sons, for having, during the war, kept intelligence with the Pope. The Pope by this war had learned how punctual and diligent the Florentines were in observing their word, and preferving their friendship; insomuch, that whereas before he hated them, he now began to love them; and to confer greater favours on them, and more kindly treat their Ambassadors then usually he had done, which inclination once known to Lorenzo Medici, was by all possible indufiry encouraged, for he thought it would be much for his reputation, if to the Kings friendship he could add that of the Pope. The Pope had one fon called Francis, and being desirous to honour him with Estates and Friends, that he might after his death maintain himself, he could not pitch upon any in Italy, with whom he might more fafely College Street

ri

14

推

of w

th

th far

20 ren

and

ter the

atte Flo

ed.

and

dur

act

Pet

ful

to I

peb

the

fror

that

and

Mr. S

¥P

c

è:

e

0

1-

5,

ic.

d

25

20

at

6-

er

at

nd

to

u-

ld

gs

C

nd

es

th

on

ly

71

fafely make an alliance than Lorenzo de Mediei, wherefore he contrived that Lorenzo gave him one of his daughters to wife. The Pope was defirous that the Geneuele (hould esceably furrender Serezana to the Floren ines, telling them they could pretend no right to keep it by Angustine's fale nor could Augustine give St. George what was none of his own; but however he could do no good of it; for the Genouefe, (whilst these things were in treaty in Rome) armed many of their Veffels; and whilft at Florence they thought nothing of it, let a shore three thoufand foor, and affaulted the Castle of Serazenella, feated above Serezana, & in the Florentines possession, and took and plundered and burnt the Borrough adjoyning, and afterwards planting their Artillery against the Caltle, battered it with great fury. This attempt was firange and unlookt for by the Florentines, whereupon they presently rallied their Forces under Virginio Orfini at Pifa. and made their complaints to the Pope, that during the treaty of peace, the Genouese had acted these Hostilities. Then they fent Peter Corfini to Luces to keep that City faithful, and Paul Antonio Soderini they fent to to Venice, to found the minds of that Republick; they likewise required, aid from_ he King and Lord Lowis, but had none from either : For the King excused himself that he flood in fear of the Turks Fleet, and Lewis with tricks and cavils delayed hem. Thus the Florentines were for the

most part left alone in all their wars not finding others to ready to affift them ; as they were to give aid to their Friends. Nor were they now (for 'twas no new thing) difmayed because their friends failedthem: but railing a great army under James Guiceardine, at Peter Vettori fent them against the enemy who encamped upon the River Magra, Men while the Genonese streightly besieged Sere zenello, and by undermining, and all other ways endeavoured to gain it, wherefore the Commissaries resolving to relieve it, the entmies refused not the Battail, but in the ingagement the Genonese were routed, and La devick of Fresco, & many other Commander taken prisoners: yet this Victory did not so terrifie the Serezanefi, that they would yield but obstinately prepared for their defence and the Comiffaries to offend fo that it was bravely affaulted and defended: but the fieee continuing long, Lorenzo de Medici resolved to go to the Camp, where his arrival fo encouraged our Soldiers, & disheartned the Serazenesi, that seeing the resolution of the Flarentines in affailing them, and the coldness of the Genouele to relieve them they freely without any conditions furrendred themselves to Lorenzo, and were by the Florentines, except some few heads of the rebellion, kindly received and treated. During this fiege the Lord reduced un- Lewis had fent lome forces to Pontremoli to make show of affishing us; but having private intelligence in Genous, he caused an infurrection to be made against the government

Serezana taken,

der the Duke.

and

ies

tin

M

Wa

Sa

ny

for

19

COL

fide

two

Fra

tity

Gir

ned

tre

rela

fino

the

ger.

fire

tim

indicate the control of the control

cgt ved

CD

Se-

14-

sof

ch-

s to

ept

ccie

ord

ate

and by the help of his party reduced it under the Dutchy of Milan. In these times there happen'd war between the Germans and Voentions, and in La Marea Boccalino of Ofmo had made that Town rebel against the Pope, and usurped the tyranny; but after many accidents he was content by the perswafion of Lorenzo de Medici, to restore that Town to the Pope, and coming to Florence under Lorenzo's protection lived a long time honourably, but afterwards going to Milar found not the fame faith, for he was by Lord Lewis put to death. The Vaintions were by the Germans defeated near the City of Trent, and the Lord Robert of San Severino their General flain. After many loffes the Venetians with their usual fortune made a peace with the German, not is people overcome, but as if they had been conquerours, fo honourable was it on their fide. About these times likewise happened two confiderable Tumults in Romania: Francis d' Orfo was a man of great authotity in the City of Furli, of whom Count Girolamo growing jealous, had often threatned him. Whereupon Francis living in great fear, was advised by his friends and relations to provide for his own fafety, and fince he was threatned, to kill first, and by the death of the Earl free himself from danto get. Having consulted hereupon, and firmly resolved it, he made choice of his time on a market-day at Furli, for on that day many other of their friends coming thither

ther out of the Country, they thought they might without a fummons have them to ferve their occasions. It was in the month of May, and it being the Italians usual custom to sup by day-light; the Conspirators thought it the best time to kill him after supper, at which time, while his Family were at supper, he was often in a chamber alone: having agreed on this, Francis went at the appointed time, and leaving his Companions in the outward rooms went to the Earls Chamber, and bid one of the attendants tell him he was there to speak with him. Francis was admitted, and after some feigned discourse suddenly flew him, and calling in his companions killed likewise the Groom of his Chamber, The Governour of the Town coming by chance to fpeak with the Earl, was by the Murderers with his few followers in the Hall flain. These Murders committed, the Earls body was thrown out of the window, and Proclamation made The Church and liberty; and all the people gathered to arms (for they hated the Earls avarice and cruelty) and fackt his house, and made prisoners the Countels Catherine, and her Children: there remained only the taking of the Castle to perfect their design, which the Governour refusing to yield, they dealt with the Countess to dispose him to it, which the promifed to do, if they would let her go in , leaving her Children in Hostage: The Conspirators believed her, and let her

Earl Girola-

go in ; but instead of delivering it, the then chreatned them with death, and all manner of torments in revenge of her husband; and they threatning to kill her children: the told them the had the mold about her to make more in. Whereat the Conspirators daunted, feeing the Pope owned them not, and heard the Lord Lewis Uncle to the Countels, was fending forces to her relief, taking with them all the riches they could carry, they fled to the City of Castello. Whereupon the Countels recovering the State, with all imaginable cruelty revenged her husbands death. The Florentines hearing of the Earls death, took the opportunity to recover the Castle of Piancaldoli, which the Earl had formerly took from them; but now fending their forces (with the death of Ciecco, the famous Architect,) they recovered it : Besides this, there happened another Tumult in Romania of no les importance. Galeotto, Lord of Faenza had married the Daughter of John Bentivogli, Prince of Bolonia, the either out of jealousie, or because she was ill used by her husband, hated him to that degree, that the resolved to take from him both estate and life, and counterfeiting a fickness, the resolved that Galeotto, coming to visit her, Thould be murdered by some of her confederates hid in the Chamber. She had communicated this delign to her Father, who was in hopes after death of his fon-inlaw to become Lord of Faenza. The time 8F 3

XUM

h

m he

H.F

nim

ni-

m-

cis

ng

me

to

d.

aly

nis

et.

by

he

he

he

W.

ch

to nd

de

er

ng

ch

alt

ch

er

e:

ice

20

Machiavel's Hiftory Book VIII.

Galeotto
Lord of Faenza murdered.

appointed for this murder being come Galeotto went into his wives Chamber at cording to his usual custom, and beginning to talk with her, the murderers came fuddenly out of their holes, and before he could make any defence flew him. After his death the Tumult was great, the Lady with her young fon, called Aftere, fled to the Caftle; the people took arms, and Meffer John Bentivoglio, with one Bergamino, an Officer of the Duke of Milans, having before prepared a party, entred into Faence, where was likewise Autonio Boscoli, the Florentine Commissary: All these principal men being affembled together, discourling about the Government of the Town, the Inhabitants of the Vale of Lamona, who upon the uproar were tumultuoufly run thither, falling upon Meffer John and Bergamino flew the last, and took the first prisoner; and proclaiming the name of Aftorre, and the Florentines recommended the City to their Commissary. Intelligence thereof being come to Florence, the accident displeased every one; yet they fet at liberty Meffer John and his Daughter, and undertook the care of Afterne and the City, by general confent of the people : Besides these (though the main wars among greater Princes were composed)there was everyyear some turnets in Romania, La Marea and Siena, which being of little importance, I count it super-Auous to relate. It is true that in Siena, fince the departure of the Duke of Calabria from

from the war in 88, they were very frequent, and after many variations (for fometimes the Nobles, and fometimes the People governed) the Nobility remained Saperiours, among whom those of greatest Authority were Pandolpho and Jacob Petraiso, one of whom by his prudence, and the other by his courage became as it were Princes of that City. But the Florentines after the war of Serezana, till the death of Lorenzo de Medici; 1492. lived in the Lorenzo de height of all felicity; for Lorenzo feeing Medici, his all Arms in Italy laid by, which by his Wif advancedom and Authority had been effected, ap children plyed himfelf to make himfelf and his Ci- and his other ty great, marrying Peter his Eldeft Son to verzoese Alfonsina Daughter of Cavallier Orfini : Then John his second Son he advanced to the degree of a Cardinal; so much the more notable, because beyond all former Examples he was not above thirteen years of age, when he was advanced to that high degree, which was a Ladder for his House, to afcend by, as afterwards happened. Tulian his third Son being so very young at his Father's Death, he could not provide with any extraordinary Fortune : Of his Daughters, one was married to James Saltesti, another to Fraucis Cibe, a third to Peser Ridolfi; but the fourth whom, to keep his House united, he would have married to John de Mediei, died : In other his private affairs, especially as to Merchandize, he was unhappy for the diforders of

ing in

rth

ner

le;

en-

of

re-

ere

ne

ut

12-

on

Т,

W

0-

al

those he intrusted, who lived not like Fail ctors but Princes, in many places wasted his Estate, fo that his Country was fain to fupply him with great fums of money wherefore refolving no more to tempt Fortune, he forbore to trade, but as the more stable Riches, applied himself to purchase Lands, and in the Pratefe, Pifano, and the Vale of Pifa had large Possessions, with Palaces more becoming a Prince then a private Citizen. Then he addressed himself to beautifie and enlarge his City, and that he might live more quiet in the State, and fight with his Enemies at greater diffance, towards Bolonia, in the middle of those Alpes he fortified the Castle of Firenzuola. Towards Siena, he began to repair the Imperial Hill, and made it almost impregnable. and the way towards Genova he had blocked up by taking Pietra Sanda and Serezana. Then with Pentions and Allows ances he maintained himfelf Friends abroads the Baglioni in Perugia, the Vitelli in the City of Castello, and had himself the particus lar Government of Faenza, all which were ftrong Bulwarks to his City. And in thefe peaceable Times he was continually diverting the City with Feafts and Triumphs, exhibiting Justs and Tournaments, and several Representations of Ancient Actions his cheif end in which was to make the City populous, keep these people united, and make the Nobility be honoured. He was an extream lover of any man excellent in any Art,

Art, of which Agnola of Montepulciano . Christopher Landins, and Demetrius Greco may give ample Teltimony. Belides Earl John of Mirandula, a Man almost Divine leaving all other Parts of Europe which he had travelled through, moved by the Mag nificence of Lorenzo, chose his residence in Florence. He was exceedingly delighted in Architecture, Mufick, and Poetry; many Poetical compositions being extant, not only of his composure, but which he had sommented upon: And to encourage the Youth of Florence to the study of Learning, he erected an University at Pifa, and brought thither all the most famous men then in Italy: He built a Monastery near to Florence for Father Moriano of Chinazano of the Order of St. Austin, because he was a most excellent Preacher. He was highly beloved both by God and Fortune. which made all his undertakings fuccessful, and his Enemies unhappy, for besides the Pazzi, Battiffa Frescobaldo in Carmine and Baldinotto of Piftois in his Villa or Country House, attempted to murder him; but all of them with their Accomplices suffered deserved punishment. This Magnificence, this Prudence and Fortune was with wonder known, esteemed and valued not only by all Italy, but by far distant Princes. Matthew King of Hungary gave many Te-Rimonies of the love he bore him; the Soldan fent him Ambassadours and Presents; the Great Turk delivered up to him Bernardo oralism:

13

tei

2 6

(e

ie

ä

e

ó

e

6

-

nardo Bandini the Murderer of his Brother all which made him the admiration of all Italy, and his Riputation every day with his Prudence increased; for he was elequent and witty in Discourse, discreet in Resolution, and quick and couragious in Nor was he blemished with a-Execution. ny Vice to taint fo many Virtues, fave that he was somewhat addicted to Venery, loved witty and tharp jefting, and delighted in childish sports, more than became a man of his Gravity; for he would often play with his Children, and make himself one amongst them; so that to consider this toying and gravity, there feemed to be in him two feveral Persons conjoyned by impossible Li-gaments. His latter dayes were full of Livenzo de trouble,occasioned by the distempers where-Medici, his with he was grievously afficted, for he was troubled with most intollerable pains in his Stomach, which so tormented him, that

in April 1492. he died in the forty fourth year of his Age: Nor ever dyed any man, not only in Florence, but in all Italy, with fuch Reputation for Prudence, nor fo much lamented by his Country: and fince by his death great Ruins were to enfue; so Heaven was pleased to give evident figns of it, amongst the rest the highest Spire of the Church of Santia Reparata was ftruck with Lightning, and the greatest part of it turnbled down, to the great wonder of all men. In short, all his Citizens grieved for him, and all the Princes of Italy, of

death, 1492.

whom

shom not one bas Gm his table falser to the wind the confess of condess his death's but what filtereded howed day had indeed inficient cause to grieve, for being definitive of his counsel, those which remained could neither find a way to fatishe not restrain the Ambition of Lewis Sforza Governor of the Duke of Milas: Wherefore not long after Liversons death, began to fpring up those wicked feeds which none knowing how to root out, did ruine, and yet do mine all Isaly. the Coulties See 5 and Section 3 at

Set in carry and diegon there are the principles FINIS. And head he are the mary in Atriba

be saile of recipion which is not a way

THE WASHINGTON THE WASHINGTON

designation of the state of the

align to sell sum is the

IS is

at th

n.

th

ch

his ren 3-

長自

all ed of

om

was thousand the same of the same and the same mission sales Sain State State And State Sta that is a record and some the finding As The point of states, and the Williams borough not 50 Allie ton Hand

Be the sound of the grant anedia N

THE STATE

THE

CONTENTS

The O For T.H.E. bet our

FIRST BOOK.

| | Land Control of the C |
|--|--|
| 0 d. Markey and ac | pag. |
| II Om the Northern people eafe | |
| II selves of their multitudes. | I |
| The canse of the destruction of the Ro | man Em- |
| pire. | 2 |
| The Vifigoths infest the Empire. | ibid. |
| They are overcome by Theodosius | |
| 10cy are overcome by I neodolius | ibid. |
| Attempts of Gildon, Ruffinus and | Stilicon. |
| | 3 |
| Alaric King of the Vifigoths Sacks Re | ome, and |
| dies, and Autaulphus succeeds. | 3,4 |
| Wandale pollege Africk the Alexan | J Vic |
| Vandals possess Africk, the Alanes | |
| goths Spain, the Francks and Bur | gunatans |
| Gaule. | 4 |
| Hunns enter Pannonia. | DOR PRIS |
| Britains call in the Saxons. | ibid. |
| Attila invades Italy. | |
| | 7 |
| Valentinian makes Ravenna the | Imperial |
| Seat. | 7 |
| | Maximus |
| | - |

| Maximus afarps the Empire. Genteric King of the Vandsty July | Page V |
|--|----------------------|
| Odoacer invades Italy, and makes b King of Rome. Theodoric King of the Ostrogoths driv | imself 8 |
| Odoacen The fad effate of Italy. Theodatus usurps the Kingdom of Italy. | 11 |
| Bellifarius General for the Emperour. Theodatus slain, and Vitigetes King. | ibid. |
| Totila King of the Goths takes Rome. Justinian the Emperour dies. Dukes first in Italy. | 15 |
| Cruelty of Clefis King of the Lombards. | 6, 17 |
| The growth of the Popes Authority Aftolphus King of Lombardy feifes Rav | 22 |
| Pope Gregory goes into France, to erave Charlemain made Emperour, and Pepin | 23 |
| of the Romans, The first institution of Cardinals. When Popes sint changed their names. | 24 25 26 |
| Ainulphus the first German Emperour. Electors of the Empire instituted. A Schism in the Church by means of an- | ibid. 28 Anti- |
| pope. Henry the Emperour submits to the Pope. Roger Guiseard the first of the Norma | 30 |
| King of Italy. | 33 The |

| | pag. |
|--|----------|
| The expedition to the boly Land to 0 9 | 34 |
| Several Antipapera | 36 |
| King Henry of England Submits to the | |
| Applied s show and winds of his feet. | 38 |
| Frederick the Emperour Submits to the | o Pape. |
| the King of the Congoins drives out | m0039 |
| The effate of Italy in the year 1218. | 410 |
| The Factions of the Guelfs and Ghi | |
| Manfred the Baftard feifes the King | 1105/426 |
| | |
| The Pope gives that Kingdom to Cha | rles of |
| Anjou. | mics of |
| Private Treaty between the Pope and | King of |
| Arragon, to diffeife Charles of Sicily | 46 |
| The Popes Nephews first publickly pre | |
| of Characher Lender Lemberth Land | 47 |
| Rodolphus the Emperour fells feveral | |
| a in Italy their freedom. | 48 |
| Pope Boniface dies mad. | 49 |
| The Visconti first Dukes of Milan. | 51 |
| John King of Bohemia invades Italy, | 54 |
| The rife and growth of the City of Veni | |
| A memorable accident at Rome. | 60 |
| Avignon given to the Church. | 61 |
| War between Genoua and Venice whe tillery was first used. | 63 |
| Three Popes at once occasioned the calli | |
| Council of Constance. | 67 |
| Martin the Fifth created Pope by that | |
| recil. about at a stee 1. Free money 7 Ser | 68 |
| The estate of Italy in those times. | 71 |
| Say to manual at according to be if he if | CHILL |
| ALCON TO THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE PA | The |

The Contents of the Second Book

| can't age of the artifactions that the Prints pay | ä |
|--|----|
| The Original of Florence. | 4 |
| Various opinions about the name of Florence | g |
| man 18 . T. S. | |
| Florence destroyed by Totila, and rebuile b | ŀ |
| Charlemain. They was being a mission I al | |
| The first division in Florence. | |
| Signior Buendelmonte flain. | Ŀ |
| Guelfs and Ghibelines in Florence, | ľ |
| The Guelfs expelled the City. | 2 |
| The first acis of the Florentines. | |
| The Government overthrown by the belp | į, |
| Manfred King of Naples. | 4 |
| The State of Florence in part reflered, an | |
| Earl Guido beaten thence. 16, 19 | |
| New Laws and Orders in Florence | 4 |
| The Factions again revived. | 4 |
| The Florentines war with Arezzo, 2 | i. |
| Severe Laws against the Nobility. | 2 |
| The Nobility and Commons take Arms. 2 | |
| Arms laid down, but jealoufies continue, 3 | 4 |
| The original of the bloody Factions of the Bi | |
| anchi and Neri. | |
| The Pope befought to remedy these diffentions | |
| ellens nag eret webe weberlent, und enterfere Bat. | |
| Charles of Valoys fent by the Pope to Flo | J |
| rence. | 6 |
| The Neri prevail, and the Bianchi flee. 117 3 | - |
| The Popes Nuncio makes a fickle reconciliation | 4 |
| and the state of the state of the state of | |
| Charles of Valoys returns to Rome 35 | т. |
| No. | |

The Concents. HV 100

| page |
|--|
| New broth in Florence, and the Pope fends bis |
| Legate thitber. 40 |
| A dreadful fire in Florence. 41 |
| The Rebels attempt an entrance into the City, |
| but are repulsed. " meda theinen anings |
| Corso Donati's Condemnation and Death. |
| go stander bee Allas T go bee deb 3 46, 47 |
| The Florentine Rebels under Harry the Em- |
| perour besieged Florence si notice 148 |
| War with Uguccio Lord of Pifa. ibid. |
| Lando of Agobbio's Tyranny. 50 |
| Castruccio Castruccami Lord of Lucca and |
| Pifa, bis war with Florence. 51, 52 |
| The first choice of Magistrates by putting the |
| A names into a purfe. A to mit borload 56 |
| Charles Duke of Calabria Lord of Florence 58 |
| Lewis the Emperour marches into Italy. 39 |
| Castruccio and Charles of Calabria's death. |
| Sechalists wain eron 22 |
| Lucca bought by Gerardin Spinola. |
| Florence adwared with new Buildings. 62 |
| A new plot against the State. 63 |
| The Floremines buy Lucca, and are beaten |
| - 1 out of it with the books out to hange to 267 |
| Walter Duke of Athens comes to Florence. |
| 88 . Lope before the remove and adifferentioner |
| The managers of the war with Lucca punished. |
| 6 males of Vulay's Cont by the Pope to 1 lot |
| The Duke of Athens usurps the Tyranny. 70 |
| Three conspiracies at once against bim. 78 |
| He is driven out, and the City reformed. \$4 |
| Several Towns rebel. 86 |
| New diffentions between Nobles and Com- |
| mons. |

The Coltrait

| Pag |
|--|
| The facility attempt of Andrea Strozzi . on |
| The people gain abfalute villey over the No. |
| spoles. Sometime of the of benefit of |
| Purper Goorgo Scall beheaded, which caused |
| The Contents of the third Book. |
| The Elmentines frighted by Lewis of Augon. |
| The enmity between the Albizzi and Ricci. 4 |
| Lows against the Ghibellines, and the Admo- |
| Chen Bennet Albern banified. oder itinbe |
| The Commons meet about the prefent discords. |
| Che unditinde take Arat. |
| The Lords appoint a Committe of Safety. 16 The Popes Legats invades the Florentines, 19 |
| War with the Church swifting willad even 18 |
| The Guelfs plat to frife the Government. 20 |
| Lapo Castiglionchio's bouse burnt by the peo- |
| 22 The Contents of the Fourth Bucile |
| The multitude appeased. 26 |
| The Admoniti caufe new files. to shall gill 27 |
| The Gonfalonieres speech to the people, 28 |
| Another tumult may's than the furnier 31 |
| The speech of a Plebeian to encourage his fel- |
| lows to villary List, so sold to villary |
| The Rebels grow stronger, and the Lords weak, |
| ethe I lorentines deseased at Legausya. 10 |
| The bigh demands of the multisude 1000 400 42 |
| Michael de Lando, a comber of mood, made |
| Gonfaloniere and Lord by the Rabble 43 |
| The people take Arms against bim. 45 |
| He routs them, bis commendation, 0 47 |
| The popular and Plebeian Factions. 49 |
| S G Several |

| pal | 3 |
|--|-----------|
| Several Nobles and prime Citizens execute | San. |
| Sir John Hawkwood an English man, | 1 |
| tertained by the Florentines. | 00.7 |
| Meffer George Scali beheaded, which cans | ed |
| division in the City. | 6 |
| division in the City. The Florentines frighted by Lewis of Anjo | u. |
| to enter to be to the the state and Received | 9 |
| They buy Arezzo. | 50 |
| Meffer Bennet Alberti banished. | 51 |
| War with Milan de and some the rain Do | |
| The multitude take Arms. | 55 |
| Some of the Banditi enter Florence. | /I |
| Another conspiracy in Florence. | 13 |
| A new Balia conftituted. | 4 |
| War with Ladislaus King of Naples. | 5 |
| Apo Cathellouchio's bonde burm by the que- | .1 |
| The Contents of the Fourth Book. | |
| Philip Duke of Milan feeks peace with Fl | |
| at rence de la contrata del contrata de la contrata de la contrata del contrata de la contrata del la contrata del la contrata de la contrata de la contrata de la contrata de la contrata del la contrata | 1 |
| He taker Brescia and Genoua, and violate | 7 |
| be peace one or a liberian to encounty of | 6 |
| The City of Florence divided, yet prepare f | or |
| West word group grounger, and the Lara West | 7 |
| The Florentines defeated at Zoganara. | 0 |
| The people murmer, at to abstract and all | T |
| Count Odo fon of Braccio General of the Fl | 0- |
| rentines. addaes a connect by Contain | 3 |
| Examples of the esteem of Valour, and con | 11- |
| tempt of Cowardise. | 0 |
| Count Odoslain, and Nicholas Piccinino pro | j- |
| foner | I |
| TI OF THE TRANSPORT | 10 |

| The Florentines crave aid of the Keneria | 2023 |
|--|-----------------|
| Carmignuola General of the League. The Catasto, a new Tax upon every manisto | 100 |
| John de Medici endeavours to prevent a revi | 24 em 25. |
| New divisions in Florence, with John de M. dici bis speech at bis death, worman | - |
| Volterra reduced to obedience. Debates about a war with Lucca. War with Lucca resolved on. | 31 |
| The ill management of the Florentine Gen rals. 3 The complaints of the Seravezi. | 8. |
| Attempt made to drown Lucca. Sforza comes to relieve Lucca. | 12 |
| The Venetians and Florentines joyn in league | 9 |
| Confusion in Florence. Cosmo de Medici cited and committed. | 7 |
| Rinaldo Albizi arms against the Senate. 6 The Pope endeavours to appease the Immuls | 7 |
| Cosmo de Medici restored, and Rinaldo A biri with others banished. | 9 |

The Contents of the Fifth Book

| tunota Generally the League. 1 23. | pag |
|--|---|
| The State of Italy 14334 want and | |
| War made on the Pope by Sforza and | Forte |
| to brace. In over the remove they follows | |
| The Pope makes peace with Sforza, and | mar n |
| Romania, , daliM divi baky | |
| Fortibracoulterieu, and vanquished. | |
| The numerous proferiptions of Florentine | 5. |
| New Ordinances in Florence. | o Die |
| Test Oraniances in Florence. | |
| Joan Queen of Naples dies. | 1.1 |
| Alphonio King of Naples taken prife | |
| the Genouese. | 12 |
| Alphonfo released by Duke Philip. | 13 |
| Spinola incites the Genouese to rebel. | 14 |
| Genoua recovers its liberty. | 16 |
| The Duke endoavours to regain it. | 20 |
| The Dukes Forces under Piccinino dej | |
| femure partie of Lucean | 22 |
| Lucca distressed. | 1 23 |
| The Lucchefe crave aid of Milan. | 27 |
| Distrust between the Venetians and Floren | |
| wer of Colino de Medici perfundial ste | 30 |
| Difference between Venice and Florer | ace 4- |
| bout paying Sforza. | 32 |
| Peace between Lucca and Florence. | 33 |
| The Pope confecrates the Cathedral of | Flo- |
| rencel satelland to appeale the local assess . | 24 |
| The Greek Church Submits to the Roman. | 26 |
| New troubles in Lombardy and Tufcan | y 27 |
| Nicholas Piccinino cuntingly deceive | e the |
| Pope. | 100000000000000000000000000000000000000 |
| | 38 |

| | 4 |
|--|--------|
| The War growt bat in Lombardy. | ag. |
| The Venetians, Florentines and Earl Sio | 41 |
| make a new agreement. | 1000 C |
| The diffrest of Lombardy. | 43 |
| | 44 |
| Neri Capponi fent to Venice. | 45 |
| Sforza marches into Lombardy. | 49 |
| Nicholas Piccinino's strange escape from | |
| battle of Tenna. | 52 |
| Description of the Scituation of Verona. | 53 |
| Piccinino surprises Verona. | 54 |
| Earl Sforza recovers Verona. | 56 |
| The Duke designs to invade Tuscany. | 58 |
| The Florentines in fear of Piccinino. | 59 |
| The Patriarch imprisoned by the Pope. | 61 |
| The Venetians press the relief of Bres | cia, |
| which the Earl refuses. | 63 |
| Sforza's Speech to the Senate of Venice. | 64 |
| Piccinino wasts the Florentine Territories. | 68 |
| The Siege of S. Nicholas Caftle. | 70 |
| Defign to Surprize Cortona discovered. | 72 |
| Earl Sforza relieves Brescia, and Piccir | ino |
| recalled by the Duk, | 72 |
| Nicholas Piccinino defeated at Anghiari. | 77 |
| Want of Discipline in those times. | 78 |
| Poppi besieged and taken. | 80 |
| thereto at the shittereste at more all uses to the m | 130 |
| The Contents of the Sixth Book. | |
| OIL Winds Share and resident the Committee of | Dear. |
| The Duke of Milan moves for peace: | 4 |
| The Venetians jealous of Earl Sforza. | |
| | bid. |
| The proud request of Nicholas Piccinino. | |
| Peace privately concluded between the I | Julia |
| The producty concequent despects and I | - |

| A STREET, WAS A | |
|--|-----------|
| and Earl Sforza, and the Earl m | pag. |
| the Lady Biancha. | |
| War in La Marca. | TOWN TO |
| Baldaccio of Anghiari affafinated by | |
| faloniere. | 25 |
| Florence reformed, and Nicholas P | iccinino |
| defeated by Earl Sforza. | 16 |
| The death of Nicholas Piccinino. | 17 |
| Troubles in Bolonia. | 18 |
| Battista Canneschi slain; | 11.129 |
| Sancti Bentivogli sent for to govern I | v # 2 124 |
| Sa makitanin na marina anima ani | 20 |
| A fresh war in La Marca. | 22 |
| The war revived in Lombardy. | 23 |
| The Duke and Venetians both follie | ibid. |
| Earls friendship. Duke Philip's death. | |
| Earl Sforza General of the Milanese. | 25 |
| King Alphonso invades the Florentini | |
| Overtures of peace between Alphonso | |
| Florentines. | 31 |
| The King raifes bis Siege with difhono | |
| The Venetian Army defeated by the Ea | |
| | 36 |
| Peace between the Earl and Venetians. | 37 |
| The speech of the Milanese Ambassadous | rs to the |
| Earl. | 38 |
| The Earls unswer to the Milanese. | 41 |
| The Milanese crave compassion of the | 43 |
| The Venetians make peacewith the Mila | |
| The Earl follicites the Florentines aid. | |
| A great tumult in Milan. | |
| The Property of the San State of the San | 7 60 |

| | 102 |
|--|------|
| The Venetian Ambaffalour eberein ffalm. | 70 |
| Milan furrendred to Earl Francis, Feb. 26, 1450. | 50 |
| The Venetians plot to Jurorila Rolonia. | 13 |
| Frederick the third Emperour comes to Florences | 35 |
| The Florentines make a League with France, | ib. |
| The Venetians beginthe war wish the Duke. | 56. |
| The Rings Army enters Tufcany. | ib. |
| Stephen Porcari difurbi Rome. | 58 |
| Mr. Stephen put to death. | 60 |
| The Vale of Bagno betrayed to the King. | 62 |
| A Pifan's fidelity to the Florentines. | ib. |
| The Florentines fend an Ambaffadour to France. | 63 |
| Renate of Anjou count into Italy. has and the | 64 |
| Renate returns again for France. | 65 |
| Peace fully concluded. | 67 |
| Jacob Piccinino begins fresh troubles | ib. |
| The Popeandeavours a war against the Turk. | 68 |
| Strange forms in Tufcany. | 69 |
| Wing Alphonfo makes war on she Genowele, an | |
| Gilmond Malatefta | 71 |
| Death of Alphonio Ring of Naples. | 72 |
| The Pope defigns that Kingdom for bis Mephow, | but |
| Ing Constant of the Bighth Books, soil | ib. |
| The Fregofi attempt to feife Genoua. I la benen | 73 |
| Petrino Fregoli Asis. | 74 |
| John of Anjou makes an expedition to regain Na | |
| All the many the late to a section to be a second of the | 74 |
| Genova rebels from John of Anjou. | 75 |
| John driven out of the Kingdom. | 76 |
| The Contents of the Seventh Book. | |
| Colmo de Medici and Neri Capponi Rivali in | an- |
| ASPabority. Comprol to marine principal wingstill | - |
| Luke Pitti Gonfaloniere, | 7 |
| Girolamo Machiavel confined. | 8 |
| Luke Pitti's magnificent Fabricks. | 9 |
| War in the Kingdom and Romania. Death of Colmo de Medici. | old. |
| His facely buildings and Elogy. | 11 |
| Francis Duke of Milan becomes Lord of Genous. | 18 |
| Pope Pius promptes an enpedition againft the Turks, | 31 |
| - de r am transter an entenertait afarale ene mart. | 71. |

| TATION TO PAGE |
|--|
| The death of Storms Duke of Milatte in the storm of |
| Confesers avains the Madicipa Tot has men Total |
| Once division in Florence Language Value 1 47 48 |
| The demb of Storms Duke of Milan. Comformer or ainst the Medicity 1 of the Storms of the Storms of the Comforms of the Comfor |
| Design of the College |
| Peter de Medici takes orms to sefrad himfelf. 32 |
| THE LILL HOUSE MADE LAISING STREET, SAN THE SA |
| The Citizens complaint to fetter, and his aufener. 31 |
| A www Balia created of the Militel Entirony 1 112 937 |
| The remarkable fall of Luke Pretion in appoint 137 |
| Agnold Acciavolo bir Leter to Peter Medici. 1 39 |
| The Eleventine exiles, provoke the Venezians to a war a- |
| Sainft theie Countrey, nom! ten hert genttervelt 40 |
| The Venerious and Daky of Ferrara make war with |
| Penate returns avain for Tranco |
| A famous battle, and peace concluded, |
| Merriage of Lorenzo Medici with Clarice Orlino.46 |
| Death of Peter de Medici |
| Confpiracy of the Maidi. on these n senous ausogs to \$1 |
| The Duke of Milan comes to Florence, were 1 37 |
| Chinale of Bulletin tomis to English Co. (1971) |
| The Part Code Spolette and L. Come Con Hand Son |
| Zimult in Volterin. as the Sold Caffello. 10 62 The Pope fachs Spoletto, and beflegut Caffello. 10 62 Charles the fon of Braccio invado the Sanefit die 66 |
| Charles the fon of Braccio monde the Sanepis die OD |
| Confpiracy against the Dake of Milan. |
| The Contents of the Eighth Book. |
| Two powerful Falliam:in Italy), et agantin fageil adig |
| Discontents between the Medici and Pagel. quinto 4 |
| Completely against Lorenzo and Julian Medici, |
| Julian Medici flain, but Lorenzo faves himfelf.13 |
| The Archbifhop of Pila, & other confpir avors bang de 35 |
| The refolute death of Francis Parzie me warren 1 4017 |
| The Pope and King make was south Florence. 21 |
| Lorenzo de Medicil Constraste principalCisirens |
| Lorenzo de Medicil Sprestrante principal Civicate as The Civican obliging answer to Lorenzo's Speecha 24 |
| The bold fpeech of a Citizen to Lacanto Medici - 341 37 |
| orth Original of Control of Canada |
| The Original of S. George of Genous os Momelorid |
| Pietra Sandta befoged la Inschingem & itti daludi |
| Pietra Sancta sokim and H hun moh an A set ni w 100 |
| Aquila rebels from the King of Maples, 100 to drate |
| Lorenzo de Medici his adouncement of bis children & |
| 21 bie other excellent Vertuet . malité jo mad einer 17 |
| Lorenzo de Medici bir death. 14 92. |
| FINIS |

XUM